



PEERLESS MARTIAL GOD

BOOK 05

Jing Wu Hen

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Peerless Martial God

(绝世武神)

by

Jing Wu Hen

(净无痕)

Synopsis

Lin Feng tried to be the diligent and hard-working good guy. He studied hard, did his best to make his family proud and not get into trouble, but when he saw a girl being taken advantage of, he had to intervene. He had been tricked, sentenced to 10 years in jail and framed for a crime he never committed, all was lost. If his life was over he would take those who ruined his life with him...

Suddenly he opens his eyes again. He is not dead, but alive in the body of the Lin Feng of a different world. This Lin Feng had been killed as trash of cultivation. This world where the strong had no regard for human life and would kill freely if they had the strength. Called 'trash' and thrown away, with vengeance in his heart he will rise to new heights opposing the will of heaven and earth.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Alice, Not Sane, Pan Pan @ [Totally Insane Translation](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 401: Fury!

“Die!”

Lin Feng’s ice-cold voice filled the atmosphere. Then the Winged Tiger roared and immediately attacked two cultivators of the Wan Shou Sect, in the blink of an eye, it smashed their heads into paste with its paws and blood splashed everywhere.

When the other sect members saw that move, they were terrified. Each and every single one of them turned deathly pale. They wanted to escape but their legs were completely stiff, they were scared to death.

That beast could kill people so easily, it had easily killed a cultivator of the first Xuan Qi layer, in the blink of an eye, it had bitten off his head with its sharp teeth, it would thus be very easy for the beast to kill them as well, they were much weaker.

“Run!” They were scared to death but the only thing that echoed through their souls was one word: “run.”

Their feet started to move and they started running in all directions. Running in different directions would increase their chances of escape.

“You will all die, and after that, I will kill everyone who is related to the Wan Shou Sect. No one will be able to escape with their life!” Said Lin Feng in an ice-cold way. No one would escape!

The Wan Shou Sect wanted to kill all the people related to Lin Feng, therefore he would also kill anyone related to them. If anyone dared walk side by side with members of the Wan Shou Sect, they would be killed!

The sound of another head being crushed by the paws of the Winged Tiger spread through the air. It had already killed eight people from the Wan Shou Sect.

The Winged Tiger's speed was terrifying, how could they escape?

In a short time, all those people who had come to kill Jing Yun and Duan Feng were dead. They had all been killed by the Winged Tiger and Lin Feng hadn't even needed to move once. He was just coldly watching the show. He didn't need to fight against such people.

"Roarr!" The Winged Tiger roared in a sinister way. Its mouth and paws were covered with its victims' blood. Its eyes looked incredibly ferocious and cruel. Apart from looking ferocious and cruel, it also looked like it was excited after killing so many people.

The Winged Tiger was an ancient ferocious beast, being ferocious, cruel and bloodthirsty was part of its temperament. Having been turned into a docile and gentle pet by the cat was its most painful memory.

"How scary." Duan Feng and Jing Yun were looking at the Winged Tiger. They hadn't seen Lin Feng for a while and

surprisingly, a terrifying ferocious beast had appeared by Lin Feng's side.

“Lin Feng, big brother, hurry up and return to the Celestial Academy.” Said Duan Feng suddenly. Jing Yun nodded and said: “Indeed, Lin Feng, so many strong cultivators are there, Meng Qing and Lan Jiao probably can't deal with them!”

“Don't worry.” Said Lin Feng almost at the same time while shaking his head as if he had already anticipated what they were going to say. Would killing Meng Qing be that easy? Besides, apart from Meng Qing who was extremely strong, there were also the powers of the academy, Lin Feng was convinced that at the Celestial Academy, nothing could happen to Meng Qing and Lan Jiao. Duan Wu Ya the second prince, the vice-principal Long Ding and Yan Yu Ping Sheng would never let the members of the Wan Shou Sect do as they pleased inside the Celestial Academy.

More particularly, they would never let them attack the people the prince promised to protect.

Lin Feng was certain that if the situation became too dangerous, they would intervene and protect them. After all, Duan Wu Ya had always helped him and hoped that Lin Feng would remain friendly with him, Lin Feng had no idea what Duan Wu Ya's goal was though.

“Don't worry. Nothing will happen to Meng Qing.” Said Lin Feng to Duan Feng and Jing Yun. Immediately after, he looked at the two others: Feng Ting and the old man.

When they saw Lin Feng look at them, their faces froze and they didn't even dare to blink. Their facial expressions were strange, their faces were filled with both hatred and dread.

"Jing Yun, how did you and Duan Feng meet those people?" Asked Lin Feng indifferently. Back then, around the region of the Mount Sword, they were chased by their own guards and appeared in front of Jing Yun and Duan Feng.

"Duan Feng and I came here to practice and accidentally, we came across them. At that moment, the guards of her clan had betrayed her, they wanted to rape her and kill the old man, then Duan Feng killed the guards and saved her." Replied Jing Yun before adding: "Besides..... Besides Duan Feng....." While saying this, Jing Yun glanced at Duan Feng and stopped talking.

"Besides, Duan Feng has feelings for her, however, she's been using him the entire time. She made him fight strong ferocious beasts for her to take the precious items." Said Lin Feng as he finished Jing Yun's sentence. Actually, that was completely correct. Considering her behaviour, who couldn't see that she was using him? Beneath her beautiful exterior, she was heartless and unscrupulous with her methods.

Sorrow appeared in Duan Feng's eyes, he had started to like Feng Ting. It was also the first time that he felt that way about a girl but she only used him. When they had found themselves in a critical situation, she had immediately and clearly denied that they had anything to do with him, she had even tried to join sides with the Wan Shou Sect when she stated that she hated Lin Feng.

Jing Yun remained silent while nodding. It was precisely the way Lin Feng described it. Duan Feng had taken a liking to Feng Ting and she had used him to obtain precious items.

Lin Feng turned his head and looked at Feng Ting and the old man again which made them tremble in fear. Lin Feng's eyes looked ice-cold.

"We're leaving." Said Feng Ting as she started walking. They wanted to walk away because they didn't want to face Lin Feng.

"Stop!" Said Lin Feng. Walk away? Could it be that simple?

Feng Ting slightly shivered and she slowly turned around. She looked at Lin Feng and asked: "What do you want to do?"

"What do I want to do?" Asked Lin Feng in an ice-cold tone. He then added while sounding indifferent: "A moment before, I heard you say that we were enemies, that you wished to see me die, and now we are facing each other, why don't you come and kill me?"

When Feng Ting heard Lin Feng's words, she didn't know how to reply. Indeed, she and the old man had really said those words.

"This is the second time. The first time I let you keep your life. This time, you're not even grateful to Duan Feng for saving your life and on top of that you used him for your own personal interests. Then, in a dangerous situation, you immediately tried to

leave. How ridiculous. If Duan Feng hadn't been there, you would already be dead. This time, if I hadn't arrived in time, you would have all died, therefore, you both owe me your lives."

Lin Feng then added in an ice-cold way: "Alright, that's enough. You can die now."

"You can die now." Those words made Feng Ting and the old man's facial expressions drastically change. They looked at Lin Feng in an ice-cold way. Lin Feng surprisingly wanted to kill them.

"Lin Feng, brother..." When Duan Feng heard Lin Feng, he was stupefied. He then shouted at Lin Feng. Even though Feng Ting had used him, he would still be sad if she died.

"Duan Feng, some things can be forgiven, some things can never be forgiven. She used you and your feelings, you saved her life and then she tried to stab you in the back when the situation became dangerous, such things are intolerable." Said Lin Feng in a calm way while turning his head to Duan Feng. He then continued: "They chose to let you die to save themselves when the situation became dangerous, they didn't show the tiniest bit of gratitude. Such people do not deserve to live."

Lin Feng was looking at Duan Feng's soft and tender face, then said sounding firm: "They are the most disgusting type of people. You have to understand the reasons why I am acting this way. You have to understand that in this world, you don't owe anyone anything, there is no necessity to do things for other people without something in return. However, if someone does something for you out of pure altruism, then you must show

gratitude and appreciate them, because nobody owes you anything.”

Lin Feng’s thoughts were simple, those were the rules of the heartless and emotionless cultivation world. Duan Feng had never owed her anything but he saved her life and in the end, Feng Ting didn’t appreciate it, not being appreciative doesn’t mean much, but the problem was that she even stabbed him in the back. After all of this, why in the world did Duan Feng still care about her? He had done things unconditionally and this was how she repaid him.

When Duan Feng heard Lin Feng, he remained silent. He had never thought about such things so deeply.

“Both of you, you can either take your own life or I will kill you myself.” Said Lin Feng sounding cold and detached which made Feng Ting and the old man look terrified. Lin Feng was really going to kill them.

“I see that you will not do it by yourself.” Said Lin Feng looking disgusted, his eyes were filled with disgust and hatred. Those people were heartless and unscrupulous, Lin Feng hated the types of people who betrayed the kindness of others.

Lin Feng’s silhouette flickered and he disappeared from his original position. Feng Ting and the old man looked scared to death. Immediately after, they saw an evil light flash before them and a second later, their bodies silently fell down onto the ground.

They were dead. Lin Feng would kill these kind of disgusting

people unscrupulously and heartlessly.

That world was heartless, Lin Feng also cared about his friends and family, those who dared hurt them or those who presented a danger to his friends' lives had to die.

Chapter 402: Meng Qing

At the Celestial Academy, the atmosphere was lively. Many people had gathered and had their heads raised looking towards the sky.

In the sky, there were majestic ferocious beasts, they were releasing some bestial Qi. Their eyes looked ice cold and there were cultivators riding on their backs.

There were twelve people, they were all members of the Wan Shou Sect. Among them, there were eight people who were quite young, they were probably all core disciples.

“The Wan Shou Sect has expanded very quickly and their strength is monstrous. There are eight disciples of the Xuan Qi layer there but in total, the Wan Shou Sect has almost twenty disciples who’ve broken through to the Xuan Qi layer”.

The members of the Celestial Academy were surprised. The Wan Shou Sect definitely deserved to be considered as one of the most influential groups in Xue Yue. They had more disciples of the Xuan Qi layer than the Hao Yue Sect, the Luo Xia Sect or the Ice and Snow Mountain Village. It seemed like geniuses had risen up in the last years. It was said that in the past year, seven disciples had broken through to the Xuan Qi layer in the Wan Shou Sect.

It was the era where geniuses would start to reveal themselves.

“The rules of the cultivation world are intriguing.” Sighed some

people. In Xue Yue, every ten years there seemed to be a great period before the competition in which many geniuses would reveal themselves.

Every ten years, many of them were killed until only a few people were left amongst the rising geniuses , those were the top geniuses.

It wasn't just a coincidence that the era of geniuses always happened during the time of the Great Competition of Xue Yue. It wasn't just happening in Xue Yue, it was actually the case for all the thirteen countries of Xue Yue.

At that moment, there was only one year left before the Great Competition of Xue Yu and geniuses had already started to reveal themselves in preparation. As expected, there were many crouching tigers and hidden dragons in Xue Yue, they sprung up like bamboo shoots after a spring rain.

A few educated people suddenly thought about what happened in the past while sighing. They had also gone through a similar experience in the past. Nineteen years ago, four geniuses had appeared and it was like heaven and earth were turned upside down. One of them had disappeared after being sealed. Another had stopped using his sword, another had built the lovesick forest and never showed themselves. It was said that the last of the four was the person who was currently ruling over the country, at that moment, he was behind the curtains, controlling everything within the country.

“We have so many people, fighting against a weak girl like you wouldn't be fair. Just slit your wrists and kill yourself. We will

allow you to die with your dignity.” Said a voice at that moment and resonated through the air.

Many people then looked at the weak and delicate looking girl. She was wearing snowy-white clothes, she looked pure and holy just like a celestial being.

Even though those men in the sky wanted her dead, they wanted her to retain her dignity. That girl calmly glanced at them in a cold and detached way. She didn't seem affected at all as if nothing could affect her icy heart. Nobody could affect her, there was only a single person who could melt her heart.

That person was obviously Lin Feng. Only Lin Feng could melt Meng Qing's frozen heart.

Even if the people close to her wanted to see what she looked like without her fine veil on her face, she wouldn't ever show them.

The crowd obviously wanted to see Meng Qing. Meng Qing really stood out from the other girls, she looked like a celestial being. She was above the mortal world. What intrigued them the most was that they couldn't see her face. Many people were desperate to see her delicate face, even if it was only once.

Meng Qing didn't care about them, she raised her head, her eyes looked cold and detached.

The one who had just spoke frowned and looked upset. So many

people had come to fight against Meng Qing. There were two reasons, the first one was because they had heard that Meng Qing wasn't weak and ordinary cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer couldn't defeat her. Besides, there was another reason, they wanted to scare people and tell everybody that if anyone dared to provoke the Wan Shou Sect, no matter who they were, they would kill them and all of their friends and family. The consequences for offending the Wan Shou Sect were disastrous.

The Wan Shou Sect wanted to show everybody how strong they had become and regain the prestige that they had lost during the Mount Sword incident.

Those twelve cultivators were fierce and intrepid, they could turn the entire Celestial Academy upside down.

"I'm talking to you, are you deaf? I will give you a second chance, slit your wrists and die with dignity or I will come down and kill you, but I can guarantee you that if I take action, you will die under tragic circumstances." Threatened the person who had just spoke. His voice was growing more aggressive.

Meng Qing looked as emotionless as before, she glanced at him in a cold and detached way. She remained silent and motionless.

Meng Qing despised him, she looked down upon people like him.

"You are asking for a painful death!" Said that person while pulling a long face. He had given his offer twice and Meng Qing continued to ignored him twice which made him look like a fool.

How could he not be furious?

“Yan Bai, go and kill her. I don’t want people to think that we, members of the Wan Shou Sect, will bully a weak woman.” the one who had just spoke was looking at Yan Bai at that moment. Yan Bai had broken through to the first Xuan Qi layer but was considered as a particularly strong cultivator for his level. It was thus clear that that person hadn’t chosen Yan Bai randomly...

“Roger, elder.” Replied Yan Bai. He then moved forwards, his eyes were filled with excitement.

He had been practicing with all of his ability through all of his years and had finally broken through to the Xuan Qi layer. His name had become associated as a genius and it was time for him to show the others how strong he was. He wanted everybody in the Imperial City to remember his name.

“I don’t want people to think that I, Yan Bai, bully women, so you can make the first move.” Said Yan Bai while stepping forwards and descending from the sky. He glanced at Meng Qing, she was clearly extremely beautiful from what he could see, if the Wan Shou Sect hadn’t wanted her dead, he would have wanted to avoid fighting such a beauty.

When Meng Qing heard him, she didn’t say anything, she took a step forwards, she looked lithe, graceful and quick, her silhouette flickered and she moved straight towards her opponent.

“You will never be able to touch me with such speed. You can’t

compete with me.” Said Yan Bai when he saw how slow Meng Qing was moving, he was shaking his head. Meng Qing was moving so slow.

Meng Qing moved her hand very slowly through the air. Her pale and thin hand didn't seem threatening at all.

“Hehe, so weak.” Said Yan Bai while smiling indifferently. However, at the moment when he finished talking, his smile immediately disappeared, an incredible coldness penetrated into his bones, it was so cold that he started shaking from head to toe.

Yan Bai's face drastically changed. bestial Qi started to circulate through his body and moved to fight against the coldness but the most terrifying thing is that when it was about to collide with the ice Qi, it abruptly moved back as if the bestial Qi was scared.

“Retreat!” Thought Yan Bai. Meng Qing's strength was incredible. Her energy was ice-cold and it felt as if his body was going to freeze.

“Kacha.....”

Transparent ice invaded the atmosphere.

Yan Bai moved back but then Meng Qing said one word.

“Seal!” When she finished speaking, Yan Bai was frozen solid. That move astonished everyone. That cultivator of the Xuan Qi

layer was frozen solid.

Meng Qing didn't stop moving, her lithe and graceful body kept fluttering. She raised her hand again and moved towards Yan Bai again.

"Would you dare?" Shouted a furious voice. A cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer on a beast jumped through the air and descended towards Meng Qing. He then punched through the air creating a powerful hurricane which moved towards Meng Qing.

"Get lost." Shouted a hoarse voice at that moment. Then somebody emerged from the crowd. That person had a powerful fire burning in their hand and a fist surrounded by fire bombarded the atmosphere towards that person who was descending on the beast.

"BOOM!" A monstrously loud explosion made the atmosphere shake. The one who was descending from the sky was propelled back to his original position. As for as the one who attacked him, he remained unmoved.

"Kacha!" A sound broke the silence and the ice block which was Yan Bai broke into four parts. Yan Bai's body had split into four separate parts. Meng Qing swiftly killed him.

Chapter 403: Insanity

Fury!

The members of the Wan Shou Sect were astonished. Yan Bai was killed, Meng Qing had surprisingly killed him. All the members of the sect had seen it occur with their own eyes but they were all unable to prevent it.

“Who are you?” Asked many of the group to the person who just prevented the other member of the Wan Shou Sect from intervening. It was an old man. He looked ordinary but fire Qi was flickering around his body.

“When you say that the Wan Shou Sect doesn’t bully women, you must have meant that you will attack her by surprise, one after the other, while she is already fighting your members? These are the moral principles of the Wan Shou Sect!” Joked the old man as if he found them ridiculous. When the members of the Wan Shou Sect heard him, they all pulled a long face.

He had just humiliated them, they had just announced that they don’t bully women, but then they tried to save their fellow disciple by attacking her by surprise.

“Who are you?” Asked the person leading the group from the Wan Shou Sect while looking down at the old man from the sky. That old man was probably very strong, a moment before, the Qi he had released contained the power of the third Xuan Qi layer, which meant the old man had a similar strength to him.

But the group from the Wan Shou Sect had brought three cultivators of the third Xuan Qi layer, therefore they didn't really care about him, he humiliated the Wan Shou Sect and he would die because of it.

“You don't need to know who I am. All you need to know is that we are enemies and not friends.” Said the old man in a straightforward manner, which upset the members of the Wan Shou Sect even more. People were usually eager to make friends with them, even if only to appease them, but at that moment, the old man had just said that they were enemies.

“Enemies?” Said the elder of the Wan Shou Sect while smiling coldly. “Even though you are slightly talented you're your cultivation, you cannot rely on your current strength to deal with all of us and....”

“What if I join in too?” The elder hadn't finished talking when a voice spread through the atmosphere and a person came out from the crowd. It was another old man but he looked a little bit younger and had red hair which was as red as a blazing sun.

“Huh?” The members of the Wan Shou Sect were frowning. They were extremely upset, what was going on? Why were so many people interfering? Surprisingly, people kept appearing and wanted to confront them. They were all rushing to their own deaths!

When Meng Qing saw the two old men, she was surprised, those

two old men were Mister Huo and Mister Chi.

“Why aren’t Mister Huo and Mister Chi in Yangzhou City? How come they have come here?” Thought Meng Qing. “Could it be that Lin Feng had sent them from Yangzhou City?”

But at that moment, Mister Chi turned his head around and looked to Meng Qing while smiling: “Miss, when he isn’t here to protect you, these bastards think they can do as they please.”

Meng Qing obviously knew whom Mister Chi was talking about. At that moment, something very rare happened, a smile appeared on Meng Qing’s face but of course it lasted for less than a second. At the same time, she nodded at Mister Chi.

The others didn’t know what the old man was talking about. Who was he talking about?

“Mister Chi, don’t be mad at me, because they decided to attack my friends, I had no choice but to request for you to make the journey.”

At that moment, an ice-cold voice which came from the horizon spread across the academy.

The crowd gazed into the distance and saw a beam of light shooting through the sky, it looked like a shooting star moving across the sky, it looked incredible.

“Lin Feng! Lin Feng has returned!” When the crowd saw the handsome young man in the sky, they narrowed their eyes and recognised it was Lin Feng. He was riding a majestic ferocious beast.

That beast was fire red and looked incredibly imposing with its gigantic wings, its bloodthirsty eyes looked extremely cruel and ferocious. One could see that it was an extraordinary beast with only a glance.

The majority of people at the Celestial Academy had already seen Lin Feng in the past. They had the feeling that the Lin Feng, who was riding a beast at that moment, looked even more mysterious and mature than when they last saw him. He also looked more determined and ruthless.

Meng Qing was also looking at Lin Feng on his ferocious beast.

A warm and tender smile appeared on her usual emotionless face. It was as if time had frozen in that moment and nothing else existed but her smile.

She could see that the young man she was protecting in the past had already become strong enough to protect himself, he was ready to start protecting her. Meng Qing was impatiently looking forward to the day when Lin Feng would really be able to protect her. She was also convinced that she would not have to wait much longer. She could see that Lin Feng, step by step, was growing stronger. Sooner or later, he would be able to look down on the world from the heavens.

“Lin Feng and the two old men seem to be close friends.”

The crowd looked surprised. It seemed like Lin Feng was much more mysterious than what they had initially thought. Besides, wasn't he supposed to be a lone wolf with no background, why were there people here supporting him?

“Indeed, since they have come to us, we should not waste this opportunity.” Said Mister Chi in an ice-cold tone. He then looked at Lin Feng. His eyes started twinkling when he saw that ancient ferocious beast, it looked like a Winged Tiger.

They hadn't seen Lin Feng for a while and he had drastically improved once again. He was progressing extremely fast, his natural abilities were monstrous. It seemed like Mister Huo had made the right choice when he decided to follow him.

“Lin Feng and his friends are behaving extremely arrogantly!” Thought the crowd when they heard Lin Feng and Mister Chi. They were a bit surprised, they were wondering why Lin Feng was so confident.

After all, even if Lin Feng had Mister Huo and Mister Chi on his side, they were only four cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer in total, there was also Lin Feng's ferocious beast.

However, on the side of the Wan Shou Sect, Meng Qing had killed Yan Bai but there were still eleven members of the Xuan Qi layer. Five of them were riding ferocious beasts which had

strength comparable to the Xuan Qi layer.

When comparing both sides' strengths, it seemed like the Wan Shou Sect had an absolute advantage in numbers.

“I really don't know why you think you can behave so arrogantly.” Said the elder of the Wan Shou Sect in an ice-cold tone while staring at Lin Feng.

“We were worried that we wouldn't be able to find you, but you actually delivered yourself to our doorstep, you really are courting death!” Said Lin Feng while ignoring the elder and glancing at the members of the Wan Shou Sect.

Lin Feng then continued: “Eleven people...and five ferocious beasts...”

“Huh?” The elder frowned. Lin Feng had ignored him and was counting them.

“Luckily, we get to kill eleven of them today.” Continued Lin Feng which made the elder of the Wan Shou Sect pull a long face. What an arrogant young man! Lin Feng had counted them in order to tell them that all eleven of them would die.

“Lin Feng, how did Wu Zhen die?” Asked the elder of the Wan Shou Sect while looking at Lin Feng. They all knew that Wu Zhen was dead but they were still wondering how.

They didn't believe that Lin Feng was the person who killed Wu Zhen because they had too much faith in Wu Zhen's power and underestimated Lin Feng.

"Morons!" Said Lin Feng indifferently. He slightly moved and in a flash, he transformed into a beam and disappeared from his original position, leaving the elder of the Wan Shou Sect looking at the empty space while pulling a long face. A ferocious expression appeared in the elder's eyes.

Lin Feng had jumped off his Winged Tiger and moved next to Meng Qing who then smiled at him with a radiant smile. Lin Feng also looked towards her with a tender look, he then said: "They have come to kill you, thus they will all die, none of them will be spared."

"I believe you." Replied Meng Qing with a magnificent smile on her face. Lin Feng could really protect her from now on.

Lin Feng tightened his fist so firmly that his bones gave off cracking sounds. He then raised his head, his eyes suddenly looked emotionless and ice-cold, his eyes became black and the Qi around his body was releasing killing intent.

He then glanced at the members of the Wan Shou Sect, when they saw those two terrifying black eyes, they all felt a deep fear which made them tremble.

"Mister Huo, Mister Chi, help me secure the area, don't let a single person run away." Said Lin Feng in an ice-cold way which

stupefied Mister Huo and Mister Chi. They looked at Lin Feng and then immediately smiled.

He was already prepared to kill all of those cultivators by himself.

Lin Feng was incredibly aggressive and domineering.

“I really can’t wait to see how strong he’s become.”

Mister Huo and Mister Chi looked excited. They understood that if Lin Feng was confident, it was because he had a reason to be confident. Since he was speaking this way, Lin Feng would give them a good show. Besides, it also meant that he was confident that he could defeat eleven cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer and five Xuan level beasts by himself. Therefore, they were excited and believed in him.

“Alright, Lin Feng, we will secure the area.” Replied Mister Chi. Immediately after, he took a step and jumped up through the air.

Mister Huo immediately did the same on the other side. Those two old men seemed to have gone into a position which would prevent the members of the Wan Shou Sect from escaping.

Chapter 404: Strength!

Mister Huo and Mister Chi really trusted in Lin Feng. At that moment, their eyes were filled with a radiant glow. They really wanted to see how Lin Feng intended to kill a dozen cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer.

“That youngster has come back with a few new surprises for us old men to enjoy.” Thought Mister Huo while smiling wryly. Lin Feng was progressing extremely quickly. He already had the confidence to fight against so many strong cultivators by himself.

The crowd was astonished, he just wanted the two old men to prevent the opponents from escaping...?

Lin Feng wanted to fight against so many cultivators and ferocious beasts on his own?

He was going to kill them all for targeting his lover?

All the members of the Celestial Academy felt a surge of pride after seeing Lin Feng's actions, they were all impatient to see how Lin Feng planned to kill all these people, if he did, how shocking would it be?

Each and every member of the Wan Shou Sect was pulling a long face. Lin Feng looked down on them too much. He wanted to kill them all by himself, he was humiliating them all.

The one acting as the leader of the group from the Wan Shou Sect watched Lin Feng rise into the air and said coldly to Lin Feng: “Lin Feng, I used to have a good opinion of you, I wouldn’t have thought that you would dare to shamefully boast. Today, I will grant you a fitting death.”

“Indeed, elder, let me go and kill him. One person will be enough.” Said one of the young men from the Wan Shou Sect while getting excited by the idea of fighting against Lin Feng who was looking down on them.

“Shamefully boast?” Lin Feng smiled in an ice-cold way while making a slight hand gesture.

In a flash, the Winged Tiger roared and his wings flickered. It’s image transformed into a shadow and it vanished from its original position. It was moving to kill one of the members on the edge of the group.

“Animal! How dare you!” When they saw the Winged Tiger abruptly attack, they were surprised, it was extremely quick. Many from the group suddenly rushed forward in an attempt to block it.

“Roaaaarrrr....” The Winged Tiger suddenly started to spurt flames from its mouth which attacked those trying to block it. At the same time, its gigantic fiery red wings fluttered and the Winged Tiger moved around them, flying in a different direction. Its eyes were filled with ominous glints.

While the Winged Tiger was attacking the group, Lin Feng

rushed forward as well.

While many people were focusing their attention on the Winged Tiger, they turned their heads and noticed that they couldn't see Lin Feng anymore, he had disappeared.

A cultivator of the first Xuan Qi layer suddenly turned his head as if he sensed something and in an instant his facial expression drastically changed. He could only see Lin Feng moving towards him at incredible speed. Following behind Lin Feng's figure was an extremely sharp sword Qi.

“Retreat!” That was his only thought at that moment. However, did a cultivator of the first Xuan Qi layer have the ability to run away from Lin Feng?

“Die!” Shouted Lin Feng in a deep voice. Just like the wind, Lin Feng immediately arrived in front of him, he raised his finger and pierced through the cultivators skull with his finger.

“Pssssh....” A hole which started to pour with blood appeared in that person's head and his face still looked astonished. His body slowly started falling down. He was the first to die.

“Lin Feng!” shouted a member of the Wan Shou Sect in anger when he saw that Lin Feng had killed one of their fellow disciples. He was furious.

“Roarrrr...” The Winged Tiger roared again, it quickly moved

back to its initial position at the same time as Lin Feng moved away from the group.

the mouth of the Winged Tiger was covered with fresh blood. It seemed to still be chewing on brain matter, it belonged to a ferocious beast from the Wan Shou Sect.

A moment before, the Winged Tiger had pierced through the head of a ferocious beast and had extracted its brain which it was now savouring.

When the crowd saw the result of the initial encounter, they were astonished and their hearts started pounding. In the blink of an eye, the Wan Shou Sect had lost a cultivator and a ferocious beast.

Both Lin Feng and the Winged Tiger were incredibly strong.

“That’s a Winged Tiger!” Thought the elder of the Wan Shou Sect whose facial expression grew colder. He was fixedly staring at the Winged Tiger. Only an ancient ferocious beast could produce an aura that bloodthirsty and that cruel. Only an ancient ferocious beast could kill beasts of the same level in such a relaxed manner.

“it’s an ancient ferocious beast, a Winged Tiger!” The crowd was astonished as well. Some of the crowd were also realizing that that beast looked like the ancient ferocious beasts in the records. It looked like a Winged Tiger. How terrific! Lin Feng had surprisingly managed to tame an ancient ferocious beast.

“Ten people, four beasts.” Said Lin Feng which stupefied the members of the Wan Shou Sect. They were fixedly staring at his pitch-black and emotionless eyes. At that moment, in Lin Feng’s eyes, they were nothing but numbers. He wanted to kill each and every single one of them. Lin Feng was not showing any signs of joking.

Was he just boasting or could he really kill them all?

With his attack a moment before, he had already answered that question or at least, he had already shown his strength.

“Let’s attack together! Surround and kill him!” Shouted the elder of the Wan Shou Sect in an ice-cold tone. They all looked at him silently, and then immediately nodded. They were going to act together, they all moved towards Lin Feng and the Winged Tiger to his side.

Lin Feng moved and the Winged Tiger also moved, they both separated from the other moving in different directions. They were both extremely quick, were they afraid of fighting against the crowd?

“Die!” Shouted furious voice. Six strong cultivators threw themselves at Lin Feng and the remaining four at the Winged Tiger. They immediately started fighting.

“Hmph!” Lin Feng smiled coldly. Amongst those six people moving towards him, there were two of the third Xuan Qi layer, against all expectations, they really thought very highly of him.

“Wind!” He started to move with his eyes looking piercingly cold, Lin Feng calmly started to analyze the wind, there was no more resistance against any of his movements. Lin Feng was moving lightly and silently like a leaf fluttering in the wind but his movements were not aimless, they were extremely precise.

“Roaaarr!” Lin Feng suddenly released his purple spirit, an endless purple lake shot into the sky and crashed down towards the incoming opponents.

“Break!” Shouted the members of the Wan Shou Sect who didn’t seem to be frightened at all. They immediately attacked the purple lake, however, in the blink of an eye, three members of the group were swallowed into the lake and melted into nothingness.

Those three people were all below the third Xuan Qi layer. Lin Feng had already broken through to the second Xuan Qi layer, his purple spirit could easily dissolve opponents in the early Xuan Qi layers.

“Roaaarr!” Two gigantic purple snakes then rushed towards the two cultivators of the third Xuan Qi layer. At the same time, Lin Feng also moved towards the last cultivator of the second Xuan Qi layer. The sword Qi that surrounded his body looked like a rainbow.

“BOOM!”

When that cultivator of the second Xuan Qi layer saw Lin Feng’s

Qi, his facial expression drastically changed. He released his beast spirit, however, Lin Feng had already arrived. He raised his head and saw a sword as scorching hot as the sun falling down, it was a magnificent scorching sword and it was falling towards him, he couldn't even keep his eyes open.

“Pssh..” The scorching sword penetrated into his body as another member of the Wan Shou Sect died.

“Lin Feng!” An incredibly furious shout invaded the atmosphere. One of the cultivators of the third Xuan Qi layer had managed to break through the purple spirit and discovered that four people had already died. He was incredibly furious and releasing a deadly energy as he charged through the sky.

Lin Feng glanced at him indifferently and ignored him. Instead, he moved towards the ferocious beasts at an incredible speed.

The crowd, while looking at the battle in the sky, had the feeling that they were suffocating. In such a short time, Lin Feng had already become so strong, it was terrifying.

Those cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer were like insects in front of him. In Lin Feng's eyes, these people were already walking corpses.

Since they had come with the intention to kill Meng Qing, Lin Feng decided that he would kill each and every single one of them, none of them would be spared.

“How quick! He moves like the wind!” Though the crowd. They had the impression that he was like an illusion on the wind. Could a cultivator move so quickly?

Lin Feng was moving so freely as if there was no resistance, Lin Feng had only broken through to the second Xuan Qi layer but the cultivators of the third Xuan Qi layer were far from matching his speed.

“Roaaarr! When the ferocious beasts saw Lin Feng coming towards them, they started to roar. However, they could only see a figure that had a blindingly dazzling sword in each of his hands, Lin Feng raised both the scorching swords into the air. He was attacking with two swords at the same time and on top of that, he was attacking two different beasts at the same time!

“What incredible Qi control!” Mister Huo and Mister Chi were astonished. He was controlling two swords formed from pure Qi at the same time, to unleash an attack without flaw. What Lin Feng was doing was simply miraculous.

“He’s even stronger than me now.” Said Mister Huo while smiling wryly. When he first met Lin Feng, he had very high natural abilities but was still in the Ling Qi layer and now, he had already become so incredibly strong, it was slightly terrifying.

Chapter 405: Dual sword wielding!

After launching his onslaught with the two swords. Three of the beasts were killed and one was injured. The one which was injured cried pitifully, but Lin Feng immediately attacked it without mercy.

The four beasts were all killed.

“Qiong Qi!” Shouted Lin Feng in his mind. The Winged Tiger already knew what Lin Feng meant. It then disappeared from sight and shot towards Lin Feng with incredible speed.

The sharp claws of the Winged Tiger tore into the skulls of the ferocious beasts and snatched their brains which it started to chew while purring with pleasure.

The members of the Wan Shou Sect were all looking on in shock. They were fixedly staring at the beasts falling from the sky as well the condition of the members that attacked Lin Feng.

Lin Feng had already killed four people and four ferocious beasts, the Winged Tiger also killed one cultivator of the first Xuan Qi layer.

The entire battle could be summed up in one word: massacre!

The Wan Shou Sect had prepared a perfect plan to deal with them and launched their attack with a group of extremely strong

cultivators. But in front of Lin Feng, they couldn't even fight back, he was just slaughtering them like chickens.

The crowd had thought of the million possible outcomes of the battle but they always thought that Lin Feng was too weak to fight with them... What was happening at that moment was inconceivable.

“Five people!” Said Lin Feng in an ice-cold tone. The Wan Shou Sect had come with twelve powerful cultivators and had brought five Xuan level beasts along. At that moment, only five people were remaining from that powerful force.

Of course, the five remaining cultivators were also the strongest of the group. Three of them were at the third Xuan Qi layer and two were at the second Xuan Qi layer. Those five people would be much more difficult to deal with than the ones who died.

Nobody could anticipate the outcome of the battle, after all, Lin Feng hadn't killed a cultivator of the third Xuan Qi layer during the battle.

No matter what the outcome, Lin Feng and his Winged Tiger had already shocked the crowd, what he had done was beyond their expectations. Lin Feng had been aggressive and arrogant because he had the strength to behave that way, he wasn't shamelessly boasting, he really had the strength to look down on their entire group.

“Maybe a miracle is going to happen at our academy.” Thought

many people in the crowd. They had never seen such an incredible cultivator and they had never even heard about such a thing occurring. Lin Feng was the top student of their academy, he had gained the title when he defeated Qiong Bi Luo but they had never thought that he would reach such a terrifying level.

“You two, kill that beast!” Said the elder of the Wan Shou Sect while looking at the two cultivators of the second Xuan Qi layer. The two cultivators nodded in acknowledgement. Even though the ancient ferocious beast was bloodthirsty and cruel, they still felt that Lin Feng was the more dangerous of the two. A moment before, he had killed four people and four beasts by himself, amongst those people there were cultivators at the second Xuan Qi layer, thus if those two cultivators fought against Lin Feng, the consequences would be disastrous.

“We three, let’s join hands and kill him.” Said the elder. Three cultivators of the third Xuan Qi layer were going to fight against Lin Feng, they were set on killing him.

The two other members looked at the elder in a solemn and respectful way while nodding. Lin Feng definitely had to die at any cost.

If Lin Feng didn’t die, it would have disastrous consequences in the future, he was too dangerous.

Lin Feng was just eighteen, how powerful would he be in three years? How about five years? Wouldn’t Lin Feng have the power to remove the Wan Shou Sect by the roots?

“Use all your strength! Don’t hold anything back!” Said the elder who didn’t sound confident. Immediately after, he released his spirit and a pitch-black spirit that looked like a real beast appeared. However, on that illusion, there were two small eyes, they looked bestially evil.

Those two eyes were sharp, bestially evil eyes.

“What kind of beast spirit is that?” Thought the crowd while looking at the spirit. That illusion had a gigantic body but those two eyes were small and narrow, they looked like the eyes of an ox.

Immediately after releasing his spirit, the elder released a wildly powerful Qi, it seemed monstrously aggressive.

At the same time, the two other cultivators also released their spirits, one of them had an evil tiger spirit which was releasing an aggressive and brutal energy, while the other released a snake-like spirit which was releasing a murderous energy.

Those three powerful cultivators had all released their spirits, they wouldn’t spare any effort, they had to kill Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was staring at the three people with his ice-cold and pitch-black eyes, he looked absolutely emotionless.

Behind Lin Feng appeared a purple liquid which insanely fluctuated and turned into a gigantic purple dragon. Its gigantic

eyes were fixedly staring at those three cultivators.

Those five couldn't leave, they only had the option to fight.

Both sides remained silent, nobody broke the silence. In the atmosphere, there was only oppressive deadly energy. That group and Lin Feng both wanted to kill the other, neither side was willing to show mercy.

After a short while, the members of the Wan Shou Sect couldn't stand it anymore and the elder of the sect, while staring at Lin Feng, shouted furiously: "Let's all attack him now and kill him!"

When he finished talking, he threw himself towards Lin Feng. A rumbling sound filled the atmosphere as he bombarded towards Lin Feng. His bestial eyes were still fixedly staring at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng looked calm and cold. He looked at the three people who were attacking him as a group, they were rushing towards him and aiming for his life. He slightly moved as if he was a leaf blowing in the wind. In a flash, he disappeared and arrived higher in the air.

"BOOM!"

They were all still rushing towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng was surprised, he only saw two bestial eyes which were still staring at him, the elder of the Wan Shou Sect had thrown himself towards him.

They were demon ox's eyes.

That beast was an ox-type beast and those eyes could lock someone's movements preventing enemies from dodging an attack, it felt impossible to escape from the power of those eyes.

On top of that, the elder's speed was also impressive, he was extremely quick. He seemed like he could ignore some air resistance as well. A rumbling sound spread through the air as if a million wild oxen had formed a stampede.

“What a monstrous ox Qi!” Thought the crowd from the ground. At that moment, they could clearly sense the monstrously brutal Qi emerging out of the elder's body, he seemed like he wanted to use his body to destroy everything in his path.

But Lin Feng, in his heart, was only smiling coldly. The elder's spirit and that of Du Yan, whom Lin Feng had killed, were similar but after transforming into a beast, Du Yan was much stronger than that elder. Du Yan's attacks had been even more brutal and his movements made the earth tremble.

Lin Feng was forced to use his black lotus to kill Du Yan. This time, he had become much stronger and faced against a weaker opponent, he didn't need to use it.

The black lotus was his trump card, he would only use it when facing someone he wasn't able to defeat.

Lin Feng raised his head and sword light illuminated the atmosphere.

An extremely brutal Qi that was bursting with power filled the air. Sun Qi started pouring into Lin Feng's hands and he then condensed a sword made from pure sun Qi, it was dazzling to the eyes. It was just like a burning sun.

The crowd raised their heads and looked at that sunlight coming from Lin Feng's sword and they were dazzled, it seemed like a rising sun.

At the same time, in Lin Feng's other hand was another condensed sword. It was his scorching sword. That sword was even more dazzling than the one he was holding in his right hand.

"He's using two swords again!" The crowd's hearts were pounding. He had reached such an incredible sword cultivation level that he could wield two swords, everybody couldn't believe their eyes.

Sword attacks were monstrously powerful, whether a sword cultivator was strong or not, they could usually use the sword with either of their hands, however using two swords separately was a different matter.

Sword cultivators who weren't strong enough could practice with the sword their entire life but never be able to wield two swords separately, condensing pure Qi into a single sword was the only way for them to focus on unleashing their strongest attacks,

they could not do the same with two swords.

However, Lin Feng could control two swords and each sword could carry out a different attack like it had a life of its own, one sword looked like a scorching sun and the other looked like a rising sun. That kind of Qi control made many people feel like they were lacking in comparison.

“Lin Feng can control two swords and carry out two separate skills, he will definitely reach untold heights, who will be able to stop him!” Sighed Mister Huo. He was an alchemist, he obviously understood what was required to wield two swords at once. It was extremely difficult. By himself, Lin Feng was wielding two swords as if he was two different people. His power of comprehension, his control and his soul were all at a terrifying level.

He had challenged these cultivators as if he knew that it was going to be a piece of cake, and on top of that. Lin Feng always seemed to have new hidden tricks, it seemed like whoever was in front of him, Lin Feng would always come out on top!

Chapter 406: Dead

When the elder of the Wan Shou Sect saw Lin Feng's swords. He looked glum, but at that moment he had already condensed all his energy into his attack. He couldn't retreat anymore.

A terrifying sharp sound whistled in the air. The elder of the Wan Shou Sect was surrounded by what seemed to be an endless amount of Qi and force as if nobody could stop him anymore.

"Lacerate!" Lin Feng only said one word and the pure Qi sword in his right hand started attracting rays of sunlight as it slowly started to rise. It was filled with power. His sword looked extremely slow but no matter how one tried to escape from it, it remained in constant pursuit.

"BOOM!" Incredible force and Qi invaded the atmosphere, it seemed like the entire sky was going to be consumed, it then shot out in every direction and filled the atmosphere.

The sound of a bellowing ox spread through the air. The light from the sword of the rising sun slowly dispersed, the sword attack had been crushed, besides, before everyone's eyes was a gigantic ox illusion soaring into the skies, it seemed to possess an infinite strength.

"The elder of the third Xuan Qi layer is incredibly strong." Thought the crowd. That ox spirit had a terrifying strength. Even though they were far from the battle, they could still sense the ox's incredible energy, the energy of that ox spirit had the power to tear

through any attack, like a hot knife through butter.

After that, they couldn't even see the sword of the rising sun anymore, but they could see another dazzling light, it contained the rose like color of a setting sun.

Lin Feng's left hand was holding a scorching sword, which was slowly turning into the sword of the setting sun.

The sword Qi was lacerating the entire atmosphere. It was diffusing an endless stream of sunlight. The scorching sword then descended from the vault of heaven, anything that tried to prevent it from moving down was instantly lacerated.

The ox spirit was also lacerated, it blocked the sword of the rising sun a moment before so it had already lost the power required to block the next attack.

“Wild Ox Collision!” Roared the elder of the Wan Shou Sect when he saw that the ox spirit had been lacerated. His face looked ferocious and hideous. He started to release a monstrous amount of pure Qi and his spirit formed into another ox which soared into the sky.

“Hmph.” Groaned Lin Feng coldly. His face looked expressionless and ice-cold. In his right hand, he condensed another pure Qi sword. When the crowd saw that sword, they felt like they were watching an incredible hero, as if everything he did was unexpected, as if he was destined to overcome any obstacle.

“That’s a different sword again!” Thought the crowd absolutely astonished. Lin Feng was too skilled. Lin Feng could unleash a different sword attack with each of his hands as if he was two people fighting in perfect harmony, even two strong sword cultivators couldn’t necessarily carry out such a perfect synchronization.

Everything was happening in such a short time.

At the moment when the gigantic ox illusion and the scorching sword collided, another sword descended as well, it was illuminating the elder’s face.

At that moment, the elder of the Wan Shou Sect felt a strange sensation coming from the sword. He had the feeling that he had grown very old and was no longer needed in the world anymore, he had the feeling that the world belonged to Lin Feng, a young man. The elder felt like his time was coming to an end.

The energy in that sword made the elder feel calm and reassured, as if everything must come to an end. It was affected his innermost emotions.

“Get back!” Shouted a voice extremely loudly which abruptly made the elder’s heart start to pound. He quickly sobered up and his facial expression suddenly drastically changed, Lin Feng’s sword was already in front of him.

“BOOM!” The elder’s facial expression had completely changed. He immediately released all his pure Qi to block the incoming

sword, however, the sword continued descending and his pure Qi was lacerated.

“Back!” The elder started to frantically retreat, the situation was extremely dangerous, he felt a shiver run down his spine.

How dangerous, he had been extremely close to death. If nobody had called out to him, Lin Feng’s sword would have cut him down.

“You think you can escape?” Said Lin Feng sounding cold and detached. Just like the wind, Lin Feng arrived next to the elder and his sword of the setting sun continued to fall while absorbing all the light in the atmosphere, it almost seemed like night.

How quick. Lin Feng was much faster than the elder. The elder couldn’t escape even if he wanted to.

“Elder!” The two other cultivators rushed towards Lin Feng to attack him. In Lin Feng’s eyes, a bestially evil light could be seen. His purple snake spirit roared and moved towards those two cultivators and blocked their path.

“Break!” The one with the evil tiger spirit immediately moved towards the purple spirit and started attacking like a madman.

Lin Feng didn’t take notice of that, his jet-black eyes looked as expressionless and ice-cold as before, a cold light could be seen inside those eyes, then, Lin Feng suddenly disappeared from everyone’s sight and seemed to merge into the darkness created by

his sword.

“Die!” A sudden shout drew people’s attention. Suddenly a cross mark appeared in front of the elder. That cross was dazzling and powerful. The elder started shaking violently from head to toe and an acute and intense pain spread across his skin.

“Die!” Shouted Lin Feng again. Just like the wind, he arrived in front of the elder, and his the cross crashed into the elder’s chest, Lin Feng’s movements seemed like he was floating on the wind. In the blink of an eye, an incredible rain of blood burst into the air. It looked incredible.

The elder of the Wan Shou Sect started shaking from head to toe, he then lowered his head and looked down at his chest. There was a huge cross-shaped wound. At that moment, his chest had been mutilated by Lin Feng. Dread and terror invaded his heart, was he going to die? He was suddenly feeling regret, he never thought his life was going to end because of his actions today.

“Elder!” Shouted one of the cultivators. When the one who had the evil tiger spirit saw that the elder’s chest had been cut open, he looked furious as well as shocked. He immediately threw himself towards Lin Feng, his eyes looked ice-cold and bloodthirsty.

Lin Feng didn’t look affected at all. He was calmly sensing the brutal energy approaching him. He waited until that brutal energy was a breath away and then swiftly moved.

His body streaked across the sky, his speed was incredible. Lin

Feng was moving like the wind and the sword in his hand also seemed to follow the wind. He was in fusion with his sword so his sword was like part of his body as it moved without resistance.

“Psssh....” A light and subtle sound emerged in the air, and a thread of blood-shot into the air.

The one who had the evil tiger spirit was shocked. He wasn't much weaker than the elder but at that moment, a thread of blood appeared on the cultivators throat and the blood didn't stop flowing.

The crowd was astonished. They were both dead. In the blink of an eye, two cultivators of the third Xuan Qi layer had died. One had his chest mangled and the other had his throat slit. Blood was raining down from the sky.

Those two bodies heavily plummeted from the sky and lifelessly crashed into the ground. The crowd shivered, Lin Feng had killed two cultivators of the third Xuan Qi layer so easily. They hadn't even managed to harm a hair on Lin Feng's head.

When the one with the snake spirit saw that, he was astonished. He just watched the two bodies lifelessly fall down to the ground and when he saw that, his heart twitched. They had died, they were both dead.

Besides, the Winged Tiger was still fighting. It was fighting against the two cultivators of the second Xuan Qi layer and it had already killed one of them.

Lin Feng and the Winged Tiger were both terrifyingly powerful.

“Escape!”

There were only two people left at that moment. They both had the same thought, they just wanted to escape. They couldn't deal with Lin Feng. It was already too late for the others, they couldn't fight anymore, otherwise they were doomed to die, they could only escape.

The one fighting against Lin Feng released some pure Qi which immediately shot towards Lin Feng. Besides, at the same time, he moved as well, however, he didn't rush towards Lin Feng, instead, he turned around and tried to escape.

Escaping was the only chance he had to continue living.

But could he escape?

Mister Huo and Mister Chi hadn't moved a single time. Immediately after, they prepared to move. When they saw the cultivator who wanted to escape, they smiled coldly.

At the moment when they wanted to move, just like the wind, Lin Feng rushed towards the escaping cultivator which surprised the two old men. Lin Feng was trying to prevent them from having to act, they didn't need to help him stop one person from escaping, this made them smile.

“Nooooo!” A horrible scream filled with dread spread through the atmosphere. That person could feel a cold wind approaching from behind which terrified him.

However, since he had come to attack the academy, he was already doomed. A sword moving with the wind descended as a bloody line appeared between his eyebrows.

Immediately after, the crowd started shaking. They only saw the cultivator of the third Xuan Qi layer, who was trying to escape, get split in half by Lin Feng’s sword. Blood once again poured from the sky, the scene was incredible.

Chapter 407: Yue Qing Shan's Thoughts!

The last one had died. Three cultivators of the third Xuan Qi layer had died. They were all killed by Lin Feng.

At the same time, the Winged Tiger roared. It also killed the last remaining cultivator of the second Xuan Qi layer. In the air, there were only one person and his ferocious beast remaining.

Lin Feng and the Winged Tiger.

The outcome of the battle made many people grow speechless. It was astonishing. They had never thought that Lin Feng would be able to kill all the members of the Wan Shou Sect.

Twelve cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer and five Xuan level beasts... That was a terrifying group of cultivators,, anywhere else in Xue Yue. They would have been considered a terrifying force, but at that moment. They had all been slaughtered by Lin Feng. None of them were left alive.

Everything had happened just like Lin Feng said. The Wan Shou Sect wanted to kill Lin Feng and all the people who were close to him. They had planned to kill all of them, but in the end, Lin Feng killed all of the attacking members, leaving none alive.

They had wanted to kill Lin Feng's friends, and even Meng Qing. Lin Feng would show no mercy, he immediately decided that he was going to massacre them. None of them would live to tell the tale.

Lin Feng glanced at the crowd with his pitch-black eyes which made people's hearts pound brutally. Those ice-cold eyes were terrifying. They were wondering what happened to Lin Feng for him to become so powerful.

At that moment, Meng Qing was looking at Lin Feng with a resplendent smile on her face. She didn't look cold anymore, she just had a beautiful, sweet and happy smile on her face.

Meng Qing's smile gushed into Lin Feng's heart just like a warm breeze.

Lin Feng had made rivers of blood flow, but it wasn't important, all that mattered to him was that Meng Qing's coldness was gradually disappearing. He had managed to melt the ice around her heart. Lin Feng felt gratified and pleasantly surprised.

All his work was worth it!

Back then, Meng Qing had always been protecting him and now it was different, he now had the power to protect the woman he loved, he couldn't let anyone harm her.

"I'm sorry that I made you go through all of this." Said Lin Feng in a soft tone. Meng Qing smiled and shook her head. She didn't feel displeased at all, she just felt a very warm sensation in her heart.

Was that how it felt to be protected by the man she loved? She finally knew how it felt. It felt so sweet, it was a wonderful feeling.

If Lin Feng could protect her forever, she would be willing to give up on her cultivation, even if it took her a million years to recover, it would be worth it.

“Cough cough!” A light cough interrupted Lin Feng and Meng Qing’s intimate moment. Lin Feng suddenly looked embarrassed, he turned his head and saw the two old men, they weren’t standing very far from the couple. He smiled and said: “Mister Chi, Mister Huo, why did you both come to the Imperial City?”

“There are high-ranking soldiers of the Xuan Qi layer in Yangzhou City now, so they can protect the city. Mister Huo and I were bored so we both wanted to come.” Said Mister Chi in a low voice while smiling. Lin Feng was stupefied and staring at Mister Chi.

“How many uncles have broken through to the Xuan Qi layer?” Asked Lin Feng.

“All of them.” Replied Mister Chi which astonished Lin Feng. Immediately after, a radiant smile appeared on his face. Ren Qing Kuang and the other officers had all broken through to the Xuan Qi layer. There were three officers of the Xuan Qi layer in Yangzhou City, soon after, some of the Chi Xie troops would also start to break through to the Xuan Qi layer.

No wonder Mister Chi and Mister Huo felt they could both come

to the Imperial City and let off some steam. It was indeed a wonderful thing. Lin Feng felt happy to hear the news.

Mister Huo and Mister Chi had helped Ren Qing Kuang and the others improve their cultivation by leaps and bounds. They would be able to help even more people break through to the Xuan Qi layer in the future.

The Chi Xie troops would be a power that could sweep across Xue Yue someday, that was also Lin Feng's goal.

“Lin Feng, let's go somewhere else and talk.” Said Mister Huo while talking to Lin Feng who then nodded. The crowd was still there looking at them which didn't make them feel relaxed when talked with eachother.

Immediately after, Lin Feng, Meng Qing and the two old men walked away. When the crowd saw Lin Feng leave, they sighed.

Back when Lin Feng had come to the Celestial Academy for the first time, nobody had thought that he would be able to achieve such incredible things.

Lin Feng had achieved such great things, this battle was just another page in Lin Feng's adventures. Alone with his ferocious beast, they had managed to massacre a group of eleven cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer and five Xuan level beasts. Amongst them, there had been three cultivators of the third Xuan Qi layer but they had also all been killed by Lin Feng.

Lin Feng's name would spread through the Imperial City once again. Besides, it wouldn't create less of a buzz than the time when he had come for Liu Cang Lan with the Chi Xie troops.

From that moment on, the strongest cultivators of Xue Yue wouldn't be able to ignore Lin Feng's existence anymore. With his natural abilities, Lin Feng would, sooner or later, catch up with them and even surpass them.

In fact, everybody was thinking that way. Lin Feng's group had killed twelve of the Wan Shou Sect's cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer that came to the celestial academy, the news would spread extremely quickly in the Imperial City. The greatest spheres of influence would all have different reactions when hearing the news. The only common feeling amongst the spheres of influence would be shock.

Lin Feng was growing and he was becoming the man whom everybody had anticipated.

At the Yue Clan, Yue Qing Shan was observing a painting hanging on a wall. It was a portrait. It was the portrait of a beautiful woman with a resplendent smile.

Behind Yue Qing Shan, Yue Tian Ming was also calmly standing and looking at the portrait. He didn't say anything, he just quietly looked towards the portrait. She used to be the top disciple of the Yue Clan but these days, she wasn't with the clan. She hadn't returned to the Yue Clan for over eighteen years.

Yue Tian Ming knew that the old man standing in front of him was furious about what had happened with her, but as before, nobody could replace her in his heart.

Even his grandson, who was dedicated to practicing cultivation and who was catching up with her at full speed couldn't replace her inside his heart.

The old man had pushed himself so hard that he had white hair, but he was doing that for her.

Yue Tian Ming also knew that Yue Qing Shan came to see that portrait more and more often, it was because of a young man who was in the Imperial City.

“Meng He, your son is already a grown man. Besides, he's not weaker than him. Now, you must be extremely proud. You must still be convinced that your choice was the right one. I, his grandfather, was I wrong, or was I right?” Whispered the old man. He didn't even know who he was directing the question towards.

He remained silent for a while, his eyes were filled with determination, and he then continued to speak: “Meng He, no matter what you think, I am convinced that everything I did was for the sake of the Yue Clan. I haven't done anything wrong. I can guarantee that I was in the right, you were the one at fault.”

When the old man finished talking, he abruptly turned away from the portrait and looked at Yue Tian Ming in a calm and solemn way. He then said: “Tian Ming, I want you to strive for

victory at the Great Competition of Xue Yu, you have to defeat Lin Feng. You must win, you are not allowed to lose.”

Yue Tian Ming was surprised. He looked at the old man yet didn't look that convinced.

Yue Tian Ming nodded and said sounding confident: “Grandpa, I will defeat Lin Feng. I will defeat him in front of everyone. Auntie will see it too.

“Indeed.” Nodded Yue Qing Shan. He then immediately started walking towards another part of the room.

“Grandpa, the Wan Shou Sect has been defeated, but more strong cultivators will appear, shouldn't we do something?” Suddenly asked Yue Tian Ming.

“No need, the Wan Shou Sect can't do anything against him.” Said the old man indifferently which surprised Yue Tian Ming. Immediately after, he slightly nodded. Indeed, he had already drawn so many people's attention and was already in a dangerous situation, she was obviously following the entire situation.

How could his auntie allow anyone to hurt her son? The Wan Shou Sect wouldn't be able to do anything.

Yue Qing Shan had faith in her, he had faith in his own daughter!

Chapter 408: Come To Kill!

At the Wan Shou Sect, in a large hall filled with people. Everybody there was completely silent which made the atmosphere feel extremely tense.

Nobody was talking and nobody dared to breath loudly. At that moment, Teng Wu Yao was sitting on a throne. His facial expression looked ice-cold. The throne on which he was sitting was giving a domineering aura as well, it was scary.

He had learnt that the disciples and elders he sent to kill Lin Feng's friends had all been killed. The mission had been a complete failure.

The twelve cultivators and five ferocious beasts he had sent to the Celestial Academy were some of his most valued members. They were the main force in the battle against Lin Feng's friends but they were all massacred, and it was said that Lin Feng had killed all of them alone with the help of his ferocious beast.

They had all died. Not a single one was left with their life.

That absolute defeat hadn't only led to the loss of some of the best members in the sect, but it was also an extreme humiliation, the Wan Shou Sect had lost a great deal of face.

Lin Feng had killed the entire group in front of a crowd of witnesses, that was a incredible humiliation. The Wan Shou Sect's reputation was ruined.

That was a direct attack against Teng Wu Yao's reputation.

Wu Zhen, his son, was a genius but in the Nine Dragon Mountain Chain, he was chasing Lin Feng and then his Qi suddenly disappeared. He hadn't returned for a long time but Lin Feng was still alive and had returned to the city, that was the bitter reality. Maybe Lin Feng really killed Wu Zhen.

At the same time, the patriarch of the Wan Shou Sect had sent a group of its members to kill Lin Feng's friends which was already an exaggerated response, that was a threat to all those who opposed the sect, but in the end the people he had sent were killed. They had all died during their attack. It was a terrible defeat for the patriarch but the worst part was that he would be the subject of all the jokes in the Imperial City.

"Patriarch, I will go and kill him." Said someone breaking the silence. The one who just spoke was Wu Qing. He was the third ranked of the eight high-officials.

Everybody was nodding. Wu Qing was the only disciple who could come back with Lin Feng's life and regain some of the prestige for the sect. Wu Qing would have no problem killing Lin Feng.

But Teng Wu Yao remained silent. He then slightly shook his head and said: "Wu Qing, your job isn't to kill him, your job is to increase your ranking within the high-official's and win the Xue Yu Great Competition. Now, you should go and cultivate in peace

and make as many improvements as possible, so you can rise in the ranking. The Wan Shou Sect will need you in the future.”

Wu Qing listened to Teng Wu Yao in a calm and solemn way. Immediately after, he nodded and moved back. Indeed, he had to focus on his goal to rise in the ranking. He had to becoming the strongest of the eight high-officials, that was his mission. If somebody else could kill Lin Feng, it would provide a better solution.

“Teng Wu Shan!” Shouted Teng Wu Yao. Teng Wu Shan took a step forwards and said: “Patriarch.”

“Take some people with you and go to the Celestial Academy. Then bring his head back so we can feed it to the beasts.” Said Teng Wu Yao in a cold and detached tone. Immediately after, he stood up and started to walk away.

“Roger, Patriarch!” Said Teng Wu Shan while nodding seriously. Lin Feng had to die. This time, they would definitely come back with Lin Feng’s head and show the entire Xue Yue Country that the Wan Shou Sect couldn’t be provoked so easily.

In the main hall, there was a young man who had a complex expression in his eyes.

It was Kuang Shi, everything was happening because he provoked Lin Feng when he went to steal the vein of the earth. He thought that he would be able to rob Lin Feng of everything and force him to leave. The most ridiculous part was that in the end he

had failed to steal the vein of the earth and on top of that the Wan Shou Sect had lost many of its core members.

Besides, the young man that Kuang Shi had chosen to offend was extremely famous in Xue Yue. Kuang Shi couldn't even compete with him anymore, he was in a dilemma. Lin Feng and he were from two different worlds. In the past, he acted extremely arrogantly in front of Lin Feng and attempted to rob him, only now was he realizing how ridiculous he had been.

A large group of people belonging to the Wan Shou Sect was going to the Celestial Academy to kill Lin Feng. Some other people were following them too.

It seemed like they had to kill Lin Feng that time.

It seemed like this time, the group of members of the Wan Shou Sect were much stronger and filled with the most powerful elements of the sect. They were definitely going to kill Lin Feng, how was he supposed to stop them?

Those cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer were either flying through the sky or riding ferocious beasts. They were extremely quick. They did not need much time to arrive at the Celestial Academy.

When the members of the Celestial Academy saw that large group of people in the sky, they were astonished. They had come again. The members of the Wan Shou Sect hadn't waited before sending another group, they immediately sent a stronger group after they received the news.

At that moment, Lin Feng was in his living quarters. He was calmly speaking with Mister Huo and Mister Chi. Yi Xue then rushed over in a state of panic to inform them that the Wan Shou Sect had come with a larger and more powerful group, it seemed they were furious.

But Lin Feng only frowned slightly. In the blink of an eye, his facial expression returned to normal again. He then smiled coldly.

The Wan Shou Sect really refused to give up until they had finished digging their own grave!

“Mister Huo, Mister Chi, are you interested in getting some exercise?” Smiled Lin Feng which surprised the old men. That guy was still unperturbed....

“Young master, the vice patriarch of the Wan Shou Sect, Teng Wu Shan, is part of the group. You shouldn’t go!” Said Yi Xue when she heard that Lin Feng didn’t take the threat seriously. She was surprised by Lin Feng’s actions. Lin Feng was surprisingly talking as if it was a joke. Could it be that Lin Feng didn’t know that those people had come to kill him?

“I know, Yi Xue. Don’t worry, nothing will happen to me.” Said Lin Feng while smiling and standing up.

Mister Huo and Mister Chi smiled at each other and then followed Lin Feng. They both passed through the stone door. The two old men were wondering what kind of exercise Lin Feng was

talking about.

In the air next to a cultivation tower were Teng Wu Shan with a large group of people.

All of them looked ice-cold and deadly energy surrounded their bodies. It was said that Lin Feng had killed twelve of their comrades and five of their beasts in the academy, thus, this was also the place where they were going to behead him.

“Lin Feng, come out and die!” Said a voice which echoed through the sky. It was filled with thick deadly energy and it echoed into the distance enveloping the entire academy.

“Those people are extremely aggressive.” Thought some of the students of the academy while frowning. They were shouting so furiously that the sound waves were painful to the ears. Besides, they were standing next to the cultivation tower and many people were practicing inside, even though the sound insulation in the cultivation rooms was good, that person had shouted so loud that that it definitely disturbed the practicing cultivators.

The Wan Shou Sect was looking down on all the members of the Celestial Academy.

Besides when facing so many strong cultivators, would Lin Feng come out?

The answer was... Certainly!

“Bunch of arrogant morons.” Said a faintly discernible voice which also echoed into the distance, when the group heard it, their ears twitched. They could still distinctly hear the insult echoing in the atmosphere.

They turned around and saw a person slowly approaching.

It was a young man. Nobody dared to look down on him, there was only respect.

When two people were of similar cultivations, the weaker might envy the stronger person, but when two cultivators were in completely different leagues, the weaker wouldn't even waste time envying the other because they knew that they would never be able to catch up, so all they could do was admire that person's strength.

For many people at the Celestial Academy, that was the case with Lin Feng, it was clear to them that Lin Feng belonged to a different world than them, Lin Feng's natural abilities were too terrifying.

Teng Wu Shan frowned, his eyes were filled with killing intent. He hadn't thought that Lin Feng would dare to show his face, and on top of that he was even insulting them.

That guy was really insufferably arrogant.

“Lin Feng, you killed members of my sect, I will bring your head

back to the Wan Shou Sect and feed it to the beasts as compensation.” Said Teng Wu Shan while staring at Lin Feng in an evil way.

Teng Wu Shan was the first person of the Wan Shou Sect who encountered Lin Feng, it dated back to when they destroyed the Yun Hai Sect. Back then, Teng Wu Shan already had a strange feeling but he hadn't dared think that Lin Feng would, someday, reach such heights... And besides, if Lin Feng hadn't offended the Wan Shou Sect when he did, he would have been able to grow even stronger.

“Behead me and take my head back to the Wan Shou Sect to feed it to the beasts?” Said Lin Feng sounding cold and detached while looking at the people in the sky, Lin Feng looked like he was about to burst into laughter because he found it amusing.

“Since that is the case, everybody come down. I am waiting for you to behead me.” Said Lin Feng sounding indifferent which made Teng Wu Shan and the others frown but immediately after, killing intent flashed through their eyes.

“Kill him!” Shouted Teng Wu Shan in a deep voice. In a flash, he released his deadly energy. This time, the members of the Wan Shou Sect were not going to show any sign of courtesy, they immediately attacked Lin Feng.

However, at that moment, a strange sound filled the air. It was the melody of a zither.

When Lin Feng heard that zither melody, he smiled coldly, were the Wan Shou Sect really foolish enough to think that nobody would help him in the Celestial Academy?

Chapter 409: The Nightmare of the Wan Shou Sect

The first time that the Wan Shou Sect had come to kill Lin Feng's friends, Lin Feng had rushed to stop them but the Celestial Academy didn't intervene.

However this time, the Wan Shou Sect had come in great numbers and barged into their territory, weren't they looking down on the academy too much?

Their behaviour proved that they did not put the academy in their eyes, they thought that the Celestial Academy didn't dare to stand in their way.

But Lin Feng obviously knew that was not the case, he knew who was at the roots of the academy, he also knew that, inside the academy, there was an extremely strong cultivator who was hidden in the background: Yan Yu Ping Sheng.

Besides, Lin Feng and Yan Yu Ping Sheng were extremely close. Yan Yu Ping Sheng was a teacher and his two students, Wen Ao Xue and Duan Xin Ye, were close to Lin Feng. Therefore, when Lin Feng heard that the Wan Shou Sect had brought a large group with murderous intentions, Lin Feng knew that Yan Yu Ping Sheng wouldn't stay hidden.

In fact, it was exactly like Lin Feng had anticipated. When he heard the sound of the zither, he knew that Yan Yu Ping Sheng had come.

“Stop!” Suddenly shouted Teng Wu Shan. Instantly everybody stopped moving, they were wondering why they were interrupted.

Stop?

Teng Wu Shan had shouted at them when he heard the zither, ordering them to stop. Who was the one playing the zither?

Everybody turned around and looked in the direction where the melody was coming from. In the distance, a silhouette appeared on the horizon and that person was moving towards them.

That person was surrounded by a calm and tranquil Qi, giving anyone who looked at him a feeling of calm and serenity.

“Teacher!” Many people immediately recognized Yan Yu Ping Sheng when they saw him. He was sitting on a cushion as he flew through the sky which stupefied the crowd.

“Teacher is so amazing!” Thought many people surprised. Yan Yu Ping Sheng usually gave people the feeling that he was a simple, indifferent and carefree man. They just knew that he loved playing the zither. People who knew how terrifyingly strong he was were very rare.

Teng Wu Shan looked at that carefree man and frowned. He looked at him and said: “Venerable Mister Yan Yu, this is between Lin Feng and the Wan Shou Sect, I hope that you will understand

and will not get involved.” the crowd suddenly shivered. The vice-patriarch of the Wan Shou Sect was calling him “venerable mister” which made the crowd swallow their saliva, they were speechless.

Many members of the Wan Shou Sect didn’t know who Yan Yu Ping Sheng was so they were surprised. The form of address Teng Wu Shan used to talk to Yan Yu Ping Sheng was surprising but it seemed natural.

At that moment, Yan Yu Ping Sheng glanced at Teng Wu Shan in an indifferent way, his fingers were still fluttering across the strings of the zither, the melody was gradually becoming more intense, the calmness of the melody contained murderous intentions which made Teng Wu Shan frown even more firmly.

“Between Lin Feng and you? Teng Wu Shan, you ought to know my status.” Said Yan Yu Ping Sheng indifferently.

“I know, you are the principal of the Celestial Academy!” Replied Teng Wu Shan which made the crowd frown.

Principal? Surprisingly, Yan Yu Ping Sheng was the principal of the Celestial Academy, the crowd was astonished, nobody had ever thought of that.

Lin Feng was also stupefied, the principal of the Celestial Academy was Yan Yu Ping Sheng?!

What about Duan Wu Ya then?

“Since you know that I am the principal of the Celestial Academy, I would like to ask you something, you barged into the academy in such a domineering and aggressive way but... Have you ever thought about my opinion?” The melody of the zither was growing colder and colder. Yan Yu Ping Sheng’s voice was also colder which made Teng Wu Shan’s frown grow more intense.

“Venerable Mister Yan Yu, Lin Feng has killed members of the Wan Shou Sect, the patriarch himself gave the order to kill Lin Feng.” Said Teng Wu Shan while narrowing his eyes.

“Very good.” Said Yan Yu Ping Sheng sounding cold and detached.

“The Wan Shou Sect thinks they can look down on everyone, I didn’t condemn Teng Wu Yao. But against all expectations, you Teng Wu Shan, surprisingly came here and threatened me with the name of Teng Wu Yao. Go back and tell him to come in person.” Said Yan Yu Ping Sheng. At that moment, he was very calm but his calmness didn’t seem auspicious.

Teng Wu Shan looked glum, he was silently staring at Yan Yu Ping Sheng.

After looking pensive for a while, Teng Wu Shan opened his mouth again: “Since it’s that way, I will go and inform the patriarch.”

When he finished talking, Teng Wu Shan turned and left with his

group.

If they tried to attack Lin Feng and Yan Yu Ping Sheng got involved, they wouldn't have the ability to kill Lin Feng. The only option was for them was to leave.

“Wait, wait.” Said a voice sounding indifferent which surprised Teng Wu Shan, he stopped but didn't turn around and said: “Venerable Mister Yan Yu, is there anything else you would like?”

“If you want to barge in, you barge in, if you want to leave, you just leave, what kind of place do you think my academy is?” When Yan Yu Ping Sheng finished talking, he continued playing the zither. An oppressive Qi emerged in the atmosphere, the music that started flowing in the atmosphere felt deadly as it invaded the ears.

“Retreat quickly!”

Teng Wu Shan's facial expression changed, he abruptly started to flee.

When the members of the Wan Shou Sect saw that, all their silhouettes flickered, they all closely followed Teng Wu Shan.

The deadly energy of the melody started revolving in the atmosphere. Threads of pure Qi were emerging from the zither in large quantities, they then turned into a rain of pure Qi, the threads were as sharp as swords as they flew through the air.

“Aaaaahhhh.....”

Many horrible shrieks spread through the air. Many people were struck with an acute and violent pain that spread through their entire body. Their beasts were the main target of that zither rain and they roared in agony.

“What a terrifying strength.” Thought the crowd when they saw that sharp zither rain. They were dazzled, Yan Yu Ping Sheng’s was extremely strong.

“Next time you barge in here, you will suffer the same fate as your beasts.” Said Yan Yu Ping Sheng from the sky. Immediately after, the beasts of the Wan Shou Sect could be seen falling from the sky, they had died.

The Wan Shou Sect had lost again, so many strong cultivators had come with the intention to kill Lin Feng and were being humiliated again. Yan Yu Ping Sheng had humiliated them this time.

Teng Wu Shan’s facial expression looked glum, ferocious and hideous, he looked hideously scary.

“Yan Yu Ping Sheng!” Teng Wu Shan and the others’ silhouettes flickered, they were releasing a terrifying deadly Qi. In such a short time, the Wan Shou Sect had been humiliated by Lin Feng, a junior, by the Yue Clan and then by Yan Yu Ping Sheng. On top of that, they had lost many cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer and a

great deal of ferocious beasts. Even their bones felt the pain of this humiliation.

How could the Wan Shou Sect not be furious?

When the crowd sensed the terrifying energy coming from the Wan Shou Sect as they escaped into the distance, they moved farther away, the crowd didn't dare to provoke them.

The members of the Wan Shou Sect were like death gods at that moment, if anyone saw them, they instinctively moved out of the way.

However, at that moment, someone was standing in front of them, motionless.

“Get lost!” Shouted Teng Wu Shan furiously and immediately tried to punch the person blocking their path, his fist was unleashing his rage.

That punch whistled through the air and was clearly aiming to kill the person. However, at the moment when that person was going to be struck by the punch, an incredibly sharp energy swept over the area. The energy of that punch was destroyed in an instant.

“Huh?” Teng Wu Shan frowned and stopped. He raised his hand and waved indicating that he all of the group to stop as well.

“Your Excellency, who are you?” Asked Teng Wu Shan in a cold and detached tone. A moment before, that extremely sharp Qi felt like sword energy, it had immediately crushed destroyed the force unleashed by his punch, that person was probably extremely strong.

“It’s been a long time since someone tried to attack me.” Said the person naturally. That person then slowly turned around and at that moment, Teng Wu Shan frowned and his facial expression drastically changed.

It was him, surprisingly, it was him!

Teng Wu Shan surprisingly dared to attack him!

“I didn’t know it was you, Your Excellency! I offended you, please forgive me!”

Nobody replied to Teng Wu Shan. In the air, a deadly energy solidified itself into a sword, it then lacerated the air emitting whistling sounds.

That move made Teng Wu Shan’s facial expression drastically fall, he shouted loudly: “Zhuge Wu Qing, I was ignorant, I didn’t mean to offend you, is it necessary to act in such a way?”

“You didn’t know that it was me but I came here precisely to wait for you.” Said Zhuge Wu Qing which astonished them. Zhuge Wu Qing had been waiting for them!

His incredible sword was lacerating everything, he moved and his entire body looked just like a sword. His silhouette flickered and he disappeared from sight.

A sword whistled and streaked across the sky and each time it appeared, blood splashed into the air.

“Die!”

Zhuge Wu Qing surprisingly attacked them, he was releasing a cruel and merciless deadly energy. Each time he moved, a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer would die. Zhuge Wu Qing was slaughtering the entirety of the large group.

In the air, nothing else could exist, there was only Zhuge Wu Qing's sword energy, the members of the Wan Shou Sect didn't even know why they were being butchered.

Chapter 410: The Path of Bloodshed

The setting sun looked like blood, a bloodthirsty sword energy had invaded the atmosphere, but now the sword energy had vanished, the atmosphere was quiet and desolate.

At that moment, only one cultivator from the Wan Shou Sect was left.

Teng Wu Shan was the only person remaining. All the Xuan Qi layer cultivators and Xuan level beasts of the Wan Shou Sect had already died. They had all died. The corpses of the cultivators had already hit the ground, there were no signs of life coming from the pile of bodies.

The ordinary people on the ground had seen what happened. They felt like it must be a dream, it couldn't possibly be real.

They had all died. Those members of the Wan Shou Sect had come in the most domineering and imposing fashion, they were all furious, they thought that nobody would have dared to provoke their group filled with those of the Xuan Qi layer, but in the end, only Teng Wu Shan was left alive. This was truly shocking.

Teng Wu Shan himself couldn't even believe what happened. He was dumbstruck. At that moment, he was both furious and grieving for his comrades, but he was barely able to protect himself.

A beam of sword Qi flashed and in an instant, it pressed against

his throat, Zhuge Wu Qing's sharp eyes were staring at him. Teng Wu Shan understood that if his interlocutor wished, that sword Qi could slit his throat immediately and take his life. His life was in Zhuge Wu Qing's hands.

“Why?” Asked Teng Wu Shan while looking at Zhuge Wu Qing. He was completely lost, he didn't understand anything. Even though he was terrified, he still wanted to know why those cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer died, why?

“My sect, the Wan Shou Sect, has never offended ‘Your Excellency’! Why be so cruel this time?”

Zhuge Wu Qing looked at him in a cold and detached way, however, there were still some lights of compassion and pity in his eyes. How pitiful this situation was.

“I will spare your life. Get lost, go back and tell Teng Wu Yao that some people cannot be threatened.” Said Zhuge Wu Qing in a cold and detached way which stupefied Teng Wu Shan.

Some people couldn't be threatened...?

Who was the powerful person that they had threatened? The only one they had provoked recently was Lin Feng...

But how could Zhuge Wu Qing be talking about Lin Feng? It was impossible. Teng Wu Shan couldn't believe that was possibly the reason.

“I don’t understand.” Said Teng Wu Shan.

Zhuge Wu Qing found him to look even more clueless and pitiful, the Wan Shou Sect was really foolish.

“Go back, Teng Wu Yao should think about it carefully. There is someone that the Yu Clan would like to kill but doesn’t dare to act, could it be that Teng Wu Yao thinks that the Wan Shou Sect had grown stronger than the Yu Clan!?” When he finished talking, he absorbed his sword energy which was pressed against Teng Wu Shan’s throat, it left a chilling sensation. It scared him so much that he could feel the cold sweat.

Zhuge Wu Qing turned his head and shot into the sky like a sword.

Teng Wu Shan rubbed his throat where the sword Qi was pressed against him, there was still a trace of blood. A moment before, if Zhuge Wu Qing had wished, he could have cut off his head.

“The Yu Clan wants to kill him... But doesn’t dare to act....” Whispered Teng Wu Shan. His mouth twitched, indeed, he immediately understood that they had neglected and overlooked an extremely important detail.

Lin Feng had killed Yu Tian Xing and Yu Qiu had also died because of him, it wouldn’t be an exaggeration to say that the Yu Clan hated Lin Feng more than the Wan Shou Sect, but had the Yu Clan dealt with Lin Feng?

They hadn't. The Yu Clan hadn't dealt with Lin Feng, even the last time in the mountain chain, the Yu Clan was there as well, they had announced that they wanted to kill Lin Feng but in the end, they didn't act on it. Not a single one of them had come forward to kill Lin Feng. The Wan Shou Sect had been the only group who blindly ignored all those events and openly fought against Lin Feng. The Yu Clan hadn't intervened at all, they kept their hands clean of the situation.

At that moment, Teng Wu Shan was recalling Zhuge Wu Qing's words and cold sweat had covered his body, a chill was running down his spine.

The Yu Clan hated Lin Feng so much but they didn't dare to attack him, there must be a reason behind it.

How ridiculous were they? They had thought that Lin Feng was just a little insignificant ant, without any influence, that they could crush, what a joke! Because of that, the Wan Shou Sect had lost more than half of its strongest cultivators. Its strength had been reduced to less than a third of what it used to be. How ridiculous. It sounded like an unbelievable joke that no one would believe.

Teng Wu Shan had a grief stricken smile on his face, then his silhouette disappeared into the sky like a rainbow.

Teng Wu Shan was ridiculing his own foolish behaviour. In the near future, the Wan Shou Sect would become the laughingstock

of Xue Yue.

.....

Lin Feng was still in the Celestial Academy, he obviously didn't know that the members of the Wan Shou Sect had been slaughtered by Zhuge Wu Qing.

At that moment, he was sitting on a stone chair, in front of him, there was a chessboard. The petals of the peach trees in blossom were floating in the air around him, it was incredibly beautiful.

In front of Lin Feng, was Yan Yu Ping Sheng.

“Lin Feng, your strategy is filled with sharp and aggressive methods!” Said Yan Yu Ping Sheng when he saw Lin Feng's moves. In a flash, Lin Feng had several directions from which to attack. It seemed like he was about to corner Yan Yu Ping Sheng's pieces, Lin Feng's playing style was extremely aggressive.

“But if your opponent is stronger than you, being aggressive is of no help.” Yan Yu Ping Sheng moved one piece and the game was drastically changed in the blink of an eye. Lin Feng seemed like he wanted to overwhelm Yan Yu Ping Sheng's pieces, his style was extremely aggressive, however, Yan Yu Ping Sheng's style was that of a mountain, absolutely clam and unmoving. Lin Feng was unable to take any of Yan Yu Ping Sheng's pieces. Lin Feng was also lost, every move he thought about making would lose the game.

Lin Feng looked perplexed, he was silently observing the chessboard. His style was aggressive but if the opponent's defense was too strong, how could he break through?

"Please guide me, teacher." Said Lin Feng after being stuck in thought for a long period of time. He didn't know what to do, he wasn't going to lie, he was beaten.

"Move first." Said Yan Yu Ping Sheng which made Lin Feng pull a long face. He then slowly moved a piece, it was a defensive move, if the opponent was too strong and he felt threatened, he would defend and wait for his next opportunity to strike.

When Yan Yu Ping Sheng saw Lin Feng's move, he smiled. Immediately after, he made his next move. Lin Feng's pieces were in bad positions and he could lose at any moment. Lin Feng didn't like seeing such a game but that was the sad reality.

"Once you've shot the arrow, there's no getting it back, do you understand?" Said Yan Yu Ping Sheng firmly. Lin Feng remained silent. He had already chosen his strategy, he couldn't turn back time.

At that moment, Lin Feng had the feeling that he both understood and didn't understand at the same time.

"Teacher, I'm stupid, please elaborate." Said Lin Feng after remaining silent for a while. He needed more explanation as he couldn't figure it out himself.

“The position in which you have put yourself in is weak, you can be counter attacked from everywhere. A moment ago, you acted in such an aggressive way, but you were like an ant trying to shake a tree, because you were unsuccessful and have left so many holes to exploit, you are forced into the defensive and you are now hoping there will be another opportunity to strike a blow and come out victorious. However, in reality, the great spheres of influence will not allow you to have a second chance striking a blow, they will seize whichever opportunity they can to crush you in a single instant.” Said Yan Yu Ping Sheng slowly. Immediately after, he started grabbing Lin Feng’s pieces and rearranging them on the chessboard. He put them in a position so that not even a drop of water could trickle through his defence. Even though no defence was perfect there was always danger, Lin Feng was at least less vulnerable. Besides, it also seemed like Lin Feng’s attacking position was much weaker, it did not seem threatening anymore.

“Lin Feng, you have two paths in front of you, the first is to retreat voluntarily, even if it means disappearing. No matter how strong the opponent is, they cannot do anything if they cannot confront you, thus you can benefit from that time to become stronger and once you’re strong enough, you can attack again.”

Lin Feng was calmly listening to Yan Yu Ping Sheng and understood its meaning. The first path was leaving, disappearing from the Imperial City, avoiding the danger. That way, no matter how strong his enemies were, they wouldn’t be able to pursue Lin Feng, after becoming stronger, he could return to the Imperial City.

But if he chose that path, he would have to sacrifice a few pieces, after all, he wouldn’t be able to disappear and bring the entirety of

Yangzhou City along with him.

“Teacher, what is the second path?” Asked Lin Feng.

“The second path is..... Slaughter!” Said Yan Yu Ping Sheng, even though he was usually so calm, at that moment he was releasing an extremely ruthless and sharp Qi.

“Slaughtering all of your enemies is extremely difficult when you are weaker. You must always press forward with an indomitable will. You must evolve and grow stronger amongst a bloodbath. You cannot stop killing until your enemies are all dead. Of course, in order to slaughter your way through your enemies like a force of nature, you must always improve yourself, become stronger and stronger until the day when you have surpassed everybody else. However, that path is extremely dangerous and leaves you extremely vulnerable.”

Extremely sharp lights were twinkling in Lin Feng’s eyes.

“Teacher, the first path is for cowards, I can escape but if I run away, how will be able to maintain my indomitable will? Therefore, I will choose the second path, the path of bloodshed, the path of a killer. I will slaughter a path from the depths of hell all the way into the heavens!

Chapter 411: Cosmic Annihilation

The path of bloodshed, slaughtering a path into the heavens...

At that moment, Lin Feng was releasing a powerful and murderous aura. It was piercing through the air and rustling through the peach trees whose leaves fluttered, as if they were flinching away.

Yan Yu Ping Sheng was looking at Lin Feng and smiling. On the continent, many people had become killers but few of them had become murderous demons.

Someone who walked the path of bloodshed would have a monstrous cultivation. There was a legend that said in ancient times, there was an evil deity, he was a true murderous demon, he had slaughtered so many people that entire country became a bloodbath. In the end, nobody knew where he was now. It was said that he broke through to the Tian Qi layer... But those were only rumors and Yan Yu Ping Sheng didn't know more than that, after all, he hadn't broken through to the Tian Qi layer yet.

Besides, Lin Feng had already started walking on the path of bloodshed. If people wanted to kill him, he would kill them. Yan Yu Ping Sheng could also feel the murderous aura surrounding Lin Feng. Therefore, he decided to explain these things to Lin Feng. Since Lin Feng couldn't undo his actions and he wouldn't run away, he decided to tell him about the path of bloodshed.

“Lin Feng, I will play a tune for you.” Said Yan Yu Ping Sheng.

Lin Feng then nodded and replied: “Ok.”

Yan Yu Ping Sheng stretched his hand and stroked the table, immediately after, both the table and the chessboard between them disappeared. Then, he grabbed his zither which was on his back and placed it between them.

Lin Feng was still sitting opposite Yan Yu Ping Sheng, he remained motionless. He only saw Yan Yu Ping Sheng's fingers which started to float across the strings of the zither.

The first sound spread in the atmosphere and a sharp light appeared which made Lin Feng shiver.

The first note contained deadly energy.

Then Yan Yu Ping Sheng's fingers started to dance above the strings of the zither. The deadly energy was becoming more and more powerful. Lin Feng was welcoming that energy, unceasingly absorbing it. At the same time, around his body, a sharp Qi emerged and seemed to move with the melody of the zither.

Yan Yu Ping Sheng didn't raise his head, he was focused on playing the zither. The deadly energy had invaded the entire atmosphere and didn't stop emerging from the zither.

It was so quick, Yan Yu Ping Sheng's fingers were moving with extreme speed across the strings, besides he was still accelerating, and the deadly energy was becoming stronger and stronger, more

and more aggressive.

Very quickly, Lin Feng's heart was filled with the sensation of murder and destruction, there was nothing else left in his heart except for complete annihilation.

The heartless and emotionless deadly energy turned into a white Qi which enveloped Lin Feng's body, just like a cocoon, it was dazzling.

If other people had been there, they would have noticed that the murderous aura surrounding Lin Feng had been replaced with deadly energy. Lin Feng had already been enveloped by that deadly energy. The threads of deadly energy were becoming more and more numerous and they were unceasingly penetrating into Lin Feng's body.

Besides, the trees of the peach orchard also looked like they were affected, a multitude of holes were appearing on the leaves of each and every single one of them. Even the petals of the peach trees in blossom looked like they were dying, as if their life was being sucked from them.

Everything seemed to be fading, there was only a deadly energy which emanated the aura of death.

In the middle of that deadly energy, Lin Feng first tried to resist but then it became too powerful. Lin Feng had already stopped resisting, he closed his eyes and his entire body was drowned into the murderous power contained within that energy.

Yan Yu Ping Sheng raised his head and smiled even more while looking at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng had entered into a trance like state. Lin Feng was learning much quicker than Yan Yu Ping Sheng had expected. No wonder that he had already reached his current cultivation despite being so young. He also had an incredible battle ability. Lin Feng had an extraordinary power of understanding which transcended the realm of understanding.

However, Yan Yu Ping Sheng didn't stop at all. In his life, he had met many geniuses. He had only chosen three students to teach his knowledge of cultivation and music but he couldn't help to favour Lin Feng the most.

He appreciated Lin Feng's temperament the most.

Lin Feng was grateful to those who helped him and was naturally kind hearted, but he would also slaughter anyone who tried to cause him harm.

All of Yan Yu Ping Sheng's students had high natural abilities but their way of thinking and the way they handled things were different.

Even though one of his other students had high natural abilities and was kind hearted, but also a ruthless killer, he still lacked determination, there was something missing.

Then, there was Duan Xin Ye, she was good, honest and kind hearted but she was a woman born into the Imperial Clan, she was too weak. She could play the zither very well but she wasn't taught how to cultivate.

Then, there was his third student, Lin Feng. He had noticed him from the first day they met at the academy, he immediately had a positive impression. In his heart, he immediately knew that he would take him as a student, otherwise, he wouldn't have made such great efforts to guide him. Besides, each time Lin Feng saw him, he shouted "teacher" which made him feel very gratified.

The murderous energy had enveloped the earth and the sky. Yan Yu Ping Sheng was still playing the zither, without stopping.

Lin Feng's eyes were tightly closed, deadly energy was still penetrating into his body. He was using his heart to listen and his soul to understand.

"The tune is named 'Cosmic Annihilation', as long as I play, the deadly energy will continue to increase, I am interested to see how long you can study it." Sighed Yan Yu Ping Sheng. He slowly closed his eyes and continued to play the zither.

That song, "Cosmic Annihilation", had no end, it could go on forever. The zither continued to release deadly energy which was gaining in strength and intensity.

Both of them had their eyes closed, they had long ago lost all

notion of time.

One of them was playing, the other was listening and in the surrounding atmosphere, there was only deadly energy.

Outside of the peach orchard, in the distance, some members of the Celestial Academy raised their heads and looked at the atmosphere above the peach orchard. They were extremely surprised.

“What a monstrous energy!” Thought many people while shivering. A powerful and deadly energy had surprising risen there in the sky, it was dashing to the skies. It looked like the deadly energy was filling the atmosphere as it emitted whistling sounds as it expanded across the sky. It was even destroying the air which blocked its path!

“What’s going on over there?” People who were sensing that energy were more and more numerous. They were astonished. That energy was terrifying, it was even attempting to destroy the atmosphere itself.

At that moment, a silhouette appeared, that person was moving through the sky. That person then threw a rock into the white light of the energy.

The crowd suddenly saw a rock fall into the energy, in a flash, it was disintegrated into powder and was destroyed. As before, only the deadly energy was left.

That windstorm of deadly energy had appeared above a manor of the Celestial Academy, it had transformed into a storm. It looked amazing. Everybody was astonished.

An incredible number of people started walking towards the peach orchard, they wanted to see what was going on.

However, at that moment, a silhouette appeared in the sky, and when they saw the storm of deadly energy, they frowned.

“It’s the Vice-Principal, the Vice-Principal is here!” Said the people when they saw that silhouette in the sky. They wanted to know what was going on.

Long Ding glanced at the crowd and said: “The principal is cultivating, he’s the one releasing that deadly energy. There is nothing strange, get back to what you were doing please.”

“The principal is cultivating... No wonder...” Many people nodded as if it was natural. After what had happened before, they all knew who the principal was: Yan Yu Ping Sheng. He had been able to make the strong cultivators of the Wan Shou Sect run away with only a single sentence. He was able to kill Xuan level beasts in an instant, while remaining sat on a cushion in the sky.

“The principal can release such a monstrous energy while cultivating, it’s astonishing. If I tried to go into it, I would probably be disintegrated into powder and die.” Thought many people, they were scared by that energy, they were even more scared of Yan Yu Ping Sheng.

In the middle of the peach orchard, the two figures still had their eyes closed, they had been there all day.

Yan Yu Ping Sheng looked deathly pale, he had consumed a great deal of his energy.

Playing the zither didn't require him to use his pure Qi but it required a great deal of mental strength. He had lost a great deal of his vitality. An ordinary person couldn't play the "Cosmic Annihilation" for more than a short moment, Yan Yu Ping Sheng was extremely strong but he had never played the Cosmic Annihilation for so long, he had no more strength remaining.

Nonetheless... He continued playing.

Since Lin Feng was still in his trance, how could Yan Yu Ping Sheng stop? Even though stopping wouldn't wake Lin Fen from his trance, it would cause Lin Feng's insights to be of much lower quality, the best thing was for him to continue playing, so that Lin Feng's understanding of deadly energy would grow even stronger!

Chapter 412: The Black Sword

The crowd surrounding the peach orchard had started moving back. The storm of deadly energy hadn't stopped, it was even becoming denser and covering a larger area. Nobody dared approach the region surrounding the peach orchard any longer.

In the distance, the crowd of the Celestial Academy were still watching patiently. They were fixedly staring at that deadly energy moving through the air. It was terrifying. Their principal, Yan Yu Ping Sheng seemed to be cultivating a powerful skill, but what kind of skill exactly? That terrifying deadly energy seemed like it wanted to annihilate everything.

How could the crowd know that inside the energy their principal's face had already turned deathly pale, he was as pale as a sheet of paper. Yan Yu Ping Sheng was extremely strong but at that moment, he looked like he was going to collapse from exhaustion.

Lin Feng had been sitting in meditation for two days already, and hadn't emerged from his trance a single time. His eyes were tightly closed and the deadly energy surrounding his body was becoming denser with each passing moment, it was terrifying.

"Lin Feng, if you don't emerge out of your meditation trance soon, I really fear that I will die of exhaustion..." Thought Yan Yu Ping Sheng with a painful smile on his face. Even though he was thinking that way, his fingers were still unceasingly dancing over the strings of his zither.

The sky was gradually becoming darker and darker but the storm of white deadly energy was still illuminating the atmosphere, it was strangely beautiful.

Even though their principal was still practicing without rest, many of the students had already grown tired of waiting and went back to their living quarters to rest.

In the middle of the peach orchard, the Qi around Yan Yu Ping Sheng's body was becoming restless and the smile of agony had grown so large that it transformed his face.

“Caaa!”

“Shing...!”

Two consecutive sounds emerged in the darkness. Black blood suddenly burst out of Yan Yu Ping Sheng's mouth. He had spared no effort but he had finally reached his limit. Blood was dripping from his fingers. On top of that, from the zither strings that had been dyed red, one of them broke.

He finally stopped playing the Cosmic Annihilation. However, the deadly energy that had gathered in the atmosphere was still as powerful as before, it was even scary for him to behold.

His heartbeat finally started to decrease. Yan Yu Ping Sheng looked at Lin Feng whose eyes were still closed and shook his head. That monster... He still hadn't woken up, when would he emerge

from his trance?

At that moment, Lin Feng had banished all distracting thoughts from his mind. He had forgotten about all ten thousand things of creation. In his mind, there was only a black sword floating in the nothingness.

That sword had appeared again but this time, while looking at it, Lin Feng had gained a deeper understanding of it. The sword was created solely from deadly energy.

Lin Feng had never really understood the warlord's sword but each time he tried, he would only gain a small insight into the sword.

At that moment, it seemed like that black sword was in harmony with the deadly energy in Lin Feng's heart. It was filled with endless murderous intent.

“Crrr... Crrr....”

Lin Feng opened his eyes. A sword started to form in front of his eyes, it was being filled with an endless quantity of deadly energy.

“BOOM!” Yan Yu Ping Sheng's body was violently blown back and the stone chair on which he was sitting exploded into dust.

He quickly retreated to a safe distance. In his eyes, a sharp light was twinkling. That deadly energy was monstrously strong. Lin

Feng's determination to kill created an incredible pressure which formed into deadly energy. In darkness of the night, such a thing was extremely scary.

Yan Yu Ping Sheng raised his head and saw Lin Feng's body rise into the air, it seemed like the deadly energy couldn't harm him at all.

What surprised Yan Yu Ping Sheng even more was that in front of Lin Feng, a sword was still condensing. Suddenly, a pure Qi sword appeared but it was... Black.

"A black sword!" Yan Yu Ping Sheng was fixedly staring at that sword. It was filled with monstrously strong deadly energy and murderous intent.

A strong wind started whistling in the air. Yan Yu Ping Sheng was astonished. He only saw that the deadly energy in the atmosphere started rushing into that black sword, that black sword was absorbing the deadly energy!

"What.... What's that?" Yan Yu Ping Sheng didn't understand. How was that possible? How could that black sword suddenly absorb all of that deadly energy to increase its own strength?

Lin Feng's eyes were pitch-black and looked ice-cold, but they were filled with murder.

That was the sword from his celestial book, just like the grim

fire. The sword that he formed before with his limited understanding had never reached such an incredible level.

The black sword slowly started moving and rose into the air above Lin Feng, it seemed like it even wanted to destroy the darkness covering the sky.

The people who hadn't left in the surrounding region were astonished. They could all feel that there was a terrifying sword filled with deadly energy that wanted to destroy everything, including them.

People raised their heads and saw that above the manor, a sword light was becoming more and more intense. It seemed like there was a sword but they couldn't quite see it.

It was too dark and the sword itself was black, which caused it to blend with the darkness.

The crowd could only see a blurry silhouette but that silhouette didn't look like Yan Yu Ping Sheng, it looked like a young man, it was Lin Feng!

“What!!! Why would Lin Feng be there? I must be seeing things.” Thought the people who could see clearly, while shaking their heads. They immediately refused to believe their eyes. Even though Lin Feng had high natural abilities and was incredibly powerful, he did not have the power to create such an incredible amount of deadly energy to form a sword. The level of that sword was just too scary.

The people in the crowd weren't the only ones who couldn't believe it. Yan Yu Ping Sheng also couldn't believe his eyes. That sword.... Already had a will of its own... Its will was...

Yan Yu Ping Sheng didn't dare to even think about it. It seemed Lin Feng had stepped into the next cultivation dimension. Yan Yu Ping Sheng had always wanted to break through to the next cultivation dimension. He knew that in order to reach the realm of an authentically powerful cultivator, he had to penetrate into that dimension, it was his ultimate goal on his path of cultivation.

"Lin Feng, come down." Shouted Yan Yu Ping Sheng coldly when he saw the deadly energy started to slow down and started to become restless.

Lin Feng's body shook and he came back to consciousness.

What was going on? What was happening? His entire body was surrounded by deadly energy as he floated in the sky, he didn't know how he got there. If Yan Yu Ping Sheng hadn't called him, it was very likely that Lin Feng would lose control of the sword and it would attack him.

His body shook, the black sword disappeared and the deadly energy immediately moved into his body. Immediately after, Lin Feng moved back to the ground.

"Teacher." Shouted Lin Feng when he saw that there was blood on Yan Yu Ping Sheng's mouth and he looked deathly pale. Lin

Feng was astonished.

“Teacher, what happened to you?” Asked Lin Feng surprised and anxious. It didn’t look Yan Yu Ping Sheng had been in a battle with anyone, of course, almost nobody in Xue Yue could harm him anyway.

Yan Yu Ping Sheng smiled wryly.

“Nothing happened.” Said Yan Yu Ping Sheng while slightly shaking his head.

“Teacher, who did this to you?” Asked Lin Feng who didn’t believe Yan Yu Ping Sheng. Yan Yu Ping Sheng was extremely strong, who could hurt him? He was also deathly pale, which made it look like he had been badly injured. Besides, Yan Yu Ping Sheng’s Qi was so weak, it was dangerous.

With Yan Yu Ping Sheng’s monstrous strength, who could have done such a thing to him?

Yan Yu Ping Sheng looked dumbfounded at Lin Feng and started to shake his head in silence.

Lin Feng was surprised and suddenly came to an understanding.

“Teacher, was it me?” Asked Lin Feng while timidly staring at Yan Yu Ping Sheng. They had been practicing together for a few days, apart from him, it couldn’t be anyone else.

Yan Yu Ping Sheng, when he saw that Lin Feng wouldn't feel at ease until knowing the truth, slightly nodded.

“Lin Feng, your power of understanding is monstrous. In just two days, I used all of my strength and couldn't continue playing the Cosmic Annihilation. If I had the power to continue, it's very possible that you would have gained even more enlightenment.” Said Yan Yu Ping Sheng while feeling guilty. Lin Feng's power of understanding was incredible, it was extremely rare, therefore, he wanted to play until the end so that Lin Feng could receive the most gains.

When Lin Feng heard Yan Yu Ping Sheng, he felt remorseful and uneasy but he also felt deeply grateful. He then took a deep breath.

Yan Yu Ping Sheng was injured because of him.

Lin Feng and Yan Yu Ping Sheng were neither kith nor kin but Yan Yu Ping Sheng had given everything that he had to help Lin Feng. He continued to play for Lin Feng until he was injured in the hope that it would benefit Lin Feng's cultivation.

Yan Yu Ping Sheng was extremely good to him and Lin Feng would always remember that.

“Thank you, teacher!” Said Lin Feng to Yan Yu Ping Sheng while slightly bowing, just like a devoted student in front of his teacher, it was also a way for Lin Feng to express his utmost gratitude.

Even though the world was cruel, there were still many kindhearted and virtuous people who lived in seclusion. Otherwise, it would have been a terrible world to live in. Lin Feng appreciated those good natured people.

Chapter 413: The Era

The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was built two years ago and hadn't yet managed to attract the masses of geniuses the way it had anticipated.

The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was built in the hopes to entice the entire country of Xue Yue, it was built for the purpose of becoming one of the most influential powers of influence in Xue Yue. Even though it had seized some of the most outstanding disciples from the larger sects, the number of them who were able to become famous in the Imperial City could be counted on one hand.

Besides, the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was continuously humiliated by Lin Feng, whom they hadn't been able to kill when they destroyed the Yun Hai Sect. That tiny little disciple of the Yun Hai Sect had greatly impacted their reputation, especially in the Imperial City. Astonishing news about Lin Feng's great accomplishments continued to spread through the city. At the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, nobody had been able to create such a buzz in the Imperial City.

Of course, the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue wasn't the only group who were overshadowed. No matter who you asked, if one person had to be chosen as the most astonishing person in the entire country, the only name you would hear would be Lin Feng.

He had set an entire city on fire to kill the army from Mo Yue and crush their invasion. He crossed into the enemy country to rescue the princess, he encircled the Imperial City and rescued Liu Cang

Lan from receiving the death penalty for false crimes. He also killed Duan Tian Lang's son, Duan Han, as Duan Tian Lang watched on. Then, he killed countless powerful members of the Wan Shou Sect in the Nine-Dragon Mountain Chain and at the Celestial Academy, each and every single one of his battles were breathtaking. There were also many things which the people didn't know about, for example, in Celestial River, he had defeated the Blademaster Leng Yue and killed Bing Yuan, he easily dealt with a number of strong opponents in Celestial river, but nobody knew about those things in the Imperial City.

In two years, Lin Feng had created a storm wherever he went, nobody could compare to him. In the Imperial City, everybody knew his name.

Lin Feng was only eighteen years old and was one of the most famous names in the entire country.

The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, like the Celestial Academy created its own cultivation towers, they even created them on a larger scale to be grander and more magnificent than those of the academy.

At that moment, at the foot of one of the cultivation towers, was Lin Qian. She was wearing a bright red dress and looked very thin. She raised her head and looked to the top floor of the cultivation tower, she looked extremely sad and desolate.

Two years had passed since she joined the academy. She could vaguely remember what happened two years ago when Chu Zhan Peng went to the Yun Hai Sect. Back then, she used to be high-

spirited and vigorous, she had an ice and fire spirit and Chu Zhan Peng had fallen for her, she used to think about how wonderful her future was going to be.

But at that moment, her dreams didn't become a reality. It seemed like her destiny and Lin Feng's destiny were both flipped upside down. Lin Feng had suddenly started rising to prominence and accomplishing many great things. He had been, step by step, walking down the path of a legendary cultivator. When he revealed himself at the annual meeting of the Lin Clan in Yangzhou City, he had already displayed his magnificence and at the same time, Lin Qian had lost her splendour.

Then, a year ago, Lin Feng obtained his own army and gained Yangzhou City as a fief. Lin Feng and his troops had magnificently stormed into Yangzhou City and swept away all obstacles that stood in his way. Lin Feng was high-spirited, vigorous and dynamic. He quickly became the head of the local government in Yangzhou City and had obtained the name of Chi Xie Marquis. However, Lin Qian was only able to watch her family be oppressed by him, they didn't even have the power to contest Lin Feng's oppression.

Lin Qian's only hope was lying on Chu Zhan Peng's shoulders, without him, she would never be able to compete with Lin Feng. The young man whom she used to look down upon in the past, now held her in no regard. Also, the news that Lin Feng had defeated twelve Xuan Qi layer cultivators of the Wan Shou Sect by himself, was spreading. On top of that, amongst those twelve cultivators, there had been three cultivators of the third Xuan Qi layer... Lin Feng had, once again, amazed the entire Imperial City.

After that, the Wan Shou Sect sent a group of their most powerful cultivators to take their revenge but they were forced to retreat from the academy, when that powerful group finally returned to the Wan Shou Sect, only the vice-patriarch was left alive. Surprisingly, from that moment on, the Wan Shou Sect no longer dared to oppose Lin Feng as if they had forgotten their hatred completely.

Lin Feng had killed twelve cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer, including three of the third Xuan Qi layer, that news had left Lin Qian dumbstruck because she knew that in the past, Chu Zhan Peng was only at the third Xuan Qi layer.

Lin Feng had been able to kill three cultivators at the third Xuan Qi layer, therefore, was Chu Zhan Peng even capable of killing Lin Feng?

Lin Qian was convinced that she would never get her revenge, she hated Lin Feng. Therefore she had come to the cultivation tower to wait and started to daydream.

At the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, many people were looking at Lin Qian. Some people were looking at her with admiring eyes while some other young girls were also looking at her with envy, because she was with Chu Zhan Peng. Some people also believed that if Lin Qian was waiting there, it was because she was waiting for him.

A surge of power shot into the sky, it was an extremely strong Qi that was streaking across the sky.

On the ground, some of the people who were walking suddenly stopped in their tracks. They raised their heads, looked at the sky and suddenly looked astonished.

They only saw a silhouette shooting across the sky like a meteor. There were two gigantic wings that could be seen, it was a legendary roc spirit, as it cried out, its cry echoed in the air into the horizon.

“It’s Chu Zhan Peng.” Some people were shivering. That silhouette that shot into the sky suddenly stopped and floated in the sky, it slowly flapped its wings. There was a confident smile on that strangely bestial face.

His cultivation had finally broken through to the next level. Chu Zhan Peng had broken through to the fourth Xuan Qi layer.

“Qian Qian!” Chu Zhan Peng looked at Lin Qian who was waiting at the foot of the tower. He flapped his wings and suddenly crossed a distance of a thousand meters in an instant, he grabbed Lin Qian and then once again shot into the sky.

“How fast! Chu Zhan Peng must have had a breakthrough.” The crowd was astonished. He had broken through to the fourth Xuan Qi layer. He really was a genius. During the competition of geniuses, he will definitely illuminate the country with his power and bring prestige to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.

As if Chu Zhan Peng had felt the people’s admiration, his smile

grew more proud. Last time, at the Celestial Academy, he didn't have the opportunity to kill Lin Feng but this time, no one could stop him.

“Qian Qian, I broke through to the fourth Xuan Qi layer, I can easily deal with Lin Feng now. Just wait for the good news.” Said Chu Zhan Peng while smiling indifferently. Lin Qian slightly nodded. Considering that Chu Zhan Peng had broken through to the fourth Xuan Qi layer, killing Lin Feng would certainly go smoothly. It was great news that he increased his cultivation.

This time, all the members of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue were gasping in amazement while looking at Chu Zhan Peng, his natural abilities and cultivation speed were astonishing. Nobody there cared about what had happened at the Celestial Academy. Chu Zhan Peng had broken through to the fourth Xuan Qi layer before everyone's eyes and created a monumental display, so the members of the Holy Courtyard worshiped him even more, whereas Lin Feng had accomplished a great number of remarkable things in secret and there were many people who had no idea of his true ability.

.....

At the same time, in a beautiful place of the Imperial City, by a waterfall, there was a young man holding a sword.

At that moment, the wind was blowing on that young man's body. He suddenly opened his eyes and his sword diffused an ice-cold light.

At the same time, he moved and shot into the air like an arrow. As he shot into the sky, he pierced the atmosphere with his sword.

The sword was extremely bright, it was so blinding that only its light could be seen in the sky as it thrust forward. After that, a subtle sound spread through the air as a small hole suddenly appeared in the waterfall.

The young man smiled, his silhouette flickered and he moved back down onto the ground. His clothes were fluttering indifferently in the wind.

“Crrr!” A cracking sound spread in the air. The water from the waterfall suddenly burst into a shower of rain.

The water then rushed towards that young man, however, at the moment when it was about to collide with him, an intangible Qi blocked it, the water couldn't penetrate that Qi.

“Your sword skills are becoming more and more terrific.” Sighed a feminine voice which made the young man feel extremely proud. He then turned around and looked at the beautiful woman.

“We will be gathering soon, this time, I, Ling Tian, will reveal myself to the world of cultivation for the first time, increasing my cultivation is necessary. I will become stronger until I dominate the heavens.”

The young man sounded insufferably arrogant and proud. He was determined to rule the heavens.

.....

At the same time, in the Hao Yue Sect and the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, people were riding ferocious beasts at great speed and heading for the Imperial City. Besides, the patriarch of the Hao Yue Sect himself was walking in front of a group. There were also people walking by his sides. Apart from a few elders of the sect, there were also the most outstanding core disciples of the sect with them.

It was clear to them that this time, the competition would be extraordinary and would also have extraordinary implications. No matter if it was for those in charge of the sect or its disciples, it was a great opportunity for everybody. It was an opportunity which they couldn't miss. In order to become one of the most outstanding geniuses of Xue Yue, they couldn't spare any effort when it came to their cultivation. Everybody knew that so many people had started practicing even harder.

Apart from the sects, in Xue Yue, many people belonging to other spheres of influence, as well as independent young people, were making their way towards the Imperial City.

The geniuses of Xue Yue had to strive for victory if they wanted to join the Great Competition of Xue Yu! It was the era of the geniuses!

Chapter 414: Xuan Qi Layer Pills

Note for chapter:

heavenly is said as “nine skies” and dragons have close ties to heaven in Chinese mythology. That is also why nine is the number of a king or emperor)

*

Lin Feng had no idea what was happening outside, all he knew was that he had to become stronger, that was the only way to earn true freedom in the world.

Only a few days had passed since those members of the Wan Shou Sect had left. Lin Feng had also heard that Teng Wu Shan and his group were attacked on the way back and that only Teng Wu Shan survived. Lin Feng didn't know who it was who attacked them but he was very curious.

All those people who were following Teng Wu Shan were killed! Besides, after that, the Wan Shou Sect hadn't made any other moves against Lin Feng, why was that?

All the events seemed to be related to each other but no matter how hard Lin Feng tried to think, it was impossible for him to guess the hidden connection, therefore it was useless for him to drive himself crazy trying to find out the truth.

Lin Feng was no longer living in the student palaces of the academy, instead, he was living in his own gigantic manor at the academy, given by the principal Yan Yu Ping Sheng. Nobody in the academy had any objections.

With Lin Feng's incredible natural abilities, nobody could rival him in the academy. In terms of strength, only a few teachers were able to compete with him.

With all the merits which Lin Feng had accomplished, having his own personal manor was justified.

In the gigantic manor, there was also a courtyard, a field to practice cultivation and a pavilion surrounded by beautiful rockery scenery, it was magnificent. There were also plenty of rooms to live in; a cultivation room, and some rooms for him to concoct pills and fabricate weapons. Everything was pristine and ready to use.

At that moment, Lin Feng was in the alchemy room.

Apart from Lin Feng, there was also Mister Chi and Mister Huo. The three of them stood around a cauldron. That cauldron was gigantic and majestic, but it looked very simple. It seemed like it hadn't been used for centuries and it was releasing a very ancient Qi.

That cauldron was the one that Lin Feng had obtained in Celestial River, it was the heavenly dragon cauldron.

Of course, Lin Feng knew that that cauldron was still missing parts, however he could still use it to concoct pills.

A fire was burning under the heavenly dragon cauldron and the heat had enveloped the entire cauldron.

Mister Chi and Mister Huo were not participating at all, they were only observing Lin Feng's actions.

Back in Yangzhou City, they had taught Lin Feng about alchemy and Lin Feng was an extremely quick learner. At that moment, except for a few minor adjustments, Lin Feng no longer needed their help with concocting pills.

Lin Feng had a method for concocting pills by relying on his extremely strong soul, he had reached a particularly high level in alchemy.

The heavenly dragon cauldron started diffusing a pleasant scent, the medicinal fragrance was rich and thick in the air. It seemed like the pills were nearing completion.

Mister Huo and Mister Chi glanced at each other, they were surprised. Lin Feng was able to concoct pills by himself in such a short period of time!

At that moment, Lin Feng was concocting Xuan level pills of lower quality. The pills he was concocting were extremely complicated and had the special attribute of allowing cultivators to

break through a bottleneck with greater ease. Ren Qing Kuang and the two other high-ranking soldiers had also used that pill to break through to the Xuan Qi layer. Many cultivators who were at the peak of the ninth Ling Qi layer would crave for this pill even in their wildest dreams. Its price was so high that it even exceeded that of some higher-level pills.

Lin Feng was concocting those pills for Duan Feng and Lan Jiao. They were both close to breaking through to the Xuan Qi layer, if they consumed that pill, Lin Feng was hoping that they would break through.

Then, Lin Feng would then have two more cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer on his side and at the very least they would be able to protect themselves.

His terrifying soul enveloped the heavenly dragon cauldron, small parts of his soul were penetrating into the interior of the cauldron. Lin Feng was able to clearly sense every single inch of the cauldron which enabled him to perfectly control the degree of heating.

“Nine Flames!” Shouted Lin Feng suddenly. The fire beneath the cauldron dispersed. Nine small fire lotuses appeared and shot towards very specific parts of the cauldron.

Those nine lotus flowers engulfed the cauldron, there was a sudden increase in pressure inside the cauldron and at the same time, the mixture in the cauldron also started to move in nine different directions before consolidating into a pill.

These pills were Xuan level pills, their energy had reached a climax, besides, the number nine was symbolic because it was the imperial number, the number of the king.

Therefore, in the continent, many treasures and skills put significance in the number “nine”, for example the heavenly dragon cauldron, the latter could thus be called the cauldron of the dragon king.

While concocting pills, one of the most important factors was to control the degree and duration of the heat of each specific ingredient to allow them to correctly merge.

“How amazing!” Sighed Mister Huo and Mister Chi with amazement. Lin Feng could control the fire with his soul, even if they wanted to do the same, it wasn’t that easy. Controlling the fire with one’s soul required an extremely powerful soul and required a great deal of effort.

However, Lin Feng looked calm, he did not look like he was doing something difficult and his expression was normal. Lin Feng was controlling the nine flames and had formed each flame into a delicate lotus flower. This was extremely difficult to do this with even a single flame.

“I have no idea how he’s doing that...” The two old men were shaking their heads. Lin Feng was a monster. Not only did he have amazing and breathtaking natural abilities, but he could also concoct pills using such a magnificent method... And he was only

eighteen years old!

Mister Huo and Mister Chi didn't dare imagine how strong Lin Feng would be when he reached their age.

Of course, they were convinced that Lin Feng would be leaving Xue Yue sooner or later. Lin Feng couldn't be limited to Xue Yue. Xue Yue was only the start of his journey and not the final destination.

Mister Huo and Mister Chi started to calm down. They knew that concocting high-level pills wouldn't be a problem for Lin Feng in the future. Concocting Xuan level pills of lower quality already wasn't a problem for him, besides, the success rates were very high.

Lin Feng had an extremely strong soul and a powerful flame which were essential factors for an alchemist. Lin Feng also had great teachers who were considered as top level alchemists in Xue Yue.

Lin Feng also possessed the heavenly dragon cauldron.

This helped him to easily concoct the Xuan level pills. A strong and pleasant fragrance invaded the atmosphere and three pills floated from the heavenly dragon cauldron. On the surface there was a shiny coat and one could see at first glance that the quality of those pills was extremely high.

Lin Feng raised his head as he released his pure Qi and in a flash, those three pills shot towards him and landed on the palm of his hand.

When Mister Huo and Mister Chi saw those pills, they started to walk towards Lin Feng and study the blue and green pills. They then started to shake their heads in disbelief.

“That little monster can really concoct pills.” Mister Chi said. Concocting pills were extremely hard, they usually didn’t do more than one pill at a time whereas Lin Feng had immediately concocted three pills at once. There was a great risk as if there was even a small problem with one pill, then all the ingredients were lost.

These old men were usually very careful when concocting pills, they would concoct one pill with extreme care as to not make a mistake, but Lin Feng was able to concoct three at once...

“Old fellow, Lin Feng is already much better than us.” Said Mister Huo in a very low voice. Mister Chi nodded. Lin Feng’s pills were clearly better quality than theirs.

“It’s only because I used the heavenly dragon cauldron.” Said Lin Feng who felt embarrassed.

“Even if you used the heavenly dragon cauldron, you concocted those pills by relying on your own ability, there is no doubt about that. Mister Huo and I can see that clearly.” Replied Mister Chi. Lin Feng didn’t try to explain anything and said: “Mister Huo,

Mister Chi, let's leave.”

When Lin Feng finished talking, he put the cauldron in his Na stone. Immediately after, the three of them left the alchemy room. The Winged Tiger suddenly rushed up to Lin Feng and roared in a pleading manner. Its gigantic eyes were fixed on Lin Feng. It looked like it was begging for something.

“You want to eat these pills?” Asked Lin Feng while looking at the Winged Tiger strangely.

“Roar.....” Replied the Winged Tiger while nodding its head which left Lin Feng speechless.

“Raise your head.” Said Lin Feng. The Winged Tiger raised its head and looked at Lin Feng, the beast looked perplexed.

Lin Feng smiled and took out a pill, he then stretched his arm and threw the pill above the Winged Tiger's head. The Winged Tiger was surprised, it immediately opened its mouth and caught the pill.

The two old men by his side were speechless. What a waste of a pill! Lin Feng had just wasted such a great treasure!!!

Chapter 415: Duan Feng's Breakthrough

Lin Feng didn't care about that Xuan level pill, if the Winged Tiger wanted to have one, why not give one to him?

That Xuan Qi layer pill could only make a cultivator break through to the first Xuan Qi layer, nothing more and the Winged Tiger could easily kill multiple cultivators of the first Xuan Qi layer. It could even kill cultivators of the second Xuan Qi layer. Who was more valuable to Lin Feng? A cultivator of the first Xuan Qi layer or his Winged Tiger companion? For Lin Feng, the answer was obvious.

Since Lin Feng had adopted the Winged Tiger, it was considered as one of his friends.

After the Winged Tiger swallowed the Xuan level pill, its eyes started twinkling in a resplendent way, it roared with pleasure. Immediately after, it started walking away with long strides looking extremely satisfied. It also looked amused somehow.

When Lin Feng saw how happy the Winged Tiger looked, he slightly shook his head and immediately left, he had to find Lan Jiao and Duan Feng.

.....

When Duan Feng saw that pill, he was stupefied, he looked at Lin Feng and shouted: "Lin Feng, big brother!"

He had never even seen such a pill, it was too precious!

“Duan Feng, when you have the feeling that you can break through to the Xuan Qi layer, just take that pill, it will help you through the bottleneck. Of course, if you don’t feel like using it and prefer relying on your own ability, just keep that pill for the future, that is alright as well.”

Lin Feng slightly smiled while he spoke. If it had been someone else, Lin Feng wouldn’t have added those last sentences but Duan Feng had the blood spirit of the Imperial Clan, he also had extremely high natural abilities. He had a pure heart and devoted his life to cultivation and it showed, in just two years, he had broken from the Qi layer through to the peak of the Ling Qi layer, he was only one step away from reaching the Xuan Qi layer.

“Duan Feng is not weaker than the so-called high-officials, it’s just that nobody realizes his talent, that’s all.” Thought Lin Feng. Duan Feng did not have any arrogance, he was discreet and a very introverted character. Besides, he had never thought of himself as someone with a high level of talent. He only focused on improving his cultivation and ignored everything else. For those reasons, Duan Feng wasn’t very well known in the Celestial Academy, of course, because of his personality, he could practice cultivation in peace without any distractions, he could focus his entire attention on his cultivation.

Perhaps Duan Feng, relying solely on his natural abilities and tenacity, would greatly surprise everybody one day.

“I will use it. I have the feeling that I can break through to the Xuan Qi layer anytime now.” Said Duan Feng after looking pensive for a short moment which astonished Lin Feng.

“Duan Feng, are you sure?” Lin Feng couldn’t help but ask. When it came to profound pills, after having using a pill. The same pill would have a much lower effect in the future, except for a few healing pills and other pills with special attributes.

Not only did he not need to use it, but it might also affect Duan Feng’s confidence.

“Lin Feng, brother, there will be no problem.” Replied Duan Feng while nodding.

Lin Feng didn’t say anything at first, and then added: “Alright, well, when you start attempting to break through to the Xuan Qi layer, I will protect you.”

“Alright, sorry for bothering you, brother.” Replied Duan Feng who immediately sat down cross-legged which rendered Lin Feng speechless.

His movements seemed so natural and he clearly didn’t think twice, it seemed like he trusted Lin Feng with his life.

Duan Feng’s cultivation was increasing very quickly. He laid some purity stones next to him and then swallowed the pill. He quickly started absorbing the Qi of heaven and earth as he started

his cultivation.

Lin Feng on his side, calmly watched him practicing cultivation. Around Duan Feng's body was a sharp and dazzling golden light, he truly looked like he was a king among men.

“What kind of skill is he cultivating...?” Lin Feng realized that he hadn't paid enough attention to Duan Feng in the past. In order to break through to the first Xuan Qi layer, a cultivator needed to cultivate a cultivation skill like his Cosmos-Burning Sun, but Duan Feng had never mentioned anything, but he seemed to be very confident in breaking through to the Xuan Qi layer.

“It looks like a very complex technique.” Thought Lin Feng. His cultivation method contained a brutal and yet elegant Qi. That skill was extraordinary. The fact that Duan Feng's cultivation had increased so quickly definitely had something to do with the skills he practiced.

Around Duan Feng's body, a storm was becoming visible, it was terrifying. Lin Feng was shocked and also started to sense the Qi in the atmosphere.

“It's a Di level skill... Duan Feng surprisingly has such terrifying skills.” Lin Feng was astonished and perplexed.

The speed at which a person absorbed Qi was a good indicator of how strong that person was... And Duan Feng was absorbing the Qi around him at an incredible speed. Duan Feng's skill was incredible. It was at least a Di level skill of lower quality.

Lin Feng's Cosmos-Burning Sun skill was also a Di level skill of lower quality, how could Lin Feng not be astonished?

But Lin Feng as sure that Duan Feng wasn't planning to hide anything from him, otherwise he wouldn't have used that skill in front of him at that moment. Besides, Duan Feng wasn't the scheming and calculating type of person.

But... Where did his skill come from?

"All I can do is wait until he's done and then I will ask him." Thought Lin Feng. He then continued watching Duan Feng absorb incredible quantities of Qi from his surroundings.

Very quickly, Duan Feng was surrounded by a terrifying storm of Qi which was forming into a crystal around him. Duan Feng was in the middle of that crystal and Lin Feng couldn't even see Duan Feng's facial traits clearly anymore.

"He condensed the Qi into a solid state and he's going to absorb and purify it into pure Qi using a liquefaction process." Lin Feng narrowed his eyes, he had really underestimated both Duan Feng's skill and talent.

In such a short time, he would be able to break through to the Xuan Qi layer.

A terrifying Qi started flowing through the air at the same pace as

Duan Feng's heartbeat and it then dispersed.

After a short moment of calm, multiple silhouettes started to appear, Mister Huo, Mister Chi, Lan Jiao, Jing Yun and Yi Xue, they were all fixedly staring at Duan Feng inside his cocoon.

Jing Yun's mouth was wide-open. Astonishment had invaded her beautiful eyes. Duan Feng was going to break through to the Xuan Qi layer already?! He was going to break through to the Xuan Qi layer!?

That was incredible! Since when was it so easy to break through to the Xuan Qi layer!

"It seems like that pill was wasted." Thought Lin Feng. Even without a pill, Duan Feng would be able to break through to the Xuan Qi layer. It would have only have been a matter of time.

Of course, saying that it was a waste was also exaggerated, at least at that moment Lin Feng knew how extraordinary Duan Feng was.

Immediately after, the Qi formed a liquid and started to penetrate into Duan Feng's body and pure Qi started to appear around him which pierced through his cocoon of Qi, it was extremely sharp.

He was going to break through, it was about to happen!

"BOOM!"

A terrifying Qi emerged from Duan Feng's body. Behind Duan Feng was a black door, that black door was part of his spirit, the sealed doors spirit.

A creaking sound emerged through the atmosphere, sealed doors continued appearing and after the fifth one appeared, it stopped.

Duan Feng surprisingly had five sealed doors, how terrifying!

At the same time, a sharp pure Qi burst towards the skies. Immediately after, Duan Feng opened his eyes. The Qi around his body had been completely transformed into pure Qi. Pure Qi was now glowing around his entire body.

After the sharp light disappeared, Duan Feng saw that there was a group of people who were all looking at him, he was stupefied. He then immediately looked at Lin Feng and smiled: "Lin Feng, big brother, I have successfully broke through to the Xuan Qi layer."

Duan Feng's voice sounded innocent and immature, he wanted to share his joy with Lin Feng.

Lin Feng slightly nodded, his silhouette flickered and landed in front of Duan Feng. "Alright, Duan Feng, you have terrifying natural abilities."

"What are you talking about?" When Duan Feng heard Lin Feng's compliment, he lowered his head looking shy.

“Duan Feng, what is the skill that you cultivate? Where does it come from?” Asked Lin Feng without wasting time. It’s not that Lin Feng was trying to interrogate him but he was very curious of the origins of the skill. Since Duan Feng left the village, Lin Feng was and the others were almost always with him, they were always in a group. Where could he have obtained such a monstrous skill without them knowing? If Duan Feng wanted to keep it a secret, he wouldn’t have used it in front of everyone, therefore Lin Feng didn’t hesitate and straightforwardly asked him.

Chapter 416: Seven Days Later

When Duan Feng heard Lin Feng, he was shocked and immediately replied: “If I tell you that it appeared in my memories, would you believe me?”

Duan Feng was looking at Lin Feng hoping that he would believe him. That skill was seemingly in his memories, he had always had it inside him.

Lin Feng stared at Duan Feng and said, while nodding: “I do believe you.”

Lin Feng really did believe Duan Feng. Even though it was a very strange explanation, there were many strange things in the world already. Something like that happening in Duan Feng’s memories didn’t seem that strange to Lin Feng. Besides, Duan Feng had the blood of the Imperial Clan flowing in his veins, he had inherited their blood spirit and it was possible some of their memories. Maybe it was something normal for blood spirits.

“Lin Feng, brother, thank you.” Said Duan Feng when he saw that Lin Feng wholeheartedly believed him. His smile was warm and friendly.

“Why are you thanking me? Even if you came across some amazing skills but didn’t tell me about it, I wouldn’t be mad at you, I was just surprised, that’s all.” Replied Lin Feng while shaking his head.

“Alright.” Nodded Duan Feng. Immediately after, he looked at Jing Yun and said: “Jing Yun, sister, now that I have broken through to the Xuan Qi layer, I can protect you.”

“Silly boy!” Said Jing Yun. Duan Feng and Jing Yun’s relationship was very close, they treated each other like blood related siblings.

Duan Feng scratched his head, he looked incredibly simple and honest.

Lin Feng turned around and looked at Lan Jiao: “Lan Jiao, Duan Feng just broke through to the Xuan Qi layer, what about you? When will you start to break through?”

“Why do you care?” Said Lan Jiao which made Lin Feng lose face, he was speechless.

“I don’t care, it’s just having weaklings on my side is burdensome, of course, if you are willing to leave, I would be more than happy to send you on your way.”

Lin Feng had said that on purpose and it left Lan Jiao astonished, she looked at him with a cruel glare and said: “You want me to leave so that I stop being a burden?!”

“Even if you want me to leave, I refuse, I will always be a burden and stay with you.”

“Whether you want to leave or not is your decision, but you are too weak, next time you need help, don’t expect anyone to come help you. I have a pill here which can help you break through to the Xuan Qi layer when the right time comes. Take it and use it when you think it’s the right time.” Said Lin Feng. Lan Jiao wanted to refuse, but Lin Feng had already thrown a pill at her, which stupefied her.

Lin Feng had just thrown a Xuan level pill towards her the same way he would have disposed of trash. She obviously knew how precious the pill was.

She quickly stretched out her hand and caught the pill. She wanted to say something but Lin Feng had already turned around and left, not giving her the chance to say anything which stupefied Lan Jiao. That guy.....

While looking at Lin Feng’s back, her eyes were filled with anger but she was also slightly touched. He had offered her a Xuan level pill while acting like a wealthy and spoilt noble, it was if he didn’t care about such treasures, how detestable!

After Lin Feng made his exit, he went to a room which was very orderly and tidy. Meng Qing was sitting cross-legged on the bed inside the room, her eyes were closed, she seemed like she was cultivating. There was a faintly discernible coldness around her body.

When she heard Lin Feng enter, she opened her eyes and gave him a smile. Her smile could make anyone melt.

When Lin Feng saw Meng Qing's smile, he suddenly felt extremely relaxed, he didn't feel any pressure at all. Then he looked at Meng Qing with a warm and tender look.

He walked towards her and immediately jumped onto the bed. He felt tired at that moment so he just started lying next to Meng Qing, as if it was his own bed. He was acting wildly.

Meng Qing's eyes lit up, she smiled and shook her head. That guy was starting to take more and more liberties. He used to shake with fear from head to toe when entering her room but at that moment, without warning, he jumped onto her bed and lied down in a relaxed manner.

Meng Qing didn't say anything either and allowed him to act wildly. In fact, considering her feelings for Lin Feng, she was able to tolerate his actions, she wanted to stay with him forever.

Lin Feng also knew that which was why he wildly jumped onto her bed. After that, he suddenly grabbed her and pulled her down next to him.

Both of them were lying very close to each other, their lips were only a few inches apart.

Meng Qing suddenly looked shy and lowered her head. She didn't dare look Lin Feng in the eyes.

When Lin Feng saw that Meng Qing was acting shy, a magnificent smile appeared on his face and he softly wrapped his arms around Meng Qing. He exerted a little bit of force as he pulled her into his chest for an embrace.

“Meng Qing, if we could lie down and embrace each other forever, I would definitely agree.” Said Lin Feng in a tender way which made Meng Qing’s heart feel warm.

Indeed, if they could stay like that forever, how perfect would that be?

Both of them wished that it could last forever so none of them dared break that wonderful moment. They just silently embraced each other. Lin Feng closed his eyes and slowly fell asleep.

Lin Feng fell into a deep sleep. He was sleeping so peacefully and happily, he was extremely relaxed.

Even though he slept regularly, he usually wasn’t as relaxed and couldn’t sleep as deeply as he did now. He hadn’t been able to fall so deeply asleep in a long time. He was always thinking about his problems and the dangers around him so he never managed to sleep well but with Meng Qing in his arms, his heart finally felt peaceful.

.....

Two days later, while Lin Feng was cultivating when he received

an invitation letter. It was a very simple letter with huge letters.

“In seven days, on the night of the full moon, the national competition will begin at the Xiangjiang lake, Your Excellency Lin Feng is invited!” That was the content of the letter, there was no name or no indication of where it came from but Lin Feng perfectly understood what it meant, besides, he had already heard a great deal about the national competition of Xue Yue.

A short time before, Chu Zhan Peng had come to fight against him and they had agreed to fight at the competition of Xue Yue.

All the geniuses of Xue Yue would enter the competition for a chance to show their amazing prowess.

At the same time, it was also the best way to select the top young cultivators for the Great Competition of Xue Yu. The people from the Empire would come to observe and monitor to select who would participate at the great competition, the stage in which the most outstanding geniuses from the thirteen countries would fight.

Lin Feng raised his head and looked at the sky, sharp lights were twinkling in his eyes. He had wanted to see that competition with his own eyes for a while, he wanted to see how outstanding the geniuses of Xue Yue really were.

“So, in seven days I’ll need to be at Xiangjiang lake!”

Chapter 417: Duan Feng's Secret

The crescent moon was floating in the black sky and there was no stars in sight, the night felt lonely and cold.

“In seven days there will be a full moon!” Lin Feng whispered to himself. Lin Feng had heard about the national competition of Xue Yue before but he didn't know any concrete details about it. It seemed like it was organized by the Imperial Family and the Duan Clan, it seemed like they were the ones inviting people, more precisely it was the king of Xue Yue, who was also the head of the Duan Clan.

But that detail was useless, Lin Feng only knew that there were going to be battles and he was going to have to fight too!

Chu Zhan Peng was the sixth ranked high-official of Xue Yue. In the past, he used to be the best disciple of the Hao Yue Sect. The first time Lin Feng saw him, Chu Zhan Peng was extremely arrogant, he had come to the Yun Hai Sect and wanted them to deliver Lin Feng to him, back then, Elder Mo Xie even accepted his demands, if Protector Kong hadn't appeared in the form of a shadow, Lin Feng would already be dead.

It was clear to Lin Feng that Chu Zhan Peng was still as arrogant as before and considered Lin Feng to be an insect, a nobody.

Chu Zhan Peng frequently humiliated Lin Feng after they met at the Yun Hai Sect. A short time before, he had even gone to the Celestial Academy and displayed his strength, he came looking for

Lin Feng again. Lin Feng clearly remembered all the past grudges.

Lin Feng needed to forget about that hatred and animosity. What he needed to do was prove to Chu Zhan Peng that he was not able to bully him the way he did.

When Lin Feng thought about Chu Zhan Peng, he also remembered the time when he was only at the Qi layer, he was a weak young boy. After having broken through to the Ling Qi layer, he felt so high-spirited and vigorous, he didn't want to see the Yun Hai Sect get annihilated. The Yun Hai Sect had sacrificed themselves to protect Lin Feng and save his life.

Protector Kong and Nan Gong Ling were killed as Protector Bei helped him escape. Lin Feng would never forget the bloodbath of the Yun Hai Sect, it was tragic. Lin Feng could never forget that the ring he had on his finger was the ring worn only by the Patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect. Everybody trusted Lin Feng and they put all of their hopes of the future in him.

“Just wait until I'm strong enough, the Yun Hai Sect will reappear in Xue Yue.” Thought Lin Feng while looking at the bright moon above. Rivers of blood had been spilt, it couldn't be in vain. Lin Feng would rebuild the Yun Hai Sect and he would avenge the bloodbath of those who came before him!

Lin Feng would honour the dead of the Yun Hai Sect.

The sound of somebody's steps interrupted Lin Feng in his thoughts. Those steps were becoming louder and louder as Lin

Feng saw a young man appear who was walking slowly.

“Lin Feng, big brother.” Shouted that young man with a faint smile. He looked at Lin Feng with his eyes full of respect.

“Duan Feng, why are you not resting?” Said Lin Feng while smiling. Lin Feng envied Duan Feng sometimes. His heart was so pure, there wasn’t an iota of hatred to corrupt his heart. He was still so pure and innocent. He didn’t have any obligations and worries, all he needed to do was focus on his cultivation. On the other hand, Lin Feng had a great deal of things to worry about, for example, he was carrying the fate of the entire Yun Hai Sect on his shoulders, he also needed to find his father who seemed to have gone missing.

“I can’t sleep.” Replied Duan Feng while walking towards him. There was a letter in his hand, he handed it over to Lin Feng.

“What’s this?” Asked Lin Feng while glancing at Duan Feng. He then grabbed the letter and read it. There was just a simple text on it.

“In seven days, on the night of the full moon, the national competition will happen at Xiangjiang lake, Your Excellency Duan Feng is invited.” Lin Feng had received the same letter, it had been sent by the same person.

“Duan Feng, you also received an invitation, congratulations.” Said Lin Feng while slightly smiling. Only the most talented young cultivators of Xue Yue received it and Duan Feng was proof of that.

“But Lin Feng, big brother, only you and a few others know that I have broken through to the Xuan Qi layer, I haven’t told any outsider, how did they know?” Duan Feng sounded anxious and continued: “I don’t think that they would bother inviting a cultivator of the Ling Qi layer, young and powerful cultivators who have reached the Xuan Qi layer is what they are looking for.”

“You haven’t told anyone?” Lin Feng was surprised. Indeed, Xue Yue was a vast country, the Imperial City itself had a myriad of extremely young yet strong cultivators. Inviting members of the Ling Qi layer would be meaningless for them. What Duan Feng said was true, they were only interested in cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer, as a minimum requirement.

But Duan Feng was saying that he had told nobody else about it, how could they know that he had broken through to the Xuan Qi layer?

“The water of Xue Yue is deeper than what I had imagined.” Lin Feng thought with a smile while shaking his head. If he couldn’t find the answer, it wasn’t necessary to drive himself nuts over it, he then said to Duan Feng: “Duan Feng, since you received that letter, just relax, don’t drive yourself crazy. It might also be due to your incredible natural abilities. In seven days, we will go to Xiangjiang lake together.”

“Alright.” Nodded Duan Feng but then he slightly frowned and said, while looking at Lin Feng: “Lin Feng, there is something else I would like to tell you.”

“What is it?” Asked Lin Feng. He was a bit surprised when he saw that Duan Feng frowning. Duan Feng had been always pure and innocent, and was always smiling. Lin Feng was wondering what was going on, it seemed like he had something heavy in his heart.

“Lin Feng, you remember when you asked me that question last time, where I had gotten that incredible skill?” Asked Duan Feng which surprised Lin Feng. Duan Feng was talking about this again, was he hiding something?

“Didn’t you say that you found it in your memories?” Asked Lin Feng.

“Indeed, I found that skill in my memories.” Said Duan Feng while slightly nodding but then continued: “But while my cultivation increases, new memories appear in my brain as well. Each time I progress, new memories appear but they don’t belong to me! I never had memories of them before, but there are some amazingly powerful skills and techniques that appear, it’s extremely strange.”

“Huh?” When Lin Feng heard Duan Feng, he was stupefied. New memories were appearing in his brain as his cultivation increased, it was indeed very strange!

“Could it be that somebody sealed your memories and as your cultivation increases, the seals open themselves?” Guessed Lin Feng but he wasn’t sure. If someone could seal memories inside somebody’s brain and make the seal open by itself as the person’s cultivation increased, how terrifying would that person be? There was probably nobody in Xue Yue who could achieve such a thing.

“Duan Feng, your father and mother....” Suddenly said Lin Feng.

But Duan Fen immediately shook his head and said: “Lin Feng, brother, I have never met my parents, I only know that I have the blood spirit of the Imperial Clan. I only know that they have been transported to a distant place to be punished. I’ve always been in that small village where I lived an aristocratic life, but I don’t even know who my father is.”

Lin Feng frowned. Duan Feng had never seen his own parents, those memories were extremely strange.

But if nobody had sealed those memories in his brain, what other explanation could there be? Could it be a sort of sixth sense? If it was, his natural abilities were even more terrifying.

“Lin Feng, there is something else, not only does my cultivation increase extremely quickly but I also learn skills and techniques very quickly, as if I already know them. I only read them once and then I am already able to use them. I have tried to practice skills which were not part of my memories and it was extremely difficult, even if they were only low-level ones!” Continued Duan Feng. Lin Feng was growing more and more surprised and had also started to frown. How strange! Why!? Lin Feng had no idea.

He looked pensive for a while but then he smiled and said: “Duan Feng, being able to practice cultivation quickly is a great thing, maybe you really have a sixth sense or a strange ability that you know nothing about. Since. We you don’t understand it, don’t

drive yourself crazy because of it. I will ask Senior Yan Yu for you next time.”

Duan Feng nodded. He wanted to understand it but couldn't and it was driving him insane. He couldn't practice calmly as it was always on his mind. No matter what, being able to cultivate quickly and easily was always a great thing.

“Lin Feng, brother, I will go back now. You should rest too.” Said Duan Feng. Lin Feng slightly nodded and Duan Feng left.

But Lin Feng stayed at the same place, calmly looking at the crescent moon. He stayed there all night.

During the following day, the news that the Imperial City had been sending invitation letters spread quickly, and then the news was spread through the entire country.

Those who received an invitation became the focus of everybody's attention!

Chapter 418: Everybody Wants to Kill Him!

That letter was the proof that a cultivator was both extremely strong and talented. Those who had received it were the most outstanding amongst the young cultivators.

Besides, those who hadn't received a letter were gathering on the bank of the lake. They wanted to personally observe the most outstanding disciples of Xue Yue.

Being able to see the extremely strong cultivators displaying their strength was a rare sight, so it was a good opportunity for the masses.

There weren't only members of the Imperial City who had gathered, there were people from all parts of Xue Yue. Everybody was interested in the national competition.

Everybody wanted to see how strong the geniuses of Xue Yue really were and how high their natural abilities were, they would also be able to see the difference between them.

Finally, on the fifth day, the Imperial Government of Xue Yue gave the order to start a blockade, people could leave the Imperial City but were no longer allowed entry.

There were too many people who had gathered in the Imperial City, people were pushing and squeezing past each other on the incredibly large roads which would normally allow a thousand people to walk shoulder to shoulder with space between.

The order to start a blockade made the people who were waiting to enter, grow furious. They regretted travelling across such a distance only to be too late. At that moment, they couldn't enter the Imperial City, it wouldn't be possible to see the national competition.

The atmosphere in the Imperial City was extremely agitated, bustling and lively, everybody was extremely impatient, until finally, the seventh day arrived.

The Xiangjiang lake was situated in the northern district of the Imperial City, the lake was only a few hundred yards wide, but it was a few dozen miles in length. From one side of the lake, it was impossible to see the other side.

The Xiangjiang lake was extremely long. Early in the morning, both sides of the lake were covered with people from above, those crowds of people moving looked like dragons, they covered an area of a few dozen miles, the sight was incredible.

If those people all stomped onto the ground at the same time, it would flip the entire lake upside down.

The atmosphere was extremely noisy around the lake, No matter if they knew each other or not, the people were all talking to each other, they were all discussing the strong cultivators who might have received invitation letters. They were all trying to guess how many cultivators there would be and where they were from.

Of course, when many people gathered together, there was also tension and conflicts. Some of the people wanted to be on the very bank of the lake but others wouldn't let them go ahead of them. Clouds of dust could be seen in many places due to the fact that many people were fighting each other to get a better view. It didn't look too important though, from above those battles just looked like a small ripple in the sea of people and after a period of time, all the battles had come to a conclusion.

Time was passing very slowly for the audience and everybody was excited for the arrival of the night.

Time seemed to be passing much slower, it seemed like they had waited for a hundred days for it to become night. The more impatient they were, the slower the time passed.

As the time passed and the scarlet red sun started shining down on the lake. While the sun was setting in one part of the sky, the full moon was appearing in another, people's heartbeats were beating faster and faster.

Soon, the national competition would begin. They had been waiting for that for such a long time.

In the distance, a group of people appeared, they were standing on a gigantic beast and they were flying at full speed.

The one who seemed to be their leader looked majestic, he had a very commanding presence.

Those people immediately moved onto the bank of the lake. That place was reserved for them, there were already some soldiers blocking people from entering that area.

“Hao Yue Sect.” The crowd was stupefied. The people who had just landed were holding a flag which was fluttering in the wind. On that flag, there were words written in a flamboyant style calligraphy, “HAO YUE SECT” was written in huge characters.

The Imperial City had invited some outstanding young cultivators, but they had also invited the biggest sects and clans of the country. They would obviously invite the Hao Yue Sect.

The majestic-looking leader was the patriarch of the Hao Yue Sect: Chu Qing.

“I heard that two disciples of the Hao Yue Sect have been invited, one of them is Chu Zhan Peng, there’s no need for me to remind you how strong he is, and the other is a core disciple of the Hao Yue Sect: Jiang Shan. He seemingly broke through to the Xuan Qi layer and was invited as well.” Discussions broke out when they saw the Hao Yue Sect.

“What about the Blademaster, Leng Yue? I’ve heard that the Hao Yue Sect has a genius called Leng Yue, his nickname is the Blademaster, even though he is only the second ranked core disciple, his natural abilities are even higher than those of Jiang Shan. He is definitely going to be a high-official in the future, where is he? Is he coming or not?”

“I’ve also heard about him, it is said that he is abnormally fast and if he takes out his blade, someone will die. Nobody can dodge his attacks, but it’s been a while since I have heard anything about him, besides, some people even say that he’s gone missing.”

Two people were talking about the Blademaster, they couldn’t know that they would never see the Blademaster because he was already killed by Lin Feng.

Very few people knew about that encounter, the news hadn’t even reached the public in Imperial City, therefore, the fact that the people in the crowd didn’t know about it, was very normal.

“Is that snow? The members of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village are here!”

At that moment, some people noticed that snow was forming on the horizon, as if the moon itself was going to be frozen. A layer of ice appeared on the ground beneath them and a thick snow fell from the sky.

At the same time, there were people who could be seen travelling across the ice and snow, they were obviously the members of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village.

However, what astonished many people within the crowd was that the group of people was very small. There were only a few people in their group. Once again, very few people in the country knew about the battle in Celestial River, where a large force of cultivators from the Ice and Snow Mountain Village were killed,

they had charged there to kill Lin Feng and never returned.

“The members of the Luo Xia Sect have arrived.” Sighed some other people surprised. The setting sun was shining upon another group of people on the horizon. The group of people looked extremely desolate and unapproachable as they moved with the setting sun shining down on them. They also had a location reserved for them.

“The Luo Xia Sect comes from such a remote location in the country, they also never mix with other people, I wouldn’t have thought that they would come to the competition. The patriarch of their sect, Gu Chun Qiu, has personally come as well.” said some of the seniors in the crowd when they saw Gu Chun Qiu the patriarch of the Luo Xie Sect. The crowd was astonished because Gu Chun Qiu was the strangest and most reclusive of all the patriarchs.

He looked glum, as if he was surrounded by hardships and problems.

The Luo Xia Sect and the Ice and Snow Mountain Village were the same. They had gone to Celestial River to acquire the heavenly dragon cauldron, Wu Gang offended Lin Feng because he wanted to use him as a scapegoat for his own cowardice and because of that, the cultivators and elders of the Luo Xia Sect were all slaughtered, how could Gu Chun Qiu not look glum?

He remembered Lin Feng, but in Celestial River, there had been a monstrously evil cultivator who killed everyone who went for the heavenly dragon cauldron and left no survivors, so Gu Chun Qiu had thought that Lin Feng was killed at that time. However, when

Lin Feng's name started to spread in the Imperial City again, Gu Chun Qiu heard the rumors and knew that he was still alive.

This time, Gu Chun Qiu had come to the Imperial City for one reason, to kill Lin Feng.

The sun was gradually setting on the horizon. The members of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, the Yue Clan, the Yu Clan and of the Wan Shou Sect also started arriving. They all had reserved spots, so they did not need to arrive early.

All the greatest spheres of influence in the country had their own reserved location, and in the middle of everyone, there was a huge empty location, it was the lake.

On the side of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, two silhouettes appeared in the sky above them. Chu Zhan Peng immediately landed in front of the crowd of the Hao Yue Sect.

“Father.” Shouted Chu Zhan Peng while looking at Chu Qing.

“Zhan Peng, this time, you know what you have to do right?” Said Chu Qing while looking at Chu Zhan Peng.

“Don't worry father, even if Lin Feng hadn't killed Leng Yue, I would have killed him anyway.” said Chu Zhan Peng with sharp lights twinkling in his eyes. Lin Feng needed to be dealt with before it was too late.

At the same time, the members of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village were having the same conversation as well. They had lost so many people in Celestial River, now they had an occasion to kill Lin Feng, they couldn't let the opportunity slip by.

They all wanted to kill Lin Feng, the Hao Yue Sect and the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, were all the same, even the Luo Xia Sect, the Wan Shou Sect and the Yu Clan wanted to use this opportunity to kill him.

Actually, they already had enmity with Lin Feng from the moment they destroyed the Yun Hai Sect, even without everything that had happened after that, they needed to destroy the roots and kill Lin Feng.

Chapter 419: Dark Barrier

While the sun was setting, the full moon was rising.

The full moon looked cold and desolate, it was illuminating the water of the lake and the people below with a pale moonlight.

In the distance, a sound spread through the air which surprised the crowd.

What had they just heard?

The crowd gazed into the distance and saw nine dragons moving through the air. The sound of dragons roaring could be heard as the dragons weaved around each other. They were far in the distance, but the sound was loud and clear for everyone.

The most shocking was that in the middle of those nine dragons, there was a throne, it was a golden throne. On the curtains surrounding that throne, there were multiple depictions of dragons.

At the same time, surrounding that throne, there was an army of strong cultivators flying through the sky in perfect formation. Those people had sharp expressions in their eyes and the Qi they were releasing was monstrously brutal.

“The King!” The crowd was shivering when they saw the spectacle, how majestic, he was being carried by nine dragons and

the army strong cultivators were flying in formation to clear the path, how astonishing!

Everybody had already guessed who that person was: the king of Xue Yue.

“Roaaarr....” The nine dragons roared with a majestic magnificence and the sound echoed in everyone’s ears. When they saw the king, the entire population started to bow.

The king was arriving and his arrival was accompanied by nine dragons.

“The king has even come to the national competition!” Thought the people in the crowd, they were all surprised. It seemed like this competition was going to be extremely important, the king even came in person.

The national competition was similar to the great competition of Xue Yu, it was something that happened every ten years, but for many people, they wouldn’t get to see the king in their entire lifetime.

The nine dragons flew down from the sky and immediately dove into the water, after a moment, the tops of the dragons flew out from the surface of the lake, they looked very skillful and agile.

Those nine dragons could fly through the sky and swim in the water, but the strangest thing was that the water of the lake didn’t

even move from the dragons' movements.

At that moment, the crowd was astonished by the spectacle of the nine dragons, their hearts were pounding out of their chests.

Those nine dragons were all dozens of metres in size, they could move through the water without even a ripple appearing, how majestic!

The entire atmosphere became calm. At that moment, nobody dared say a word. They were all looking at the throne which was now slightly above the surface of the water.

“Go!” A low voice sounded out but was distinctly loud enough for the entire crowd to hear.

When that person finished talking, the nine dragons shot into the air.

“What are they doing?” Wondered some people while shaking from the presence of the dragons. Those nine dragons arrived in the sky and started flying in circles, which created a cyclone around them as it absorbed all of the clouds in the sky.

A monstrously powerful Qi rolled through the air as the nine dragons started to revolve.

The nine dragons were roaring unceasingly and the throne looked lonely above the lake. It calmly hung in suspension above

the water of the lake, but it wasn't falling at all, it was just oscillating a little as it floated in the air, it was very intriguing.

Finally, the nine dragons stopped moving and dove back into the lake and appeared on the surface. At that moment, a huge circle appeared in the sky and created a dark barrier beneath.

That circular barrier was formed by dark Qi, it seemed like the nine dragons had been revolving in the air to create this barrier.

“The great competition of Xue Yu occurs every ten years, people from all across the thirteen countries participate, there are many outstanding young cultivators. All those who have joined the great competition of Xue Yu, if they were not killed during the competition, they came back as heroes, generals, nobles or just extremely strong cultivators in general. This time, all the outstanding young cultivators of Xue Yue will have a chance, an incredible chance.” Said a voice coming from inside the curtains, where the throne was. However, the people situated kilometres away could still hear that voice distinctly.

That voice sounded evil and it moved in every direction, piercing into people's ears.

“Those who have joined the great competition of Xue Yu before have become extremely strong cultivators or generals.”

When the crowd heard those words, their hearts started pounding violently. The four who had come back from the great competition of Xue Yu nine years ago and eighteen years ago had

already become so strong that nobody in Xue Yue would dare to provoke them. Those people had become the most outstanding cultivators of the country.”

People from all across the thirteen countries of Xue Yu would join the great competition of Xue Yu. How incredible was that! Many people yearned for it night and day, but they were only able to spectate because they weren't strong enough.

“I am absolutely not exaggerating to scare or entice you. You all have to understand that Xue Yu is extremely vast. There are thirteen countries and our country is the one of the smaller and weaker ones. Every country has a myriad of strong cultivators, if you want to join the great competition of Xue Yu, you have to seize that opportunity and only then will you be able to compete with the geniuses of the other countries. You will be gaining invaluable experience and a greater understanding of many things. You will also be able to strengthen your body to new and unimaginable heights. Joining the great competition of Xue Yu has multiple advantages, it doesn't just change your cultivation, it changes your destiny. Nobody can anticipate your future if you attend.” Said the voice slowly. Everybody was calmly listening to those words.

The great competition of Xue Yu could change a person's destiny!

If they could join the great competition of Xue Yu, they would also be able to leave the country of Xue Yue and learn from powerful foreign cultivators.

“But if you want to join the great competition of Xue Yu, I first have to see the level of your strength and just how gifted you are,

only after seeing your potential, will you have a chance of being presented to the emperor who will then choose the final cultivators personally.” Continued the voice slowly before continuing: “This time, I invited the most gifted young cultivators of Xue Yue, you all have a chance, those of you who have received my letter, please come through the dark barrier and into the middle of the circle. This will be the first selection process, of course, the eight high-officials do not need to go through that test.”

“Selection test!” The crowd understood why the nine dragons had created a circle of Qi at that moment, it was to see if those who had received a letter could penetrate the barrier. What incredible effect would it have?

The eight high-officials didn’t need to go through that test, in other words, they didn’t have to sit through the first test.

“Here I come!” Shouted a young cultivator, that person flew into the sky and immediately dived into the dark barrier, however, in the blink of an eye, the dark Qi enveloped that person and they completely disappeared, not even Qi was left.

“What is going on?” The crowd was frowning. That person had been swallowed by the darkness. It seemed that entering that dark barrier was extremely difficult!

The first selection round had started!

Chapter 420: On The Bamboo Raft

“Ahhhhh.....” The next person who entered into the black barrier finally gave a horrible shriek. Waves rolled over that black barrier and then the person who entered rushed back out, but immediately fell into the water.

The flood dragons roared, one of them then rose up and rushed towards the person’s body. It opened its huge jaws and swallowed him with a single bite. That person’s entire body was sent into the stomach of a dragon.

“What’s going on!?” The people’s hearts started pounding violently. Was he dead? That person wasn’t strong enough to enter the dark Qi. His body seemed to have been burnt by that black barrier and he was immediately swallowed by the dragon when he left the barrier. How terrifying!

“Those who haven’t received an invitation letter shouldn’t try. I have invited every single outstanding young cultivator in Xue Yue. If you still try without an invitation, you are just committing suicide.” said a faintly discernible voice again which astonished people. The one who had just been swallowed by the dragon wasn’t one of the people who received an invitation letter, people without the invitation letters shouldn’t try, otherwise they would suffer the same fate.

“Besides, those who have received an invitation letter should announce their name before entering the black barrier through the poisonous black fog, and the time allocated for everyone here, is the time it take for an oil lamp requires to go out.

“It’s poison, that black barrier is made of toxic fog... poison is surrounding those black barrier.” The crowd was slightly startled. The king was saying that he hadn’t forgotten to invite a single person in the country, how confident!

At that moment, two silhouettes appeared in the sky. They were extremely young. It was a pair who seemed to be a young girl and a young boy. The boy looked handsome and the girl was beautiful, when the people below saw them, they couldn’t help but sigh with admiration. The only bad thing about them was that the two people looked unbearably arrogant.

That young man glanced at the crowd and said in an indifferent tone: “You all better hurry up, don’t waste my time!”

Huh?

Waste his time?

That guy was exactly as he looked, arrogant. How insufferably arrogant! He sounded like he was the protagonist of the entire event, the other people were only there as a side show which wasted his time.

“We are from Yan Dang Mountain, we belong to the Ling Clan!” Said the young man again.

Yan Dang Mountain? The Ling Clan?

Many people had never heard those names before which surprised them... But those two people had received an invitation letter so they were probably outstanding. However, the majority of people didn't know about the Ling Clan.

However, a few old men looked a bit surprised, if he was from Yan Dang Mountain, he was probably their son...

“From today, remember my name and remember it well, my name is Ling Tian!” Said that young man when he saw that many people looked shocked. He sounded even more arrogant than before.

Immediately after, the crowd only saw Ling Tian step into that black poisonous fog. Under the light of the full moon, a light emerged from the black barrier. How quick! Ling Tian was so fast that it looked incredible. The crowd couldn't even follow his figure with their eyes.

A light sound emerged as waves appeared on the black barrier, it looked like a slice had been created in the barrier, creating a pathway. Ling Tian and the girl then walked towards it and moved through the pathway they created.

“What quick sword-play! That was extremely powerful. No wonder that he is that arrogant!” Thought the people in the crowd. That person's name was Ling Tian and he was the first person to enter into the black barrier.

After Ling Tian entered the barrier. Another silhouette shot into the sky, the figure then stopped, and immediately dashed towards the depths of the black barrier. As the person was about to make contact, he shouted.

“Officer of the Imperial City Guards, She Qiong!”

While She Qiong was moving, a flood dragon appeared and as he attacked, it roared aggressively. He then penetrated into the depths of the black barrier and through the poisonous fog. She Qiong and his flood dragon both penetrated into the poisonous fog.

“Flood dragon, he has a flood dragon spirit!” The crowd was surprised. The officer of the Imperial City Guards was extremely strong. They were wondering if he might even be as strong as Ling Tian.

After She Qiong entered the black fog, three other silhouettes flew into the sky towards the black fog.

Those three people glanced at each other and continued diving.

“Du Gu Clan, Du Gu Ye!” Said a cold and detached voice. That was another genius. He then immediately released a terrifying Qi of the third Xuan Qi layer, and then pierced into the black poisonous fog.

“Hao Yue Sect, Jiang Shan!” Said another person while releasing a mountain spirit, his entire body looked like a towering mountain

at that point. He then entered the black fog which surrounded his entire body, but couldn't seem to cause the mountain to move back at all.

“Luo Xia sect, Luo Yun Tian!” A mysterious Qi filled the atmosphere and surrounded the black poisonous fog before piercing inside. Luo Yun Tian then followed the Qi he had released and entered the black poisonous fog.

Those three people all had a method to deal with the black barrier and they all looked extremely relaxed while entering it. All of them were very young, it was clear that they were the most outstanding young people of the generation.

The crowd was amazed, the geniuses of Xue Yue were numerous, they were wondering just how many geniuses there were.

After that, more and more people entered the black poisonous fog relying on their own methods. In the black fog, there were members of the Imperial Clan, the Wan Shou Sect, there were also some high-ranking officials of the court... But there were also some unknown young people.

After a short time, there were already twenty nine gathered in the poisonous fog. Those twenty nine figures were all abnormally strong young cultivators. It seemed like each of them was just as strong as the eight high-officials of Xue Yue, if not stronger.

The event could have changed its name to “the national genius gathering”. People in the crowd could see that they were unable to

rival the young cultivators in terms of natural abilities and strength. Most people still had cultivate for a long time and improve their cultivation with extreme difficulty.

“Only twenty nine people?!” Wondered the crowd at that moment, the oil lamp was about to go out.

“No... Some people haven’t arrived yet... Lin Feng hasn’t arrived yet!” Thought many people from the crowd. They had all thought of the same name: Lin Feng.

Lin Feng had killed twelve Xuan Qi layer cultivators of the Wan Shou Sect and five of their Xuan level beasts, therefore, him not having received an invitation seemed impossible.

The crowd weren’t the only people to notice Lin Feng’s absence, all those who wanted to kill Lin Feng also noticed that he hadn’t arrived yet.

On the side of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, Chu Zhan Peng was looking at the members of the Celestial Academy. He then said in a cold and detached way: “Didn’t the Celestial Academy say that they were going to join the national competition? Where are these people then?”

The one representing the Celestial Academy, Vice-Principal Long Ding just glanced at Chu Zhan Peng in an indifferent way and then ignored him. In fact, he didn’t know where Lin Feng was. He wasn’t going to put pressure on Lin Feng anyway, it was Lin Feng’s own business. Of course, Long Ding was still convinced that Lin

Feng would come.

“There isn’t a single genius at the Celestial Academy, that’s why they would never dare to join the competition.” Joked Chu Zhan Peng with the aim of tarnishing the image of the Celestial Academy.

“The Celestial Academy is composed of a bunch of weaklings, cowards and trash, that’s all. They don’t have a single genius, how can they even call themselves an academic institution, the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue is a real academic institution, they can’t compete with us.” Various comments were spreading within the group of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. They were all meticulously adding humiliating statements about the Celestial Academy while increasing the reputation of the Holy Courtyard.

“The majestic and incredible Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue stole the most outstanding disciples from the largest sects of Xue Yue, its aim was to become one of the most influential and powerful academies in the country but now, it’s been two years since the academy began and it has nothing good to show for it. Apart from two high-officials of whom they are so proud of taking from other sects, not a single genius has actually risen from their ranks. All that the students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue are able to do is brag and create a disturbance once in a while. How pitiful they are.” A voice echoed from the distance and thundered through the atmosphere. That voice seemed to be as calm as a tranquil lake and as cold as freezing waters.

“Duan Tian Lang, you only know how to raise cowardly cultivators. All those people that you took from other sects that

were strong and had high-natural abilities have now become a bunch of scared chickens and pitiful dogs. Are you not ashamed of yourself!?”

When the people heard that voice, they were astonished and various comments started spreading. Those two statements were extremely aggressive and clear, it was a verbal attack which targeted the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. That person was even calling its students a bunch of chickens and dogs. The same person was even insulting Duan Tian Lang and saying that he could only teach them how to be cowardly. At the same time, that person was asserting that the only pride of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was the two high-officials who had that status when they joined the institution: Chu Zhan Peng and Luo Xue.

That voice wasn't loud as it entered everyone's ears but it sounded extremely aggressive.

In the distance, two bamboo rafts appeared on the water, they were calmly floating against the current at a shocking speed. There were three people inside those rafts.

There was an extremely young man on one of those bamboo drafts, he was only about sixteen years old, he looked handsome and had an honest bearing.

While on the other bamboo draft, there were two other people, a boy and a girl. The young man looked handsome, smart and clean. His facial expression looked as limpid and deep as the waters of the lake.

The young woman had a fine veil covering her face. The full moon seemed to illuminate her entire body, she looked like a celestial being. She was extremely beautiful and almost looked like she had come out of a painting. When looking at her, one had the feeling that she wasn't from the mortal world.

“What a beautiful scene!” Thought the crowd. That scene looked so beautiful. They were not giving off a majestic air and there was no powerful energy floating around them. Those three people looked like they were deities as they crossed the lake.

“Lin Feng!” When the people in the crowd saw a Winged Tiger was also on the bamboo raft, they narrowed their eyes, it was Lin Feng!

Chapter 421: The Black Poisonous Fog

Many people were looking at Lin Feng with murderous expressions in their eyes, especially the members of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. Chu Zhan Peng and Luo Xue's faces were filled with killing intent.

Duan Tian Lang's facial expression looked piercingly cold.

Duan Tian Lang didn't look as graceful and elegant as in the past. His hair wasn't black anymore, it had turned white, he looked miserable and lonely. It seemed like he had become much older in the short span of time. However, his eyes looked the same as before, they looked evil and much colder, so cold that that coldness was piercing to the bones.

Duan Tian Lang's cultivation had also increased!

When Lin Feng saw Duan Tian Lang's eyes, he also guessed that he hadn't been wasting his time in self pity, his cultivation and dangerous aura had clearly increased.

Lin Feng didn't know that after he killed Duan Han, Duan Tian Lang's hair had turned pure white and he completely lost his interest in the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. He dedicated his entire time to cultivating. He was looking forward to meeting Lin Feng again in order to kill him, he was expecting the day when he would be able to avenge his son's death.

Lin Feng just said that Duan Tian Lang didn't know how to

educate cultivators properly which made Duan Tian Lang release a stream of deadly Qi. That deadly Qi destabilized the bamboo raft which Lin Feng was aboard, it cause the water of the lake to grow uneasy.

“Lin Feng, you will soon regret everything that you have done. Soon you will kneel down in front of me!” Said Chu Zhan Peng sounding detached. He looked like he thought he was an emperor standing above the rest of the world. How long would Lin Feng continue smiling?

“Two years ago, you came to the Yun Hai Sect, you wanted to kill me, back then you were already one of the eight high-officials, and I was only a weakling of the Qi layer, even then, I wasn’t afraid of you and wouldn’t kneel before you. Now, two years have passed and I have long since left the Qi layer, during this time I have broke through the Ling Qi layer and advanced all the way to the second Xuan Qi layer but you, you are barely stronger than you were back then, how pitiful! The worst thing is that you actually seem pleased with yourself... On top of that, you think that now you are finally strong enough to make me kneel in front of you, it’s both sad and amusing at the same time.” Joked Lin Feng which astonished everyone present. Chu Zhan Peng and Lin Feng had known each other for two years and they had been at odds ever since. Back then, Chu Zhan Peng was already one of the eight high-officials and Lin Feng was only at the Qi layer... Back then, in Chu Zhan Peng’s eyes, Lin Feng was only an insignificant insect, a nobody.

“Two years? From the Qi layer to the second Xuan Qi layer? What amazing natural abilities.” Thought the crowd while sighing. Lin Feng used to be much weaker than everyone present... And

now he had becoming the most dazzling cultivator in Xue Yue.

In comparison with Lin Feng, Chu Zhan Peng had really progressed at a snail's pace, but it was clear to everybody that the higher a person cultivated, the harder it was to improve. At high cultivation levels, breaking through to the next layer was extremely difficult.

“Brother, it seems like his cultivation speed is even faster than yours.” Said the girl on Ling Tian's side at that moment while smiling radiantly which made an extreme coldness invade Ling Tian's face. He groaned coldly and said: “So what? Even if his cultivation speed is good, he has only broken through to the second Xuan Qi layer, that's all. I destroyed his statue in Yangzhou City and I can destroy him anytime if I wanted to.”

“Of course, you have broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer and your sword is as fast as lightning, you could easily kill him.” Said the young girl while smiling which made Ling Tian's facial expression look slightly better. While looking proud of himself, Ling Tian replied: “That's obvious, yes.”

But at that moment, Ling Tian was thinking something to the contrary: “He killed twelve cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer a short time ago... And three of them had broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer... None of them was able to escape with their life... They were slaughtered like chickens. His battle ability cannot be underestimated, it's monstrous. If he doesn't offend me, I will not go out of my way to offend him.”

Even though Ling Tian was arrogant and proud, he wasn't

stupid. If he wanted to kill twelve cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer, he could but it would still require a strenuous effort. However, Lin Feng managed to do it, it was quite clear from that how strong he was.

The young girl looked pensive.

“Brother, you have broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer and Lin Feng has broken through to the second Xuan Qi layer... However, he is much stronger than some cultivators of the third Xuan Qi layer, if you fight against him, it might be an extremely difficult battle. Maybe by relying on your extremely quick sword, you could win, but it would be a costly victory. The best option would be for you and him to not fight each other.” Thought the young girl. When she had heard that Lin Feng had killed twelve cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer, she was extremely surprised by the event. She wouldn’t have thought that the insignificant marquis of Yangzhou City was so strong.

Chu Zhan Peng’s facial expression looked ice-cold, and he then said while fixedly staring at Lin Feng: “You will regret everything.”

“Hmph.” Lin Feng gave a cold smile then just ignored Chu Zhan Peng. He raised his head and looked at the people on the banks of the lake.

“Duan Ren City, my name is Yun Fei Yang!”

At that moment, far away in the distance, a silhouette appeared. That person was flying through the sky.

That person was as fast as an illusion!

“Even though I haven’t received an invitation letter, I think the geniuses of Xue Yue and I can learn from each other, don’t blame me!” That person’s voice filled the atmosphere. They then immediately entered the black fog without anything to protect themselves at all! While that person was moving through the black fog, the black fog started to move in an insane way and opened itself allowing that person move through it. Yun Fei Yang could easily move through the middle of the barrier.

“He hasn’t received an invitation letter?!” The crowd was astonished. Immediately after, they looked at the throne above the water. Didn’t he say that he hadn’t forgotten anybody in the entire country? That Yun Fei Yang was monstrously strong though!

“Since you have the necessary strength, you can.” Said the king sounding natural and unrestrained.

“Duan Ren City!” Lin Feng was astonished. He hadn’t heard news of Duan Ren City in a very long time. The city he had set on fire surprisingly gave birth to a genius?!

Lin Feng then looked at that person. Yun Fei Yang’s voice sounded heroic, his smile looked natural and unrestrained, his entire body looked like it contained the strength of a thousand mountains. He also looked like he had more hidden cards than what he was showing. Had that person really come from the border of Xue Yue? Or did he come from the other side of the

border? Was he a foreigner?

“The oil lamp will go out soon.” Said a voice coming from the direction of the throne. Lin Feng and Meng Qing glanced at each other while smiling. Immediately after, their bodies rose up into the air and they moved towards the black fog.

But Lin Feng didn't use his strength to break through the black fog, he just floated high into the sky and then slowly moved inside the barrier through the hole in the top, he calmly flew over the fog and over the top of black barrier and landed inside. Duan Feng didn't follow him, even though he had received an invitation letter, he was convinced that it wasn't the right time to expose his strength. He just wanted to observe them.

When the crowd saw Lin Feng's actions, they were speechless. Lin Feng didn't go through the black fog and simply flew into the hole at the top, was that allowed?

“That guy....”

The crowd was speechless. The black fog was surrounding the black barrier, everybody knew that they could enter the barrier from the hole in the top of the circle, but nobody had dared to do that. It was competition for geniuses, wasn't that method too simple? Wasn't it too humiliating? The king had even said that the poisonous black fog was surrounding the black barrier so it would prevent many people from reaching it, but if everybody just flew over the top of it like Lin Feng, then couldn't everyone reach the inside of the black barrier?

Lin Feng didn't care, he didn't think the same way as the others, he didn't need to waste his strength on the black barrier creating a majestic show when there was a path already open.

Lin Feng moved like a shadow, he was extremely quick, that was already an evidence of how strong he was.

Following Yun Fei Yang, Lin Feng and Meng Qing then moved inside the black barrier. Inside, the black fog, there were thirty-two people. The weakest were at the first Xuan Qi layer, but there were only a few of them.

Some of the strongest ones had broken through to the third or fourth Xuan Qi layer. Such high natural abilities and cultivation in young people was rare, to the extent that many senior cultivators weren't even been able to reach that level. On top of that, amongst those people, none of them were older than thirty years old.

"Time's up." Said king at that moment while raising his head. Immediately after, he rose into the air, the entire crowd was in front of him and he said: "Everybody come to the edge of the black fog."

"Huh?" Everybody was surprised, he wanted them to move to the edge of the black fog, what did he mean?

But they had no right to be disobedient, so they all moved towards the edge of the black fog forming a big arch around the black fog.

“Those who have received an invitation letter can be considered as the geniuses of Xue Yue, they can remain cool-headed even when their lives are threatened. They are tenacious and have an incredible determination. They are considered authentically strong cultivators because of these qualities. Nobody is allowed to move!” Said the king slowly. The crowd frowned, nobody was allowed to move? What did he intend to do?

At that moment, the nine dragons moving over the water started spinning at full speed, they raised their heads and chanted loudly.

The black fog then started rolling through the atmosphere, the Qi of the black barrier also started undulating in an insane way, it turned into a storm. Besides, the king moved his hands and the black poison seemed to condense.

The black poisonous Qi started to block the moonlight, it was blotting out the sky and covering up the earth. Then, it moved towards the crowd and enveloped them. In a flash, everybody was swallowed by the black fog.

Chapter 422: The Death Game

“Inside of the fog, kill anyone as you please, the only rule is to kill. Spare no effort, the only way to become stronger is to constantly be surrounded by death. Only through such experiences, will you be able to become the most dazzling cultivator of Xue Yue. If you want to join the Great Competition of Xue Yu and leave Xue Yue, you must prove that you are strong and must achieve glorious accomplishments.”

Those were the last words people heard before drowning in the black fog. The king rose both his hands and started making some hand movements, it looked strange, as if he was casting a strange type of magic. The black fog was unceasingly rolling through the atmosphere until it gradually became calm. Inside the black fog, a different scene was occurring.

“What’s that?” The spectators were shivering. The black fog started to turn into a clear grey bubble, they could clearly see through the fog. Inside the clear fog, they could see the young and outstanding cultivators.

However, what astonished the crowd was that the people inside. Even though they were all very close to each other, it seemed like they were unable to see the other person.

The people inside... Couldn’t see through the clear fog?

“What’s going on?” The crowd looked stupefied. How strange! The people who were inside the fog looked like they had lost all

sense of direction. Some people were separated by two or three meters but couldn't see the other person. They were clumsily moving around and many were moving very cautiously.

The people in the crowd raised their heads and looked at the king, he was still moving his hands. They couldn't understand what was happening.

It was an illusion. Indeed, the people inside were trapped inside an illusion created by the king.

“Black fog!” Whispered people in the crowd. They understood what it really meant at that moment. Those inside the fog had become blind and their senses were restricted. They were prisoners inside an illusion.

The king had created an illusion for them.

Before being made a prisoner of that grey bubble, the competitors heard the king's last sentence, they could kill other people as they pleased. After having heard that sentence, it seemed like they had all been transported to a completely different world, a very strange one.

Lin Feng and Meng Qing were no longer together. They could no longer see the other person. A moment before, they entered the fog together but now, they had been completely separated from the other.

“It’s an illusion!” Lin Feng raised his head and looked in front of him. The full moon and the crowd of people had disappeared. The only thing left was a palace, an extremely large palace, it seemed like it had no end. Lin Feng had the impression that he was alone inside an extremely large room, and on top of that, it seemed like that palace had no end.

Anyone who could notice the drastic changes in that landscape could understand that it was an illusion created by the king, but then again, knowing that it was an illusion would not help them, they were still trapped inside the illusion and everything seemed real to them.

“It seems like a bloodbath will be inevitable in here.” Thought Lin Feng. He then immediately started walking. He didn’t stay where he was trying to find a solution to break the illusion, he first wanted to find Meng Qing and then he would think about the rest.

The people confined in the illusion weren’t like the majority of those outside. They were outstanding cultivators, there wasn’t a single weakling. Lin Feng was worried about Meng Qing, even if she was very strong.

“It looks so real.” Lin Feng was calmly walking in that palace very slowly. The floor was made of bluestone. Suddenly, many voices started echoing in the air and then it became silent again. That vast area didn’t look like an illusion, it looked very real.

Lin Feng arrived inside a room and suddenly a powerful Qi enveloped his body which surprised him. Immediately after, the sound of a chaotic wind rushed towards him.

Lin Feng smiled coldly and released a terrifying energy, it was the energy of his murderous sword. It rose into the air and it made the entire palace vibrate.

The facial expression of the person who had just attacked him changed drastically. It seemed like there were restrictions inside of that bubble, it seemed impossible to remove the effects of the illusion. One could only rely on one's intuition and hearing to determine if there was another person near them. That person had only been able to hear Lin Feng's steps as he waited to ambush him, so he couldn't possibly know that it was Lin Feng that he was attacking.

"Wait, wait!" Shouted that person loudly but they didn't stop launching attacks. They were saying "wait" but they continued to attack the other person.

Would anyone stop and trust the opponent who just attacked them? Impossible. In that place, the sound of breathing was the only way to determine if the opponent was alive or not, who would trust the other person? The person had noticed that Lin Feng's energy had halted, but he still did not stop his attack on Lin Feng. Lin Feng had no other choice but to defend himself.

"Die!" Shouted Lin Feng furiously. His sword Qi whistled through the air and pierced into the opponents fist. Blood burst forth into the air. The one who had attacked Lin Feng could no longer use his hand, but it did not stop there. At the moment when Lin Feng's hand and the other person's fist collided, that person gave a horrible shriek. Lin Feng's Qi sliced the opponent's hand in

two, then their forearm, then their arm and ultimately removed their head.

The first cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer had died!

“What a monstrous strength!” Under the light of the full moon, the crowd all lifted their heads and looked at the scene, it made them shiver.

They couldn't sense Lin Feng's energy but they could see the result of the battle. The grey bubble was even vibrating under the immense power.

Lin Feng had attacked once and instantly killed a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer. The most surprising thing was that Lin Feng was attacked by surprise by his opponent.

A silhouette emerged from the black fog which astonished the crowd. It was a corpse. It was the person who had just been killed by Lin Feng.

After dying, the bodies were thrown out of the illusion. It was an illusion but people could still be killed inside.

That illusion was terrifying.

In the illusion, Lin Feng had killed someone and then the person vanished, that stupefied him.

“He was thrown out of the illusion...?” He looked like he didn’t understand. Had the person just been ejected from the illusion or were they actually dead?

He frowned and then concluded that person was dead. A moment before, the blood had been real. Besides, at the moment when the illusion had started, the king had said that they could kill as they pleased, even though the illusion was a fake world, the death inside it was completely real.

“What a boring game.” Thought Lin Feng. This was a game created by the king, he was using the lives of young geniuses as toys. In order to choose the most outstanding cultivators, he could have set up a huge fighting arena and organized a tournament... But instead, he had chosen to put them in an illusionary world where they were blinded by blackness. In such circumstances, people would just randomly kill each other until only the strongest were left.

Even if all those people had incredibly high natural abilities, wasn’t it useless? Their talent and lives didn’t matter to the king. What he wanted was to see the final victory of his game. The others didn’t matter, if they died, it just meant that they were worthless.

“Ahhhhh....” A horrible shriek spread in the air on Lin Feng’s right which surprised him. He started to think about the situation.

“A moment before, the one who attacked me by surprise came

from my left, and that shout came from my right.” Thought Lin Feng. It seemed like the palace was composed of endless rooms, there were people fighting on his left and on his right.

“Oh, and in front of me as well!” Lin Feng was suddenly dumbstruck. There was a door in front of him, and there were doors on his left and right as well. Behind those doors, there were people.

“Nine large square-shaped rooms constitute the palace!” Sharp lights twinkled in Lin Feng’s eyes. He raised his head and moved forwards obliquely. There was also something above. Lin Feng suddenly frowned.

Doors, there were more doors.

All those who were competing were behind different doors.

“It’s a death game, this illusion is obviously a death game.” Thought Lin Feng whose heart was gradually being invaded by coldness. Lin Feng was surrounded by people. Lin Feng couldn’t forget that detail. Behind each door, there was a terrifyingly strong cultivator.

“Huh?” At that moment, Lin Feng frowned. He turned around and saw something not far in front of him. A pair of eyes furtively glanced at him from there.

“As expected, there are people under me as well.” Thought Lin

Feng as if he had suddenly understood something.

After furtively glancing at Lin Feng, that person slowly moved back into the floor, pretending that they didn't see anything. Lin Feng smiled as if he found the situation amusing.

“Wait, wait!” Shouted Lin Feng in a deep voice which surprised the person. They couldn't just continue leaving. They could only see Lin Feng's smile in the darkness, he looked amused.

“I didn't know that you were here, Your Excellency.”

“No problem, first come here and then we'll talk.” Said Lin Feng while smiling which surprised his interlocutor. That person suddenly looked extremely irresolute.

A subtle sound emerged in the atmosphere. That person smiled, their lips were shaking. Their face turned deathly pale, they were terrified.

The top of the person's head burst open and blood gushed out to create a blood fountain. It was terrifying.

Lin Feng was also surprised when he saw that. Under that person, there was somebody else that emerged through the door.

“How cruel.” Thought Lin Feng feeling a chill run through his heart. Immediately after, he moved forwards and released a thick and dense deadly energy.

Chapter 423: Accomplices

At that moment, the original person's face was completely still, there was not a trace of life in their body. Lin Feng moved towards the body, slowly, step by step. In the room under his feet, there was absolutely no sound but Lin Feng knew that there was someone... And that person's actions were extremely cruel.

Lin Feng jumped down in a flash and a rumbling sound filled the air. A hole the size of a door immediately appeared beneath him. Lin Feng allowed himself to fall into it.

A terrifying deadly energy enveloped Lin Feng's body which surprised him. In front of him, there was a huge stone which had transformed into a spike, it was shooting towards his chest at full speed. It was extremely fast!

“Jiang Shan!” Lin Feng's facial expression suddenly looked ice-cold. That true cultivator was a core disciple of the Hao Yue Sect: Jiang Shan.

“What a coincidence!” Said Lin Feng coldly. His hand through the air while releasing monstrous amounts sword energy as a whistling sound emerged in the air. The extremely sharp spike broke into pieces and disappeared. Lin Feng's sword energy was much sharper than a sharpened spike!

Jiang Shan moved his hands and in a flash, all the rocks in the area started to shoot towards Lin Feng. Rumbling sounds emerged in the atmosphere as the rocks were broken by the sword energy,

Jiang Shan was also pushed backwards from the collision. He was fixedly staring at Lin Feng.

He hadn't thought that he would come across Lin Feng so early. The person that he wished to encounter the least was Lin Feng.

Lin Feng had been able to kill twelve cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer. Lin Feng didn't rely on influence or other people to protect him, he was an authentic hot-blooded cultivator.

Even though Jiang Shan had recently broken through to the second Xuan Qi layer, just like Lin Feng, Lin Feng was able to kill cultivators of the third Xuan Qi layer which Jiang Shan wouldn't even dare to attempt.

"The Hao Yue Sect is filled with pathetic cowards, as expected." Lin Feng looked calm and detached. He then moved towards Jiang Shan, step by step, which sent a shiver down Jiang Shan's spine.

"Lin Feng, the problems between the Hao Yue Sect and you, should be solved by Chu Zhan Peng and you. We are not enemies. There is no need for you to kill me." Said Jiang Shan in a weak and timid voice. He didn't dare fight against Lin Feng.

"We are not enemies?" Lin Feng smiled in an ice-cold way, Jiang Shan's words were ridiculous.

Lin Feng pointed at the corpse and said in a cold and detached way: "Were you and him enemies? I don't think so, but you still

attacked him by surprise and killed him. Can you explain that?”

Jiang Shan was surprised. He was inside the black fog, he was obviously prepared to kill people. He had seen the opportunity and instantly killed the other person. He had an opportunity, of course, he couldn't let it slip... But Lin Feng was asking him for a reason and Jiang Shan didn't know how to reply.

“Killing people weaker than you doesn't require a reason. If I have to give a reason, let's just say that it is because you are a member of the Hao Yue Sect, that's a sufficient reason for you to die.” Said Lin Feng whose deadly energy was becoming denser and denser. He then continued slowly walking towards Jiang Shan which made the latter narrow his eyes. Ice-cold lights were flashing through his eyes. A thick and heavy energy emerged from his body, it was his spirit. A mountain spirit appeared behind him.

“Killing me will not be so easy!” Shouted Jiang Shan while raising his hand and swiping it through the air. In a flash, a huge rock shot towards Lin Feng emitting rumbling sound. The rock was large enough to mash Lin Feng's body into paste.

Lin Feng was calmly looking at the rock that was hurtling towards him with the aim of turning him into a puree. He waved his hand and a terrifying sword energy emerged from his fingers.

“BOOM!”

The rock was sliced open the sword and then burst into powder. After destroying the rock, Lin Feng looked at Jiang Shan, he was

trying to escape in another direction at his fastest speed.

“What a deceitful guy.” Lin Feng smiled coldly as he moved with the wind. His movements were made at an incredible speed.

Jiang Shan whose escape was chaotic suddenly started shaking, he turned around and saw a terrifying sword energy moving towards him. His facial expression drastically changed.

Lin Feng was so fast that he had already arrived behind his opponent. His terrifying sword energy was moving closer and it felt like it was going to lacerate his entire body.

“Don’t kill me!” Shouted Jiang Shan furiously. His entire body which was as large as a mountain launched towards Lin Feng again. He was so desperate that his fight or flight reflex had instinctively caused him to turn and fight.

“Not kill you?” Lin Feng was releasing deadly energy, his hand moved down and a deafening sound filled the atmosphere. A sword light appeared and the gigantic mountain spirit was split apart. Jiang Shan was astonished. Lin Feng’s sword attacks were extremely powerful!

“Get lost!” Shouted Jiang Shan furiously when he saw that his rock spirit was being suppressed. His entire body transformed into a small mountain as he rushed through the air. His entire body was surrounded by rocks which were orbiting him.

Jiang Shan's entire body seemed just like a sturdy mountain as he threw himself at Lin Feng. He was extremely quick. He started to release a powerful energy as he rushed forward. If Lin Feng took the attack head on, if he didn't die, he would be severely disfigured.

"The Wind!" Shouted Lin Feng in a deep voice. He immediately retreated with the speed of the wind. He then slowly raised a pure Qi sword which was filled with deadly energy.

"Come and face me, if you want to kill me!" Shouted Jiang Shan furiously when he noticed that he couldn't even touch Lin Feng's clothes. Lin Feng was so fast that he could dodge while maintaining the distance between them.

Lin Feng ignored Jiang Shan as the power contained in his pure Qi sword was growing stronger and stronger. It was terrifying.

"Die!" Shouted Lin Feng furiously. A deadly Qi filled the air, the entire atmosphere was filled with the whistling sound of his sword. Immediately after, his sword descended and moved towards Jiang Shan.

The ground under Lin Feng's feet cracked and a silhouette rose from beneath him.

Lin Feng's sword which he was using to attack Jiang Shan slightly shook. The person who had emerged was filled with killing intent.

“Jiang Shan, kill him!” Shouted another voice suddenly. Another silhouette descended from the ceiling and moved towards Lin Feng. That person was releasing a deadly energy. That person’s target was Lin Feng.

There was one person in front of Lin Feng, one person under and another above, there were three people and they were all attacking Lin Feng at the same time.

“Die!” When Jiang Shan noticed what was happening, he seemed to regain all his confidence. He immediately stopped all thoughts of retreat and moved towards Lin Feng again.

Lin Feng looked extremely cold, the deadly energy around him was extremely powerful. Besides, Jiang Shan was also ready to risk his life to kill Lin Feng. Even though Lin Feng was certain that he could kill Jiang Shan, he wasn’t so sure about the two others who were attacking him. If he decided to fight, the situation would be extremely dangerous. Therefore, Lin Feng thought that it was better to leave than to kill Jiang Shan.

His body turned and in a flash he rushed back. Explosive sounds spread in the air, it came from the place where Lin Feng was just standing. The atmosphere seemed like it was going to turn into powder under such a dense concentration of attacks.

“It is a good thing that I am quick!” Thought Lin Feng. Lin Feng could sense the restrictions in that palace. A moment before, when the others attacked him by surprise, if he wasn’t fast enough, he would have died a cruel death. Even though his attacks were powerful, what was the point if he took the enemies attacks? Even

if the opponents were not as strong as him, if their attacks reached his body, they would still cause lethal injury.

Lin Feng's facial expression looked ice-cold, he then flew into the air and look at the three silhouettes in front of him.

Those three people were Jiang Shan of the Hao Yue Sect, Luo Yun Tian of the Luo Xia Sect and Du Gu Ye.

Luo Yun Tian was the best disciple of the Luo Xia Sect, the fact that he wanted to kill Lin Feng wasn't surprising. The other person was probably from the Du Gu Clan. Lin Feng had humiliated Du Gu Shang in the past and Du Gu Xiao. Du Gu Ye was probably from the same clan as them.

The fact that those three people weren't able to kill Lin Feng even when using a surprise attack cause them all to pull a long face.

Jiang Shan and Luo Yun Tian had broken through to the second Xuan Qi layer while Du Gu Ye had broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer. A moment before, they couldn't kill Lin Feng, it seemed like with Lin Feng's reflexes, fighting against him wouldn't be so easy.

Besides, at the same time, many people around the Xiangjiang lake were watching the scene with Lin Feng and the three attackers. Lin Feng was fighting alone against three people, what would be the outcome of that battle?

Besides, the crowd could also see what the others were doing. More than a dozen people had already died inside that bubble. They had been heartlessly slaughtered. Inside that bubble, nobody was a saint.

Somewhere above, Lin Feng, there was the pure and holy Meng Qing. She looked incredibly beautiful as she was looking extremely hard for Lin Feng. She was going to every single room as she searched for him but all she could see was the remnants of battle. At the moment when she was about to go downstairs, a loud sound emerged. Suddenly a person appeared before her.

It was the officer of the Imperial City Guards, She Qiong!

“His woman!” She Qing was surprised and then a cold light flashed through his eyes. Meng Qing was Lin Feng’s lover and because of Lin Feng, She Qiong had lost the woman he loved, Duan Xin Ye!

Chapter 424: The Price of Attacking!

Meng Qing didn't feel like paying attention to She Qiong but when she saw that he was looking at her with evil intentions, she couldn't help but release an ice-cold Qi which rushed straight for him.

“Haha, such a warm breeze.” Grinned She Qiong. Last time, Lin Feng had crushed his pride and taught him a lesson. After that, he locked himself away in cultivation and practiced until he broke through to the next layer.

At that moment, She Qiong had broken through to the fourth Xuan Qi layer. Amongst the group of people, he seemed to have the highest cultivation level. Nobody could compare to him, after all, the high-officials were not inside the fog.

“Lin Feng, you stole my woman, now I will have revenge. Wait until we meet, I will look forward to see your reaction.” Thought She Qiong coldly. After having broken through to the fourth Xuan Qi layer, he had gone to see Duan Xin Ye, but she ignored him. In her eyes, there was only Lin Feng. No matter how high She Qiong's cultivation level became, Duan Xin Ye would not even look at him.

She Qiong hated Lin Feng.

At that moment, a small sound emerged in the atmosphere. She Qiong was surprised. He suddenly moved back to see what was happening and noticed a silhouette emerging near them.

He frowned as a cold light flashed in his eyes.

When Ling Tian saw Meng Qing and She Qiong, he was surprised, he then immediately gave a strange smile and said: “You guys continue with what you were doing. I didn’t see anything.”

When Meng Qing heard Ling Tian, she released an ice-cold energy towards him but Ling Tian simply ignored her, he smiled and said: “I will go and kill some other people. I won’t bother you.”

When he finished talking, he turned back and walked away.

At that moment, he also knew that the palace was divided into nine rooms and that there were people everywhere, above and under, as well as on each of his sides, therefore he wasn’t worried about a lack of people to kill.

At that moment, Meng Qing didn’t know that the one she was looking for was directly beneath her feet.

Beneath them, Lin Feng and the three others were in a confrontation as sword energy emitted whistling sounds through the air, it was terrifying and piercingly-cold, sword energy had invaded the entire atmosphere.

Jiang Shan, Luo Yun Tian and Du Gu Ye had separated and surrounded Lin Feng. None of them dared act carelessly, they didn’t dare to look down on Lin Feng, they considered him as an extremely strong opponent.

“Maybe the people are watching us from outside, the most important thing now is to control my power and not reveal my full strength.” Thought Lin Feng. He was only guessing these things but he was right, people really were watching them from outside the fog. They could see everyone clearly and did not have to focus on a single individual.

“The three of you will die.” Said Lin Feng coldly. A deadly energy followed his words and shot through the atmosphere towards the three opponents.

“Just because you say so? Ha, we will see!” Said Du Gu Ye coldly who was directly in front of Lin Feng. At the same time, he looked at Luo Yun Tian and Jiang Shan and said: “We have to give our all, if we want to kill him, we can’t afford to spare any effort!”

“Alright.” Said the two others while nodding. They couldn’t afford to hold back. Gigantic rocks started to cover Jiang Shan’s body as his body started to grow in size, covered by rocks, he looked like a giant in the form of a mountain.

Magnificent rosy lights then emerged from Luo Yun Tian’s body but those beautiful lights were filled with deadly energy.

“Die!” Shouted Du Gu Ye and in a flash, those three people threw themselves at Lin Feng while releasing their full power.

“BOOM!”

Jiang Shan stomped his foot into the ground, which made the floor shake violently. Even though his entire body looked like a giant mountain, he was still able to move at incredible speed. In a few steps, he had already arrived in front of Lin Feng and unleashed a heavy punch into the air. That punch was filled with endless strength and contained the will to crush Lin Feng.

Lin Feng hand shook and a sword immediately appeared. Then, rumbling and cracking sound filled the air. A crevasse started to appear on the rocky fist, then even more cracks started to appear. However, as Jiang Shan condensed his energy, the crevasse started to disappear, as if nothing had happened.

By then, Du Gu Ye and Luo Yun Tian had arrived in front of Lin Feng. Du Gu Ye raised his fist which was filled with evil energy, and unleashed his attack straight towards Lin Feng. Besides, Luo Yun Tian's attack was terrifying, it was filled with endless strength and combined with his deadly energy.

Wind, free and unrestrained like the wind!

Lin Feng's body started to gently float, as the attacks grew closer, he started to drift on the wind. In an instant, he had already appeared a great distance away. His speed was astonishing.

But Du Gu Ye and the other two knew that this battle was going to be extremely difficult, so they were not surprised. They reacted quickly and prepared to unleash new attacks against Lin Feng.

“Die!” Shouted Lin Feng with incredible ferocity. His sword rose into the air as his sword energy filled the entire palace.

A thunderous rumbling noise emerged in the atmosphere and the palace started to vibrate.

“Like the Mountain!” Jiang Shan’s facial expression slightly changed. He took a step forward and his body grew even larger. He seemed to fully transform into a large mountain.

“I will block him, you two will need to finish him off!” Shouted Jiang Shan. After transforming into a gigantic mountain, he threw himself towards Lin Feng’s sword, as if he planned to block the sword with his life.

The palace was shaking with an intense power. Jiang Shan’s stone body was starting to break, large pieces of rock were crashing around him. His gigantic stone body looked like it was going to burst into pieces.

“Solid Mountain!” Shouted Jiang Shan furiously. He then slammed his feet into the ground again. The stones which had broken away from his body started to gather again, Lin Feng’s sword didn’t seem to hold the power to completely destroy him.

“Die!” Shouted Du Gu Ye and Luo Yun Tian furiously. Their deadly energies were rushing through the atmosphere towards Lin Feng.

Jiang Shan had decided to block Lin Feng's attacks, how could they let go of this perfect opportunity to attack?

“ROAR!” A purple light burst into reality and what seemed to be an endless stream of purple snakes came into being, the snakes immediately rushed towards his two attackers. In the blink of an eye, Du Gu Ye and Luo Yun Tian were surrounded by the army of purple snakes which wrapped themselves around their bodies.

An extremely sharp Qi emerged from Du Gu Ye's body and started to cut through the purple snakes but Luo Yun Tian was too weak, he was struggling and it required a great deal of effort for him to break free.

“Die.” A dazzling light illuminated the atmosphere as a cross-shaped light appeared. Luo Yun Tian, who was struggling with the purple snakes, then felt a sudden pain coming from his chest. He lowered his head and saw a large cross-shaped wound was going through his chest. An incredible quantity of blood started to pour from his wound and his organs started to shift. His facial muscles started to twitch, he was currently suffering in untold agony.

“Break!” Shouted Lin Feng in a deep voice. Luo Yun Tian's body abruptly started to shake violently. He could feel the organs inside starting to rupture. His face was locked in an intense suffering. After that terrifying attack, he slowly closed his eyes and collapsed. After that, he disappeared from the illusion, as if he was never there to begin with.

He died!

Jiang Shan's giant body was formed from stone but his heart wasn't made of stone, it was currently violently pounding in his chest. Lin Feng's attacks had a terrifying lethality, it was monstrous. If they gave him even a small opportunity, he would use it to kill them.

Lin Feng glanced at Jiang Shan for a second and then ignored him. Since Jiang Shan had incredible defence, Lin Feng decided to ignore him for the time being. He had already killed one of his attackers, now he had to kill the other one, and then he could focus on Jiang Shan.

"You think I would let you attack me by surprise?" Lin Feng was staring coldly at Du Gu Ye. The myriad of purple snakes kept moving through the atmosphere, there were so many of them that it was like a nightmare.

When Du Gu Ye saw Lin Feng's pitch-black eyes filled with cold deadly energy, he started to regret that he encountered Jiang Shan and Lin Feng. That opportunity seemed too good, so he couldn't let it slip, besides the Du Gu Clan also wanted to settle a grudge with Lin Feng, so it seemed like a simple choice to attack when he saw Lin Feng... But the three of them had acted together to fight Lin Feng, they had already unleashed multiple attacks on him, and the result was that one of them had died.

"It's your turn." Said Lin Feng's whose eyes looked piercingly cold. The purple snakes roared and slowly merged together which emitted a magnificent purple radiance. They turned into a gigantic dragon which looked incomparably terrifying. Its two gigantic eyes

looked extremely evil. It no longer looked like a spirit, it looked like a genuine flesh and blood, ferocious beast.

“Go!” Shouted Lin Feng. The gigantic dragon moved towards Du Gu Ye creating chaos in the air with each movement. Du Gu Ye was stupefied, immediately after, his body transformed into a rainbow as he tried to escape.

An incredible cultivator of the third Xuan Qi layer, when facing Lin Feng, was cowardly trying to escape, he didn't dare fight against him.

“Wind movement!”

Lin Feng smiled coldly and rushed forward with incredible speed. Each of his movements seemed smooth as if he felt no resistance. He brandished a sword and DuGuYe felt the incoming danger, he turned around unleashed a powerful punch towards the sword.

“ROAAR!” At that precise moment, the purple dragon appeared beside him and constricted his lower body. It opened its gigantic mouth, revealing its sharp teeth as they moved closer to Du Gu Ye's head.

Du Gu Ye's facial expression drastically changed, he then released a terrifying pure Qi which rushed towards the dragon. At the same time, he was struggling in an attempt to break free.

However, in his terror, he had forgotten about Lin Feng.

A moment before, there were three of them fighting against Lin Feng but at that moment, he was fighting alone against Lin Feng and a ferocious dragon.

“Die!” A sword filled with deadly energy descended. Blood splashed high into the air. Du Gu Ye’s face froze. The purple dragon bit down on his head and swallowed it, killing him in the most cruel way.

Chapter 425: The Humiliation of the Hao Yue Sect

Jiang Shan was stupefied, new rocks continued to form his body but at that moment, he no longer had any confidence.

He didn't understand how Lin Feng, who had only broken through to the second Xuan Qi layer, could defeat people of the same level and even people at the third Xuan Qi layer in such a relaxed manner. Besides, he had the impression that Lin Feng hadn't even used all of his strength yet.

Lin Feng was still hiding his real power.

But even with that amount of power, those three attackers, three so-called geniuses, couldn't fight against Lin Feng in terms of both speed and strength. Even though Jiang Shan was extremely strong and had an amazing defense, he also understood that in a one-on-one battle against Lin Feng, he had no chance of survival.

Lin Feng suddenly turned around and looked towards him which made Jiang Shan's facial expression freeze. Was he going to be end up like the other two? Was he going to get slaughtered in a similar cruel way?

When thinking about that, his terror started to grow.

He had put great efforts into his cultivation, it hadn't been easy for him to reach such a level. It hadn't been easy to become the top

core disciple of the Hao Yue Sect. Everybody worshiped him and his future was supposed to be magnificent and filled with glory. Could he afford to die like that?

Jiang Shan didn't want to die, he was afraid of dying, especially after having seen Du Gu Ye's head get swallowed by the dragon. Especially after watching the two other bodies disappear. Jiang Shan was starting to get the feeling that life was an extremely fragile thing.

"Let me go. If you let me live, I will always obey your orders." Said Jiang Shan while looking at Lin Feng, he then added: "If you need help with anything, I will help, even if you want to destroy the Hao Yue Sect."

Lin Feng looked like he wanted to burst into laughter as the situation was extremely funny. That was a genius of the Hao Yue Sect, ready to betray when things got dangerous, how ridiculous!

"I will deal with the Hao Yue Sect myself, I don't need your help." Said Lin Feng in a cold and detached tone. The head of the terrifying purple dragon was rising into the air, its gigantic eyes were looking down at Jiang Shan which made him start to shake with fear.

Du Gu Ye wasn't able to fight against that dragon, Jiang Shan knew that he would be even less likely to survive, so what could he do?

"What can I do for you to let me go?" Asked Jiang Shan.

“No matter what, I will not let you go.” Replied Lin Feng calmly. He then took a step forwards which made Jiang Shan tremble.

As Lin Feng was getting nearer and nearer, Jiang Shan was growing more and more scared. Was he going to die?

Jiang Shan hadn't thought that fighting against Lin Feng would lead to his death.

A thumping sound then filled the air which surprised Lin Feng. He only saw Jiang Shan kneeling down and prostrating himself.

“There is no intense and deep-seated hatred between us, why do you want to kill me? Please! I will do whatever you ask.” Shouted Jiang Shan, whose face turned scarlet red. Lin Feng looked like he was going to double over with laughter.

Outside of the illusion, the crowd by the lake was watching everything, they were astonished, especially the members of the Hao Yue Sect.

A genius of the Hao Yue Sect, their best core disciple, was kneeling down in front of Lin Feng and begging him. How ridiculous!

But Lin Feng was really extremely strong. His strength was so profound that everybody was secretly shocked.

After all, the people who had seen Lin Feng kill twelve cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer weren't numerous, they were all people from the Celestial Academy, but at that moment, the whole crowd saw Lin Feng easily defeat three genius cultivators who belonged to three of the greatest spheres of influence in the country.

Actually, calling them geniuses wasn't the right.

The term "genius" was relative, it depended on whom a cultivator was facing. There was a great deal of people who were young and had already broken through to the Xuan Qi layer, that itself was a rare achievement, but in front of Lin Feng, it meant nothing. The worst part was that those three people were supposed to be stronger than him.

But at that moment, two of them were already dead and one of them was kneeling in front of Lin Feng begging for his life, could they still be called geniuses?

The people of the Hao Yue Sect were all pulling long faces. If their most talented disciple had to die, it wasn't such a big deal, but he made such a shameful display in front of everybody.

Millions of people watched the most talented disciple of the Hao Yue Sect kneel down in front of Lin Feng and beg for his life, which gave Chu Qing the feeling that he was being slapped by each of the millions of people, his face felt extremely as hot and painful as if he was actually being slapped. Jiang Shan was making him lose face.

At that moment, Chu Zhan Peng and Lin Qian who were with the

group from the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue also felt embarrassed.

“Piece of trash, if Lin Feng doesn’t kill you, I will personally kill you.” Thought Chu Zhan Peng, he looked glum and released a deadly energy. When he watched the three people attacking Lin Feng, he felt relieved and confident, Lin Feng’s strength wasn’t as monstrous as the rumours. If Lin Feng came out, Chu Zhan Peng would definitely be able to kill him.

However, Chu Zhan Peng wouldn’t need to kill Jiang Shan himself, even though he was kneeling down in front of Lin Feng, he wasn’t showing any signs of forgiving him, Lin Feng was unmoving when it came to his enemies.

Jiang Shan’s body was then sent out from inside the illusion. Chu Zhan Peng let out a long sigh. His silhouette turned into a gigantic roc and in a flash, he appeared above the lake.

“BOOM!” A deadly energy emerged crashed into the body and turned Jiang Shan’s body into ashes. He had disappeared from the world without a trace. The wings of the legendary roc flickered and Chu Zhan Peng returned to his original position.

All of the people who attacked Lin Feng had died!

On the bank of the lake, an old man wearing a magnificent chang pao was hugging a dead body which no longer had a head. The old man raised his head and looked inside the illusion while releasing an ice-cold energy.

The most outstanding young cultivators of the Du Gu Clan had been repeatedly humiliated by Lin Feng! One of them had even lost his arms... and then, even the incredible Du Gu Ye lost his life!

Lin Feng was bullying the Du Gu Clan too much!

Du Gu Ye had wanted to kill Lin Feng and even attacked by surprise, however if he didn't attack, would Lin Feng go out of his way to attack members of the Du Gu Clan?

At that moment, inside the illusion, the massacre was continuing. The crowd was starting to get a rough understanding of who the strongest and most gifted ones were.

Inside the illusion, there had initially been thirty-two people but at that moment, only twelve were left alive. Those left could be considered as the future heroes.

Twenty geniuses had already been killed. In the frame of that death game, people were heartlessly slaughtering their competition.

Maybe they hadn't even thought about such an event when they received their invitation letter. They hadn't thought that they would end up slaughtering each other in front of millions of people in order to move on to the Great Competition of Xue Yu, and those who died, probably hadn't thought that their lives would end in such tragic conditions.

The twelve people left were attracting everybody's attention.

Ling Tian was one of them, he looked extremely conceited, and very arrogant, especially when he had told the crowd to remember his name. He was the one who had killed the most people so far. Each time, a single sword attack was enough to kill his opponent. His sword was extremely ruthless.

Besides, Ling Tian's fellow disciple also had terrifying strength. She had already killed a few people with her own power. The things made people wonder who the two people of the Ling Clan really were and who their teacher was?

Lin Feng's accomplishments in that death game were obvious. Then, there was She Qiong. She Qiong's strength was also terrifying, he had killed two people already and it had been very easy for him. His opponents didn't even have a chance to fight back. At that moment, She Qiong was still facing Lin Feng's lover, Meng Qing.

There was another person who received people's attention, Yun Fei Yang from Duan Ren City.

At that moment, it was very strange. He hadn't killed anyone, each time he saw an opponent, he looked very scared and tried to avoid them. However, each time there was someone that tried to prevent him from leaving in order to kill him, but they never managed to stop him.

Yun Fei Yang had even come across Ling Tian. He was the only

person who managed to escape after fighting against Ling Tian.

Therefore, Yun Fei Yang was extremely mysterious. People didn't know anything about him, they didn't even know how strong he would be if he fought.

In the people's opinion, those left inside the illusion were the strongest and most talented. If they came across such people on the outside, they would be extremely scared.

People were scared of She Qiong and Lin Feng the most. She Qiong was fighting against Meng Qing. If Lin Feng moved up, he would definitely encounter the situation.

But Lin Feng, who was inside the illusion, couldn't see the events like the crowd outside who could see everything. At that moment, he was wandering around like a blind man, everybody was paying close attention to him.

Lin Feng didn't feel at ease. This game reminded him of the memories from his previous world. He had that same old feeling of being a toy in someone else's hands.

But Lin Feng also understood that his strength wasn't enough to break the illusion so all he could do was abide by its rules and find the people he wanted to kill!

Chapter 426: Planned Actions!

Lin Feng didn't waste any time, there were extremely strong cultivators inside the illusion and it was dangerous.

He met Ling Tian near Duan Wu Ya's residence and he seemed extremely strong, Lin Feng could sense an overflowing power.

There was also She Qiong. She Qiong and Lin Feng had already fought. Back then, She Qiong had only broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer and during the battle, he revealed his flood dragon spirit, it was extremely powerful. After that, he had confined himself and cultivated even harder which enabled him to rapidly break through and improve his strength.

Those two were both powerful and harboured ill will towards Lin Feng. If Meng Qing came across them, how terrifying would that be?

Besides, inside the illusion, there wasn't a single weak person, even though Meng Qing was extremely strong, if Jiang Shan and the others had acted together to fight against Meng Qing instead of Lin Feng, it would have been a terrible result.

Therefore, Lin Feng couldn't delay his search for Meng Qing.

His silhouette flickered and he arrived in front of one of the doors, that new room was extremely vast but there wasn't a single person inside. There was only blood stains on the ground which meant that people had died here, but the bodies had disappeared.

Lin Feng didn't stop there, his silhouette flickered again and he continued to another door to check another room.

"Nobody here either..." Lin Feng frowned, he suddenly felt even less at ease. There were very few people which meant that many of them were already dead. Lin Feng was extremely scared that something might have happened to Meng Qing.

His silhouette flickered through the many rooms inside the illusion, even when coming across other people, he just continued his search and those people didn't provoke him either. After all, Lin Feng was very well known. Even though those people might have desired to fight with him, they didn't gamble when their life was at stake, it wasn't worth it.

"How come I can't find her!" Lin Feng had already been to twenty rooms, but he still couldn't find Meng Qing. He was becoming more and more anxious and worried.

"We were thirty-two people when we entered the illusion, but there are so many rooms. Maybe there is a very low chance of encountering her, but I don't believe that after going to every single room, I still won't find her." Lin Feng was stupefied. His silhouette flickered again.

"Are you looking for that girl?" Asked a voice from behind him. There was a figure leaning against the wall inside the room, that person was looking at Lin Feng with a resplendent smile.

Lin Feng stopped walking and looked at that person, it was Yun Fei Yang.

Yun Fei Yang had said that he was from Duan Ren City so Lin Feng had conflicting thoughts on what he should think about him.

“Do you know where she is?” Asked Lin Feng to Yun Fei Yang.

Yun Fei Yang smiled and shook his head: “I don’t but I do know that you probably won’t be able to find her.”

Lin Feng frowned, a cold light ran through his eyes as he asked: “What do you mean?”

“Of course, I am only guessing, but you have been to every single room and you still haven’t found her, that’s obvious. You should probably hurry up.” Said Yun Fei Yang smiling as before. He looked so sluggish and bored that it made Lin Feng frown even more firmly, his eyes also grew colder as before.

Lin Feng didn’t look at Yun Fei Yang again and continued to move through all the rooms one more time. He came across many people, including Ling Tian’s fellow disciple but they did not fight each other. Lin Feng’s top priority was to find Meng Qing.

Lin Feng also saw Ling Tian but they didn’t provoke each other either.

A short while after, the look on Lin Feng’s face grew extremely

worried.

He went to every room and ended up back in the same place. What Yun Fei Yang said was really happening. He was still leaning against the wall and he hadn't moved in the slightest.

When he saw Lin Feng come back, he didn't look surprised at all. He only smiled and said: "It seems like I was right. The Nine Dragon Palace deserves its reputation."

"Nine Dragon Palace!" Lin Feng was stupefied, he looked at Yun Fei Yang and said: "You know what's going on here, right?"

Yun Fei Yang nodded indifferently and said: "I know that they don't want you to find her. So everything you try inside the illusion will be in vain."

A dangerous light flashed in Lin Feng's eyes. Someone didn't want him to find Meng Qing?

Lin Feng opened his mouth, he wanted to say something but Yun Fei Yang interrupted him.

"No need to speak, I know what you want to say. I will go but you cannot come with me, otherwise I cannot guarantee that I will be able to find her."

After saying that, Yun Fei Yang immediately left. Lin Feng was surprised and watched his back as he disappeared. He wanted to

follow him but forced himself to remain. Lin Feng had the feeling that Yun Fei Yang was being honest and he didn't feel like he was being lied to.

“Who doesn't want me to find Meng Qing...?” Thought Lin Feng with an extremely cold expression in his eyes. This illusion was created by the man by the throne, he was controlling everything, so it must be him!

Maybe they were really trying to prevent him from finding Meng Qing.

“Apart from Meng Qing, I haven't seen She Qiong either.” Thought Lin Feng suddenly. She Qiong was extremely strong, the probability of him dying was extremely low. Maybe She Qiong and Meng Qing had encountered each other. Lin Feng didn't dare think about it, maybe that would really happen.

Besides, he was part of the Imperial City and She Qiong was an officer of the Imperial City Guards. She Qiong even dared rush to Duan Xin Ye's living quarters and cause trouble which meant that he had a very important and influential background in the Imperial City. All those things could explain everything.

Lin Feng felt extremely nervous. Besides, outside of the illusion, people could see everything clearly which stupefied them.

It was actually exactly the way Yun Fei Yang described the situation, they didn't want Lin Feng to find Meng Qing and the crowd could clearly see that the different rooms of the palace

continued moving around and each time that Lin Feng was about to reach Meng Qing, the rooms abruptly changed position, therefore, Lin Feng never had the opportunity to enter the same room.

In the illusion, people had the impression that they were in a huge room but to the people outside of the illusion, they could see how small and narrow each room actually was. All those rooms constituted a pattern of magical squares, and everybody seemed like they were only one step away from the other.

“The girl with Lin Feng is terrifying and dangerous!”

When the crowd saw Meng Qing and She Qiong’s battle, they saw how incredibly strong Meng Qing was, but She Qiong was still stronger and he had a clear advantage over her.

“You’re so shameless!” Shouted someone on the lake which broke the silence. Everybody was stupefied and turned towards that person.

It was a young man but he was audacious, he was insulting the person who was controlling the illusion.

“Since you created this as a test, why are you not letting things happen without influencing them. Why are you preventing Lin Feng from seeing Meng Qing and She Qiong? You’re too shameless.” When Duan Feng saw that Meng Qing had been injured, his facial expression became ice-cold, he couldn’t help but loudly voice his opinion.

The man looked at the ground and glanced at Duan Feng indifferently while smiling coldly.

“I am the one controlling the illusion so I can do as I wish. Besides, I am helping Lin Feng by doing this, if he encountered She Qiong, he would die.” Said the man calmly before adding: “Besides, since when does a little boy like you have the right to open their mouth and tell me what I have to do! Get lost!” While talking, the man released a monstrous pure Qi which immediately rushed through the air. In a flash, it arrived in front of Duan Feng.

Duan Feng pulled a long face but instead of moving back, he threw himself at it, he joined his hands and released his pure Qi which bombarded the atmosphere.

“BOOM!” Duan Feng’s wasn’t strong enough to compete. The pure Qi passed through Duan Feng’s attack and crashed onto his body which caused Duan Feng to cough up blood. His body was also blown away and he crashed onto the ground. His face was deathly pale.

“Old fool!” Duan Feng raised his head and insulted again. From behind his back, his spirit was released, the energy of the sealed doors was growing stronger and stronger.

“Sealed Doors Spirit!” The man was surprised, he fixedly stared at Duan Feng for a while and then quickly looked behind him towards the golden throne, surprisingly it was a sealed doors spirit.

That was the blood spirit of the Imperial Clan!

“Your family name is Duan?” Asked the man.

“Why do you care? Old fool!” Cursed Duan Feng again.

“Hmph, since your family name is Duan, I will not kill you.”
Grinned the man and he then ignored Duan Feng.

Chapter 427: Cold Heart

Inside the illusion, two cultivators were locked in an intense battle. Meng Qing's face was covered with blood but the coldness she released from her body was becoming increasingly powerful.

The room was slowly being covered by a layer of ice, sending a piercing chill to the bone. The cold air was becoming more brutal with each passing moment.

“You are very stubborn, I have broken through to the fourth Xuan Qi layer, in terms of strength and power, Lin Feng is not my equal. What is the downside to being intimate with me? Do you want me to use force?” said She Qiong slowly while looking at Meng Qing. Meng Qing had a touching and moving expression in her eyes. She was very stubborn and tenacious. Besides, she still looked high-spirited and determined. She Qiong initially didn't like Meng Qing, he liked Duan Xin Ye, he just wanted to play with Meng Qing. He wanted to have fun with Lin Feng's lover and make Lin Feng lose face. However, he was starting to like her more and more.

If Meng Qing could become his woman, that would be great, they were a good match in his eyes.

Of course, that feeling was not mutually shared. When Meng Qing heard She Qiong, she released an even stronger ice Qi, the power was also growing more brutal, as if the atmosphere was going to freeze.

“Stop being so obstinate, you cannot compete with me, and don’t count on anyone coming to save you because nobody can.” Said She Qiong in a cold and detached tone when he sensed that Meng Qing’s ice Qi was growing more intense.

“So that’s how it is, an officer of the Imperial City Guards likes to take advantage of other people’s women.” A sluggish voice sounded which stupefied She Qiong. Immediately after, he saw someone open the door of the room and slowly enter.

“Huh?” She Qiong frowned when he saw the person who entered. Immediately after, his eyes were filled with murderous intent.

“Who do you think you are to intervene in my affairs?” Said She Qiong coldly. Immediately after, he took a step forwards and released a monstrous Qi which rushed through the atmosphere towards Yun Fei Yang.

“Die!” Shouted She Qiong furiously. A terrifying deadly energy had enveloped She Qiong’s body. She Qiong planned to kill him for involving himself in something which had nothing to do with him.

Yun Fei Yang looked at She Qiong who was moving closer and closer to him, suddenly, the smile on his face disappeared and he released a shockingly sharp Qi which created a storm around him. His clothes were fluttering under the power of the storm.

“Die!” She Qiong shouted while punching forwards. A dangerous light could be seen in Yun Fei Yang’s eyes. Not only did he not

retreat, but he charged forwards instead. He raised his fist and also unleashed a terrifying punch towards She Qiong.

“BOOOM!!” A terrifying wind was blasted in every direction. Their fists collided with the force of a mountain, and they remained absolutely still. Their clothes were still fluttering in the wind and they were both looking at the other person’s eyes.

“Get lost!” Yun Fei Yang slightly moved. He took an extremely small step forward but the Qi and force which he had condensed emerged from his fist. She Qiong’s body was instantly projected backwards by a few steps.

How strong! Yun Fei Yang’s strength was terrifying. She Qiong was unable to harm Yun Fei Yang and on the contrary, he was the one who was sent flying backwards.

She Qiong was full of confidence when it came to his cultivation but at that moment, in front of everyone, he had just been projected backwards by an absolute stranger, someone whom nobody even knew about.

She Qiong wasn’t the only one who was left astonished, the people outside of the illusion were also astonished. Yun Fei Yang seemed like he was the most mysterious person of all, he didn’t fight but when he did, it was terrifying.

She Qiong had been forced backwards by such a small movement. Even though it didn’t mean that he was definitely stronger than She Qiong, it at least proved that his explosive power was much

more tyrannical than that of She Qiong.

The fog of the illusion started to move through the atmosphere, the full moon still looked lonely and desolate but it still hung beautifully in the sky.

A few silhouettes started to appear in the crowd's field of vision, they didn't look like distant figures any longer.

The light of the full moon was shining down upon those silhouettes and the calm lake beneath them.

The fog had dispersed and the illusion had disappeared.

The people who were inside before were now standing in front of the crowd.

There were six people. From the thirty-two people who had entered the illusion, only six were left.

She Qiong, Yun Fei Yang, Lin Feng, Meng Qing as well as Ling Tian and his fellow disciple.

The others were all killed, whether it be the people of the Wan Shou Sect or the Yu Clan, all the geniuses who belonged to those groups were dead. That was an unprecedented loss for them.

Besides, the six people left were also the strongest people from

the group, everybody had seen their strength with their own eyes.

However, Ling Tian was the one who had killed the most people.

Nobody had dared to provoke She Qiong, but Meng Qing fought against him, she hadn't spared any effort and managed to suppress him until Yun Fei Yang appeared and forced her back.

Lin Feng's strength was obvious from the ambush on him.

These six people remained firm and tenacious and managed to come out of the illusion alive. That was already enough evidence that they were extremely gifted cultivators. Unfortunately, the other geniuses were all dead and were used as stepping stones for the surviving cultivators.

A short time before, they had all been high-spirited and full of life, they all wished that everybody would remember their name throughout Xue Yue, but reality was cruel. No matter how strong they had been, their opponents were even stronger.

The moonlight was shining down upon Lin Feng's body. He turned around and looked towards Meng Qing. He could see that Meng Qing's face was deathly pale and there was traces of blood around her mouth, which sent a shiver of fear down his spine.

"Meng Qing!" Lin Feng's silhouette flickered and he immediately landed next to Meng Qing. He took out a pill and put it in Meng Qing's mouth. Meng Qing opened her mouth and swallowed the

pill. When she saw Lin Feng, the ice around her body disappeared in a flash, and a brilliant and magnificent smile appeared on her face.

Next to that smile, it seemed like the beauty of the moon didn't exist any longer. She looked so beautiful in Lin Feng's eyes. The crowd also found that smile to be so beautiful that it made their hearts accelerate.

What a beautiful woman! Her clothes were whiter than snow, and the moonlight was shining upon the fine gauze on her face, she really looked like a celestial being.

When Lin Feng saw that Meng Qing's cheeks were regaining a trace of colour, he slowly turned around and looked towards Yun Fei Yang and She Qiong.

He only glanced at Yun Fei Yang for a second and then looked at She Qiong with a merciless glare. Lin Feng's face was filled with pure killing intent.

As if She Qiong had sensed Lin Feng's glare, he turned around and looked at Lin Feng: "You don't deserve to be her lover, she should be my woman."

"Sword!" Lin Feng ignored what She Qiong said and immediately moved forwards while slowly raising his hand.

A whistling sound emerged in the air around Lin Feng. Lin Feng

suddenly condensed a terrifying sword energy and pure Qi into a sword which materialized in his hand.

She Qiong frowned and groaned. At the same time, he also released a powerful Qi which moved straight towards Lin Feng. Both their energies collided in the air.

“What a terrifying power. She Qiong’s strength is monstrous.” Thought the people in the crowd while looking impatient. Lin Feng and She Qiong were both geniuses, they had both passed the first test. Finally, the crowd had the opportunity to see them fight so they were impatient to see the outcome of the battle.

But She Qiong had broken through to the fourth Xuan Qi layer and Lin Feng had only broken through to the second Xuan Qi layer. Even though he was able to kill cultivators of the third Xuan Qi layer, fighting against She Qiong who was of the fourth Xuan Qi layer was a much more difficult task.

The crowd thought that the situation could be worse for Lin Feng. However, Yun Fei Yang, the mysterious man, was able to send She Qiong flying back, even though he was at the fourth Xuan Qi layer. Yun Fei Yang must be extremely strong.

“That’s enough.” Said the old man at that moment while glancing at She Qiong and Lin Feng. He then said slowly: “You six, thanks to your determination and tenacity, have passed the first test. You are all quite good. With the eight high-officials, you are now fourteen people. Now, all of you can exchange a few pointers. Let’s see who the strongest ones in this group are.”

“You can now freely fight against whomever you wish.” Said the old man indifferently which astonished everybody. They could fight against whomever they wished, the battles of the six remaining people and the eight high-officials were definitely going to be incredible! The crowd was bursting with excitement.

People rarely had the opportunity to see the eight high-officials in battle, not many people knew exactly what their cultivation levels were these days.

Lin Feng glanced at the old man in a cold and detached way. Yun Fei Yang was right. If he hadn't wasn't able to find Meng Qing, it was because of the old man who was controlling the illusion. The old man had done it on purpose.

As if the old man had seen Lin Feng looking at him, he said coldly: “The people who are at weaker cultivation levels should fight against the other weak ones first, it would be a pity for them to die at the beginning fighting a strong opponent.”

The old man was obviously mocking Lin Feng because She Qiong's cultivation level was higher than Lin Feng by two whole layers.

Chapter 428: The Flood Dragon Warp Fist!

“Your name is Yun Fei Yang?” She Qiong asked after the old man finished talking. She Qiong was fixedly staring at Yun Fei Yang.

He knew that the crowd below had been able to see them in the illusion for a moment, so they had seen how Yun Fei Yang had made him move back. They knew about it so She Qiong felt humiliated. He had to take his revenge.

She Qiong wasn't in a hurry to kill Lin Feng, he was only in the second Xuan Qi layer, killing Lin Feng would be easy. The only thing that scared him a little bit was Lin Feng's black lotus.

“Indeed.” Replied Yun Fei Yang indifferently. He looked sluggish again, which gave the impression that he was despised by She Qiong.

Such an indolent attitude made She Qiong pull a long face, and he said: “We will fight first!”

Yun Fei Yang smiled and glanced at Lin Feng, he then said: “It seems like I will be the first one to fight.”

Yun Fei Yang made a step to immediately land above the lake. His clothes were fluttering in the wind, his sluggish appearance disappeared and sharp lights started flashing in his eyes.

“Come!”

“Let’s fight!” Said She Qiong moving towards the air above the lake as well while releasing an insane amount of Qi. His entire body seemed like it was filled with infinite strength.

Lin Feng looked cold and detached, since She Qiong and Yun Fei Yang were fighting first, he had to wait for his turn.

“Let’s see your strength!” Said She Qiong in a cold and detached way. In the illusion, Yun Fei Yang had pushed She Qiong backwards, She Qiong couldn’t forgive him.

“As you wish.” Yun Fei Yang’s hair and clothes were fluttering in the wind.

Everybody was looking at Yun Fei Yang, who said he came from Duan Ren City. Apparently, his strength was enough to face the most outstanding disciples of the country. At that moment, he really had the air of an extremely strong cultivator, natural and unrestrained.

She Qiong released a terrifying strength with his pure Qi. A hideous and ferocious looking flood dragon then appeared and rushed towards Yun Fei Yang as if it wanted to eat him alive.

“Flood Dragon: Warp Fist!”

Yun Fei Yang’s eyes looked ice-cold, he looked a bit surprised as well. Warp fist was a Di level skill of medium quality! It was like a

dragon filled with infinite physical strength, it had a monstrous explosive power.

She Qiong condensed his pure Qi. At that moment, the flood dragon had its own body and was accumulating its own type of energy.

“Kacha, kacha!” The sound of cracking bones emerged from Yun Fei Yang’s body. They suddenly saw his chang pao flutter in an even more violent fashion as the whistling sounds in the air became even more intense. His entire body looked like it contained unlimited strength which dated back to ancient times. It was shocking!

“What are those?” Wondered people in the crowd when they saw the powerful skills. Both of them were extremely strong and fast.

“Duan Ren City has given birth to such a strong cultivator?” She Qiong’s facial expression looked ice-cold, he then added: “Since you are an expert at using physical strength, let’s see how you plan to receive my fist.” While talking, She Qiong’s flood dragon started to rise up in the air. It looked extraordinary.

“As you wish!” Said Yun Fei Yang as if he only knew how to repeat those three words again and again. She Qiong could just fight as he wished, did it matter to him? At that moment, Yun Fei Yang’s Qi was also rising into the air.

“Roarrrr.....” The flood dragon roared. She Qiong took a huge step and released his brutal Qi and his flood dragon started moving

towards Yun Fei Yang.

“Rage.”

Yun Fei Yang took a few steps forward and a furious sea of energy surged into his hand and condensed. It was a spectacular sight to behold. Then, his deadly Qi was released.

Those two people stepped forwards, the earth and the sky seemed to shake under their pressure. It was scary and majestic.

“What a monstrous strength.” Thought the crowd while looking at those two people’s steps. That battle was breathtaking, the people’s heart started pounding. Those two people were at the same level, they had both broken through to the fourth Xuan Qi layer. The most terrifying was that their explosive power was much more brutal than that of a normal cultivator of the fourth Xuan Qi layer.

“If Lin Feng fought against She Qiong, he would definitely lose.” Some people suddenly thought. She Qiong’s strength was way too monstrous. If he had a cultivator of the third Xuan Qi layer in front of him, he would kill them in a flash.

“Roaaarr....” Another roar spread through the atmosphere. Those extremely loud rumbling sounds painfully pierced through some people’s eardrums, it seemed like the entire atmosphere was vibrating. The atmosphere above the lake had been invaded by a Qi storm and those terrifying energies had completely enveloped She Qiong and Yun Fei Yang’s bodies.

Who had won? Who had lost?

A few moments after, the explosive energy dispersed. The two fighters had moved backwards. She Qiong's clothes were ripped apart and some Qi was undulating around him. Yun Fei Yang's hair looked extremely messy and his face had turned deathly pale.

Both their mouths showed signs of blood. They were fixedly staring at each other.

“As expected, the Di level skill of medium quality, the flood dragon warp fist is extremely strong.” Thought Yun Fei Yang.

She Qiong was fixedly staring at Yun Fei Yang and thought: “There is some strange dark energy inside his deadly energy... such a terrifying dark energy... If I hadn't paid attention, then that attack would have severely injured me.”

The two fighters were discovering how shocking their mutual strengths were.

“That's enough. You two are incredible geniuses, go and have a rest.” Said the old man slowly. At that moment, Lin Feng took a step in the air and said in a cold and detached way: “Wait, wait!”

“Huh?” people were stupefied. After having witnessed She Qiong's monstrous strength, did Lin Feng still want to fight against him? Would he dare?

“You want to fight?” Asked She Qiong in an ice-cold way while fixedly staring at Lin Feng. The latter wanted to die.

“Indeed.” Replied Lin Feng in an ice-cold way. He wouldn’t be able to set his mind at ease if he didn’t kill She Qiong.

“Hmph.” Groaned the old man before saying: “If you want to die, you don’t need to be so impatient. Besides, She Qiong just finished one battle and you want to take advantage of him because he is exhausted. Let him have a rest, if you want to fight, you can fight against somebody else first.”

Lin Feng coldly glanced at the old man, he was clearly protecting She Qiong.

“Since it’s that way, I will fight against somebody else.” Replied Lin Feng indifferently. The old man looked glum, he glanced at She Qiong and Yun Fei Yang and said: “You two can come back.”

She Qiong coldly glanced at Lin Feng, his silhouette flickered and he left the area, followed by Yun Fei Yang.

Above the lake, there was only Lin Feng left and the old man who was overseeing the competition.

Lin Feng wanted to fight but... Against whom?

“Against whom will you fight? Hurry up and speak!” Said the old man coldly. Everybody was looking forward to seeing whom Lin Feng would choose as an opponent.

She Qiong couldn't fight against him, Yun Fei Yang seemed to be on Lin Feng's side so he wasn't going to choose him. The only people left were the eight high-officials and the two people of the Ling Clan.

Ling Tian was monstrously strong, he had killed the most people in the illusion. But would Lin Feng choose a woman as a first opponent?

Lin Feng then glanced around at everybody. He had already met five of the eight high-officials before, the second ranked Yue Tian Ming, the third ranked Wu Qing of the Wan Shou Sect, the fourth ranked Duan Wu Ya as well as the sixth and seventh ranked, respectively Chu Zhan Peng and Luo Xue. He had never seen the strongest of the group, Duan Wu Dao, and it was said that the fifth and eighth ranked were brothers from the Yu Clan.

At that moment, Chu Zhan Peng, on the side of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, was looking at Lin Feng in a despising way, while releasing his killing intent.

“After that battle, I still want to fight against She Qiong so I will fight against Chu Zhan Peng later.” Thought Lin Feng. Finally, he looked at Ling Tian.

Ling Tian was stupefied and suddenly looked ice-cold. Lin Feng

seemingly wanted to choose him as a first opponent.

Ling Tian and Lin Feng's battle was, in any case, unavoidable.

“Get your ass over here.” Said Lin Feng indifferently which stupefied Ling Tian. Lin Feng was extremely rude when talking to him.

The crowd was astonished as well. Even when facing authentically outstanding geniuses, Lin Feng was still as shocking as ever. Those people weren't like those few people of the Wan Shou Sect, each and every single one of them was a dazzling and glorious genius. They were the most outstanding young people of Xue Yue.

Ling Tian pulled a long face and stepped forwards, immediately arriving in front of Lin Feng, while releasing some ice-cold energy.

The full moon was as brilliant as before, its dreary light was shining upon the two fighters which gave people a sad and lonely feeling. That night, some geniuses were rising, but many others were falling.

Those extremely strong geniuses were showing how powerful they were by taking other geniuses' lives, and only with enough bloodshed would they be able to look down upon Xue Yue.

The rise and fall of the geniuses was happening in front of millions of cultivators from Xue Yue.

Lin Feng had surprised the entire country many times but on that night, would he be able to continue...? Or would he fall? Everybody was impatient to see his first battle!

Chapter 429: Deadly Energy

“Do you regret it?” Asked Lin Feng to Ling Tian in a cold tone which surprised Ling Tian.

“Ridiculous, what regrets could I, Ling Tian, have?” Ling Tian was staring at Lin Feng with dangerous lights twinkling in his eyes.

“You and I don’t have any previous grudge, but you came to Yangzhou City and killed some of my troops. I, Lin Feng, must avenge them, which is why I came here to find you.”

When Lin Feng saw Ling Tian’s expression, he correctly understood that the latter didn’t care at all, and even less regretted his actions. Lin Feng’s face was filled with murder; he had to make Ling Tian feel an endless regret before dying.

“You came indeed, and now you are courting death.” Replied Ling Tian while looking at Lin Feng, he then continued: “I initially didn’t intend to kill you but since you have a death wish, I, Ling Tian, will help you achieve your aim.”

When he finished taking, Ling Tian unsheathed his sword from his back which whistled as it cut through the air. It was then shot from his sheath and into the sky spinning around.

Ling Tian stretched out his hand and caught the spinning sword as it was falling.

That sword was extremely shiny, and it looked as sharp as the autumn rain.

“Help me achieve my aim?” Lin Feng smiled coldly and started releasing a deadly energy as his sword Qi started revolving violently. He started to condense a pure Qi sword in his hand; energies were revolving and whistling through the air as they were released.

“In front of me, you dare to use a sword.” Said Ling Tian while taking a step forwards. It was as if his entire body had transformed into a sword and he was shooting through the air towards Lin Feng.

“Whether I dare or not, you will see.” Said Lin Feng while rushing through the air as well. At that moment, in his heart, there was only sword energy, there was only the path of the sword. His sword was alive.

“What terrifying sword energies.” Sighed the crowd in amazement. Those two fighters weren’t like She Qiong and Yun Fei Yang who used terrifying amounts of Qi making the atmosphere tremble, but Lin Feng and Ling Tian were using extremely refined sword Qi. That kind of sword Qi was the most lethal. These energies didn’t look terrifying but if they reached their opponent, only a corpse would remain.

Both of the swords lacerated the atmosphere as they emitted tearing sounds around them. They weren’t terrifying, but the

whistling and tearing sounds like the sword cut through the air was spine chilling. In the air, those two swords looked almost desolate as they approached each other under the full moon.

It was as if those swords had been made of water; they looked almost like a dream under the moonlight. Those swords were alive, and each one was displaying its full power.

Ling Tian's body suddenly spun through the air and moved back, at the same time, Lin Feng, dodged the sword point which was thrust towards him.

They had both avoided that attack, both of their attacks were aimed to kill.

Ling Tian looked prouder and prouder of himself; he was still looking down upon Lin Feng. He looked over and said: "You're not bad at using a sword, to my surprise, you could exchange an attack with me. It was at least an energy attack... Or maybe that you have already discovered the secrets of sword fusion, but unfortunately, you are far weaker than me. On the path of sword cultivation, I will always be stronger than you. During our battle, you can only die." Said Ling Tian proudly. He was giving the impression that Lin Feng couldn't compete with him and that he was just wasting his time.

"You think that you have already won?" Joked Lin Feng in a cold tone. Where did Ling Tian's sudden pride come from?

"I haven't yet but it's the same as winning, there is no difference.

The sword attack I just carried out was a test of your ability, I just wanted to see what you were capable of.” Said Ling Tian while coldly looking at Lin Feng. He then said slowly: “With my next sword attack, you will die!”

Ling Tian said that he was only testing Lin Feng, how terrifying was his real attack!

A moment before, in the illusion, Ling Tian had shown how dominant he was, he was a truly powerful cultivator. Killing other people had been extremely easy for Ling Tian. He hadn't need to use his full strength at all.

“Well, hurry up and show me your strongest sword attack then, I'm waiting to see how you plan to kill me.” Said Lin Feng indifferently which astonished Ling Tian. Lin Feng was asking him to use his strongest sword attack; he was simply asking to die.

Lin Feng was as audacious as ever; he now considered Ling Tian beneath his notice. He was looking down on Ling Tian's arrogance.

Ling Tian was stupefied, he narrowed his eyes, and killing intent shone in his pupils.

“Since you're so impatient to die, I won't drag this out.” Said Ling Tian proudly. In his hand appeared a bright and thin sword. He raised it and the thousand lights that shone from it astonished the crowd.

“This sword is a light energy sword, light can pierce through everything, you cannot stop it. Being able to die under this sword is an honour for you. You can die happily.”

When Ling Tian stopped talking, his sword started absorbing the light energy which was around it, making it seem more dazzling, the crowd watching were blinded by all the rays of light.

That sword was incredibly dazzling, and those rays of light kept moving towards Lin Feng.

That sword was extremely sharp, dazzling and agile like a light.

“Look at the magnificence of my sword before dying. You will die content.” Said Ling Tian sounding indifferent. He suddenly spun in the air and pointed his sword in the direction of the lake. In a flash, a green-blue light emerged from his sword and then immediately disappeared, as if it had never even existed.

A subtle sound reached everyone’s ears stupefying them. What was going on? They had just seen a beam of light shot from the sword, and then it disappeared, that was a light energy sword?

The crowd looked on blankly, they didn’t understand, what exactly was so great about this sword?

“Crrr... Crrrr....” A sound emerged from the water of the lake. In a flash, the crowd reacted. Immediately after, a beam of light emerged from the lake where the sword was pointing, shooting

into the sky, it reached a few hundred meters of altitude, after that, a column of water burst into the air. Rumbling sounds spread through the air, and the entire lake looked like it was boiling. It was an astonishing sight.

“What a terrifying sword.” Thought the crowd dumbstruck. They hadn’t even seen the attack apparently, so many were still wondering what was happening. If they blinked, they might not have even notice Ling Tian attacking, but that sword clearly had a destructive potential, people’s hearts were pounding.

That astonishing sword, the light energy sword was terrifying.

When Ling Tian saw the people’s facial expressions, he felt extremely satisfied with himself; then he looked at Lin Feng again.

“You must be happy to die under such magnificence.” Said Ling Tian indifferently. His eyes were filled with arrogance. He wanted to see the fear in Lin Feng’s eyes.

Ling Tian’s female fellow disciple was smiling with pride. That light sword had almost reached its ultimate power. It was nearly impossible to block it, even for Lin Feng. Many people couldn’t even see the sword attack, so they usually died before they even unleashed their attacks. Besides, people usually couldn’t feel any threat coming from the sword, the deadly power of the sword was explosive yet hidden. When the opponent saw the attack being released, it was already too late.

Ling Tian wanted to see Lin Feng regret and fear him; he wanted

Lin Feng to do kneel down and prostrate himself. However, considering Lin Feng's current expression, he didn't show any fear and had no interest in Ling Tian. Lin Feng just looked calm, terrifyingly calm and serene. It looked like he wasn't even watching the display of power.

“Alright, are you done playing around?” Said Lin Feng in a cold and detached way which made Ling Tian's smile freeze. Many people felt their mouths widen in shock.

Play?

Lin Feng was thought that Ling Tian was playing?

“Alright, if you're done playing around, die.” Said Lin Feng. At the same time, he released a monstrous deadly energy.

His deadly energy was shockingly intense. It was the pure and unaltered deadly energy of a murderer. Lin Feng's body was just filled with pure murderous intention.

He raised his hand and deadly energy started revolving around him. Some pure Qi rolled through the air and began to condense. In Lin Feng's hand, a deadly black sword had appeared.

A black air of death rolled through the air and condensed into a black sword, a deadly black sword!

“A black sword!” People's pupils shrank. What a terrifying black

sword! It was astonishing. The scariest part was that Lin Feng looked like a death god at that moment, he was standing in the sky surrounded by deadly energy.

That deadly energy seemed like it could even steal the souls from its victims. The hearts of the people around the lake started pounding in fear.

“In the continent, there are many geniuses; you’re not the only one. Besides, other people have hidden their power as well. You think you are the only person who can be strong?... Poor you. You’re just a sad and pathetic fool; that’s all.”

The crowd was astonished. Lin Feng’s eyes were gradually turning pitch-black, and the atmosphere was being invaded by deadly energy. Lin Feng then threw himself at Ling Tian.

Ling Tian’s heart started palpitating violently. He couldn’t control himself anymore, Lin Feng’s deadly energy was terrifying.

He gnashed his teeth and took a step forwards; his body started shining like his light sword; he looked like a light beam inside the darkness.

But at that moment, the light from the sword couldn’t pierce through the darkness; it was submerged inside the deadly black energy which had filled the air.

“Die!” Shouted Lin Feng in a deep voice. His sword filled with

deadly energy fell from the sky; it seemed as if nothing, apart from that sword, existed in the world. The deadly energy felt like it could annihilate and subjugate everything in its path.

“Boom!” The light sword, when it collided with the deadly energy, burst into pieces. However, even though the light sword was extremely sharp and had a high explosive power, it was still nothing to this overwhelming deadly energy.

The endless stream of deadly energy was unstoppable. Now, on Ling Tian’s face, there appeared an expression of absolute despair and hopelessness.

Chapter 430: You will die!

“How is that possible?” Ling Tian looked terrified. That terrifying deadly Qi had destabilized his pace and train of thought, besides, it had also crushed his pride.

He had thought that with his light sword, Lin Feng was definitely going to meet his end. He thought that Lin Feng would never be able to stop such a powerful attack. However, Lin Feng had suddenly released that deadly energy which had shown Ling Tian how ignorant he truly was. That deadly energy had penetrated into the innermost part of his heart, it destroyed his determination, ardour and murderous intentions, it replaced them with fear and dread.

That sword was filled with such a powerful, deadly energy, but Lin Feng had only broken through to the second Xuan Qi layer, how could this be possible? But the reality was that Lin Feng had really released that terrifying deadly energy.

“Dodge!”

Ling Tian was terrified, he had only one thought, he wanted to run away.

Ling Tian started shaking with fear. Just like the laser from his sword, he shot away from Lin Feng at full speed. The deadly energy, which was bombarding its way through the atmosphere, was about to reach him.

Retreat? Did he still have a chance to retreat?

Ling Tian was extremely quick, one of the advantages of his light energy was speed, but Lin Feng was also extremely fast; just like the wind.

The deadly energy was following Lin Feng like a black cloud crashing through the air and he was closely following Ling Tian. He was moving getting nearer and nearer. Lin Feng only had to attack with his sword and Ling Tian would die.

However, Lin Feng didn't do that.

“Do you regret it?” Asked Lin Feng in an ice-cold mocking tone, after which his deadly energy enveloped Ling Tian's body, making his heart jump from his chest. Did he regret it?

“You think that everyone else is beneath you, you came to Yangzhou City, thinking of yourself as a majestic god of war and openly killed some of my brothers. You thought that you were untouchable, how arrogant. When you killed my people back then, did you think about the deadly consequences it would have?” Lin Feng's eyes were jet-black. He could kill Ling Tian at any point, but instead he was toying with him.

Ling Tian was a genius, he was extremely strong but at that moment he looked like a buffoon, Lin Feng was just playing with him like a cat would a mouse.

It looked like a theatre performance was being enacted. A short time before, everybody had thought that Ling Tian would easily defeat Lin Feng but the situation had drastically changed. Ling Tian hadn't used his full strength and mocked Lin Feng... But what about Lin Feng's full strength?

In the distance, Ling Tian's female fellow disciple was shaking. After hearing Lin Feng's words, she started shaking even more violently.

Back then, she was the person who said the words to Ling Tian which was why he landed in Yangzhou City and gave his display of how strong and proud he was. Back then, that girl hadn't thought about the consequences of those actions at all. She hadn't ever thought that Lin Feng would be strong enough to retaliate.

At that moment, Ling Tian obviously regretted his actions. He was young and had extremely high natural abilities but because of one small mistake, because he decided to kill a few nobodies to show off, he was standing on the verge of death. There was even a good chance of him dying for said actions.

The troops he killed in Yangzhou City wouldn't have attacked him or been any threat to him. Back then, he had just decided to show off and killed them for fun. He hadn't thought that killing those insignificant people could have such dire consequences. Those people were insects in his eyes. He had just wanted to kill them for his own pride and fun, so what? He had even shouted to give the message to Lin Feng that if he wanted to take his revenge, he could come and find him in the Imperial City.

Ling Tian hadn't thought about such consequences even in his worst nightmares. He hadn't thought that what he had done in Yangzhou City would thoroughly change his destiny.

"It seems like you do regret." Said Lin Feng who was moving closer and closer to Ling Tian, just like a gentle breeze. In Lin Feng's pitch-black eyes appeared an ice-cold light and he said: "I've already told you, you committed the crime of killing my Chi Xie troops and today I will have justice for them. Die!"

When Lin Feng finished talking, his deadly energy became even more terrifying, his black sword was filled with incredible amounts of deadly energy, it was a deadly energy sword. It finally descended through the air, in the atmosphere, there was nothing but the murderous intent which poured from the sword.

Ling Tian looked desperate but at the same time, all of his muscles were twitching, he looked ferocious, hideous... One could see that he regretted every single action he took, but one could also see the hatred in his eyes. Ling Tian, whose talent and strength were unmatched by his peers, was going to die?

"Ahhhh....." When Ling Tian saw that deadly energy approach him, he shouted in frustration and grief. He closed his eyes and immediately after, what seemed like an endless ocean of deadly Qi enveloped his body and swallowed him. In an instant, his entire being disappeared, Ling Tian had died and there wasn't a single part of his body left to bury.

Many people's hearts twitched when they saw Ling Tian's silhouette vanish and Lin Feng standing in the air, looking proud.

Lin Feng was a terrifying cultivator, everyone was dumbstruck.

One sword was enough to kill Ling Tian.

The deadly energy still filled the atmosphere around the lake. Lin Feng's sword was still filled with an endless murderous intent. He turned around and looked down at the crowd looking majestic and domineering. Finally, he looked at one person, She Qiong.

“Your turn, get your ass over here.” Said Lin Feng indifferently. The crowd felt their eyes go wide, after killing Ling Tian, Lin Feng wasn't finished, he was going to target She Qiong next.

“Between Lin Feng and She Qiong, who would be stronger?” At that moment, nobody dared to make a guess hastily. Lin Feng had left them shocked, he was extremely brutal and his power was unknown. Nobody dared to underestimate or look down on Lin Feng. Additionally, nobody dared to say a word against She Qiong either.

She Qiong, when he saw that deadly energy in the air, pulled a long face. A short time before, he had despised Lin Feng and chosen Yun Fei Yang for his first battle. In his eyes, Lin Feng wasn't strong enough so he didn't attach much importance to him. However, at this moment, he didn't dare to have such foolish thoughts about Lin Feng anymore.

He understood a great deal when it came to cultivation, he had broken through to the fourth Xuan Qi layer. In comparison with the last time when he had fought against Lin Feng, he had become

much stronger and increased the gap between them, which was also why he had stopped caring about Lin Feng.

She Qiong hadn't thought that Lin Feng had also grown much stronger during that time. He hadn't become strong; he had become terrifying. By relying only on that deadly energy, he was able to kill people of the third Xuan Qi layer easily in the blink of an eye.

Lin Feng had only broken through to the second Xuan Qi layer but most cultivators of the third Xuan Qi layer were no longer his opponents.

“Come here, hurry on up.....!” Shouted Lin Feng furiously when he saw She Qiong remaining motionless. His voice resonated through the air. At the same time, an even more deadly energy emerged in the atmosphere and started to surround She Qiong's body. It was a frightening spectacle.

At that moment, She Qiong had no choice but to give it his all and fight against Lin Feng.

She Qiong took a step and then jumped through the air. He arrived near Lin Feng with pure Qi revolving around his body. Around Lin Feng's body, there was a very powerful deadly energy and it was blocking She Qiong's pure Qi. That endless murderous intent seemed like it could penetrate into people's hearts and make them cower in fear.

“She Qiong, how old are you?” Asked Lin Feng in a cold and

detached way.

She Qiong frowned, why did Lin Feng ask such a strange question?

“Twenty-four.” Replied She Qiong in a cold and detached tone.

“Twenty-four!” Repeated Lin Feng before continuing: “You are a wealthy and powerful young man of the Imperial Palace. I was born in Yangzhou City, unfortunately, that’s not as glamorous as your birth. However, you are a wealthy and powerful young man, you are twenty-four years old, you have broken through to the fourth Xuan Qi layer. However, I am only eighteen years old and I wasn’t born into a wealthy or powerful family. I have always relied on my own power to cultivate and not my family’s power and wealth, yet at my age, I have broken through to the second Xuan Qi layer. Despite our different backgrounds, my fighting abilities are in no way any worse than yours. So in front of me, what gives you the presumptuous notion that you can declare that I am not a match for Meng Qing? Apart from a powerful and wealthy background, what do you have that I have not already earned for myself?” Lin Feng’s words stupefied everybody.

She Qiong had just said that Lin Feng wasn’t a good match for Meng Qing and that she should be his woman instead. However, at that moment, Lin Feng was proving otherwise. She Qiong relied on his wealthy and powerful background, he was twenty-four and had broken through to the fourth Xuan Qi layer... But Lin Feng didn’t have a powerful and influential background, he was only eighteen years old, his fighting power was extremely high and he had terrifying natural abilities to match. Apart from money and a

family name, She Qiong had no basis to compete with Lin Feng. Lin Feng's natural abilities and fighting power were monstrous in comparison with She Qiong's.

“In my eyes, you are just like Ling Tian, just because you are a little bit talented, you have grown too proud and too arrogant. In fact, you are just a nobody with a powerful family to support your little talent, that's all. You're nothing but a waste of breath.” Said Lin Feng emotionlessly. He was fixedly staring at She Qiong and insulting him: “You injured Meng Qing, you tried to humiliate her. Today, no matter what, you will die.”

She Qiong's energy was moving faster, his facial expression was becoming colder and colder. Lin Feng had insulted him in front of millions of people. He had said that he was only a little talented and threatened that he would die no matter what, how aggressive!

“Well, I am curious to see how you intend to kill me. If you die today, don't worry, I will take good care of your woman.” Replied She Qiong with an evil smile on his face. When Lin Feng heard him, his deadly energy exploded in the air and he charged forwards. A deadly energy started to roll across the sky. Lin Feng's deadly energy was tearing through the sky.

A black fissure had been torn in the atmosphere. Lin Feng's deadly energy contained a monstrous power and it was also dangerously quick.

She Qiong hadn't expected Lin Feng to charge at him so abruptly. He pulled a long face and suddenly moved backwards. However, Lin Feng was like the wind as he followed closely behind She

Qiong, moving closer. Lin Feng's deadly energy was moving towards She Qiong at full speed and his entire body was filled with murderous intent.

Chapter 431: Despicable Means

The crowd was fixedly staring at the two silhouettes in the air. They were all extremely excited to watch the battle. Lin Feng was frivolous and aggressive, if he wanted to kill somebody, nobody could stop him from doing so.

She Qiong had humiliated his woman, Lin Feng, for Meng Qing's honour, had just sworn that She Qiong would die no matter what.

At that moment, She Qiong hadn't anticipated that Lin Feng would attack so abruptly. Besides, his speed was absolutely terrifying. Lin Feng was only at the second Xuan Qi layer but he was already faster than She Qiong, who had broken through to the fourth Xuan Qi layer.

Lin Feng was moving closer and closer to She Qiong. Lin Feng's deadly energy was also putting more and more pressure on She Qiong. It was terrifyingly fast and powerful.

"No, I can't die like this. If I let all of his deadly energy reach me, it will completely smother me and grind me into nothing." Thought She Qiong whose heart was invaded by coldness. That deadly energy was way too powerful, and it contained the determination of a sword. If that deadly energy could surround She Qiong, no matter how strong he was, he would be sliced into pieces, his entire body would be destroyed.

"Flood Dragon!" Shouted She Qiong in a deep voice. Pure Qi started revolving around him in the atmosphere and a flood

dragon image appeared above She Qiong. It looked extremely life like as it roared bestially. It seemed like it was preparing to attack.

“Flood Dragon Warp Fist!” Shouted She Qiong furiously and then his warp fist smashed through the atmosphere. His dragon crawled across his body and fused into his arm. She Qiong’s arm now looked like a dragon’s head, which was rushing towards Lin Feng. The dragon’s eyes were fixedly staring at Lin Feng. At that moment, She Qiong wasn’t running away anymore, instead, he was charging forward to attack.

A rumbling sound emerged in the atmosphere. The flood dragon seemed like it was going to destroy the earth and the sky.

Lin Feng’s eyes were ice-cold. Lin Feng wasn’t moving any longer, he was still. At this moment, for Lin Feng, there was only his sword.

It was as if the entire world had been replaced with deadly energy and killing intent.

KILL! KILL! KILL! KILL! KILL HIM!

She Qiong had dared humiliate Meng Qing, he had dared to assail her with obscenities, he had to die!

That deadly energy seemed like it was emerging from Lin Feng endlessly. It was extremely pure and contained shocking murderous intent, it seemed like there was nothing between the

earth and the sky except for deadly energy.

The moonlight still looked dreary and desolate, just like an ice sculpture, but the people didn't notice at all, they could only sense that deadly energy filled with murderous intent. That deadly energy was nightmarish.

Lin Feng had broken through to the second Xuan Qi layer but was able to release such a devilish deadly energy. How far along the path did one need to cultivate in order to understand the sword as well as that powerful deadly energy?

With his deadly energy, he was able to compete with a cultivator stronger than him by two cultivation layers, She Qiong.

In the air, the old man who had created the illusion was staring at Lin Feng and looked glum. He despised Lin Feng. His natural abilities were terrifying, there probably weren't many people who could release a more powerful deadly energy than Lin Feng.

On the side of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, Duan Tian Lang and Chu Zhan Peng were sitting next to each other and pulling a long face, especially Chu Zhan Peng who hadn't expected Lin Feng's strength to be the stuff of nightmares.

He suddenly had the impression that nothing would go the way he imagined, he had the feeling that killing Lin Feng wouldn't be as simple of a task as he previously thought.

Lin Feng, with his strength, could already fight against cultivators of the fourth Xuan Qi layer.

The people of the Luo Xia Sect, the Wan Shou Sect, the Du Gu Clan etc. all hated Lin Feng. At that moment, they were all pulling a long face. Many people had witnessed Lin Feng's evolution over time... And at that moment, Lin Feng was already able to fight with a cultivator of the fourth Xuan Qi layer. With his natural abilities, what would happen if Lin Feng was still alive in three years' time? And what about in five years? What would Lin Feng be like at those moments?

They didn't dare to think about it. Those finalists were all true geniuses, but they needed years upon years to acquire their current strength. Without them noticing, Lin Feng had already accomplished so much. Two years ago, he was only at the Qi layer, then he had broken through to the Ling Qi layer and came to the Imperial City. At that time, how many people had thought that Lin Feng would be fighting in this monumental competition, only one and a half years later? Who would have thought that he would be able to kill Ling Tian with a single sword? Who would have thought that he would be able to release such a monstrous deadly energy?

"Lin Feng had to die as soon as possible, we cannot let him live!" Thought many people at that moment. Their desire to kill Lin Feng was becoming more and more urgent with each passing moment. Letting Lin Feng live longer would be too dangerous.

On the side of the Yue Clan, an old white-haired man looked like he was having mixed feelings.

Each time he saw Lin Feng's terrifying natural abilities, he couldn't help but think about her. Like mother, like son, actually Lin Feng really resembled his mother!

They had the same terrifying natural abilities, the same determination and they both had identical temperaments! If they wanted to do something, nobody on earth could prevent them from doing it.

Lin Feng's sword was filled with deadly energy, which caused a black fissure to be torn in the sky, when it collided with the flood dragon warp fist. It almost destroyed the atmosphere which started shaking violently.

That sword filled with deadly energy had pierced through the flood dragon and continued moving towards She Qiong. It seemed like nothing could stop that deadly sword. Lin Feng, moving just like the wind, releasing even more monstrous deadly energy which increased the pressure towards She Qiong. Lin Feng's entire body was just like his sword; he was filled with killing intent which was overflowing.

She Qiong looked incomparably glum. He roared aggressively and another flood dragon warp fist started to crash through the atmosphere once again. At the same time, he moved backwards, he had to avoid getting close to Lin Feng no matter what, if he approached him, Lin Feng's deadly energy would devour him in an instant.

“Die!” Shouted Lin Feng in a ruthless tone. His deadly sword moved forwards as it swallowed the flood dragon again and continued to chase She Qiong.

In front of Lin Feng’s terrifying deadly sword, which was also filled with murderous intent, She Qiong was in a critical situation.

The crowd was dumbstruck, they couldn’t believe their eyes. She Qiong’s strength was terrifying enough already, but when facing Lin Feng, he found himself struggling to avoid death’s door.

“Roaaarr!” An insane roar suddenly caused the atmosphere vibrate. Behind She Qiong, a terrifying flood dragon appeared, it looked hideous and cruel, and it was fixedly staring at Lin Feng.

She Qiong had released his spirit, he had had no choice but to use everything.

“Die!” Lin Feng ignored the flood dragon and released even more black, deadly energy. His sword did not stop moving closer to She Qiong, Lin Feng was leaving no room for escape.

She Qiong’s face looked glum. His entire body was surrounded by a coarse and wild Qi. His flood dragon bared fangs and brandished claws towards the deadly energy.

“Fusion!” A terrifying bestial aura emerged around She Qiong’s body and then many silhouettes appeared, it seemed like a swarm of flood dragons filled the sky.

At that moment, She Qiong looked like he had turned into a wild beast, he looked like an authentic flood dragon.

“The power of my flood dragon warp fist is at its peak when I fuse with my spirit.” Thought She Qiong at that moment, he almost looked half dragon and half human. He raised his head and unleashed a violent roar. His entire body was surrounded the wild and coarse Qi.

“Die!”

“Roaaarrr.....”

She Qiong first shouted furiously and then his flood dragon roared in a monstrous way. She Qiong’s body looked like it was covered with dragon scales. He then punched through the air, his punch looked like a dragon streaking across the sky. It was moving straight towards Lin Feng.

“BOOM!”

The sword filled with deadly energy and the flood dragon collided. At the collision point appeared a vast black light. In a flash, She Qiong and Lin Feng were swallowed by that blackness. They had been swallowed by it. The collision of their two attacks had resulted in the apparition of a terrifying energy.

The crowd gasped with amazement. They were fixedly staring at

the place where the two fighters were. The confrontation of two powerful geniuses was terrifying.

She Qiong had fused with his flood dragon spirit. Lin Feng had only used his deadly energy, but it seemed like there was an endless quantity of deadly Qi and energy. Lin Feng was fulfilling his word, he was going to kill She Qiong.

“Chu Zhan Peng, go and kill Lin Feng!” Interrupted a voice at that moment, it came from the bank of the lake, from the group of people of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. Duan Tian Lang was the one who spoke, his voice sounded indifferent and cold. Chu Zhan Peng was stupefied though, he looked like he didn’t understand what Duan Tian Lang meant.

“She Qiong is almost defeated. You should go quickly and kill Lin Feng, otherwise, if you fight against him in a one-on-one battle, it will be a fierce battle, it’s not even guaranteed that you will win.” Said Duan Tian Lang slowly while staring at Chu Zhan Peng. Even though Chu Zhan Peng’s cultivation level had increased, he was the same as She Qiong, he had recently broken through to the fourth Xuan Qi layer as well.

She Qiong was the youngest officer of the Imperial City Guards, relying on his cultivation level, skills and techniques, he definitely had what it took to become one of the eight high-officials. Chu Zhan Peng wasn’t even sure that he was able to defeat She Qiong in a fight.

Lin Feng could put so much pressure on She Qiong that there was no escape, which meant that he was also able to do the same

against Chu Zhan Peng.

“Right now is the best moment to kill Lin Feng, you cannot let this opportunity slip by. If you fight against him in a fair battle, you will have no chance of escape.” Said Duan Tian Lang still trying to convince Chu Zhan Peng. Chu Zhan Peng looked irresolute. Going to kill Lin Feng at that moment was dangerous, besides, in front of everybody, he would lose a great deal of face if he suddenly attacked Lin Feng by surprise.

However, Duan Tian Lang was telling him that if he waited, Chu Zhan Peng wouldn't be able to kill Lin Feng because of his deadly energy and might not even be able to escape. If he lost against Lin Feng, he would lose more than just face.

“Die!” Shouted Lin Feng. His terrifying deadly energy rolled through the air, it was surrounded by a black light. She Qiong's body was blown away, his face turned deathly pale and blood burst out of his mouth. He had lost. She Qiong had been defeated by Lin Feng, how terrifying.

“Lin Feng must die!” when Chu Zhan Peng saw that scene, he gnashed his teeth, a hurricane appeared around him as he spread his wings and he then streaked across the sky. His wings were emitting a whistling sound as he rushed into battle.

“Lin Feng, fight against me!” Shouted Chu Zhan Peng furiously. His silhouette then dashed through the sky and he nosedived towards Lin Feng which made the entire crowd frown.

Chapter 432: Lotus in the Left, Sword in The Right!

One of the eight high-officials was attacking!

He was the first high-official to join the battles. What surprised the crowd the most was that when Chu Zhan Peng was attacking he gave absolutely no warning that he was going to do so. Was he..... Attacking Lin Feng by surprise?!

Lin Feng was still battling against She Qiong when suddenly Chu Zhan Peng went to attack Lin Feng before the battle was over! He was definitely taking advantage of Lin Feng's current situation.

When the crowd saw that silhouette streak across the sky and then nosedive towards Lin Feng, they were all worried about Lin Feng. Chu Zhan Peng was extremely fast thanks to his legendary roc spirit. He was so fast that it was incredible.

“Shameless!” Shouted Duan Feng at that moment while stamping onto the ground. When he saw Chu Zhan Peng attack, he couldn't help but shout out. His heart also twitched for Lin Feng.

Even though Chu Zhan Peng had shouted something before entering the battle, he was too far away and it was only an attempt to justify a surprise attack. He was extremely fast which made Duan Feng worry more about the safety of Lin Feng.

Meng Qing's heart also abruptly started pounding. She released

an ice-cold ice Qi which shot through the air towards Chu Zhan Peng, but even if she wanted to stop him, it was already too late. In the blink of an eye, Chu Zhan Peng had already arrived next to Lin Feng.

“Be careful!” Shouted Meng Qing with all her power to warn Lin Feng. Lin Feng’s eyes were ice-cold. With his incredible senses, Lin Feng had of course sensed that Chu Zhan Peng was attacking him from behind. However, his deadly energy was still crashing through the atmosphere towards She Qiong, and Lin Feng couldn’t change that, he could only rely on his incredible senses to avoid the incoming attack.

The power of the wind enabled Lin Feng to move in an extremely agile way, as if he could float through the air without resistance, at that moment, he was floating backwards.

“Pssssh...”

A sharp sound emerged in the air. Chu Zhan Peng’s silhouette flickered and he abruptly adjusted his trajectory. He was aiming directly at Lin Feng and his speed was increasing.

Lin Feng was stupefied, how unbelievably fast! Chu Zhan Peng was so fast that Lin Feng didn’t even have the qualifications to dodge the attack.

“”Whoosh.... Whoosh....” The sharp wings converged on Lin Feng’s abdomen, his clothes were torn to shreds as blood splashed out from two wounds.

“EEeeee!” A terrifying power moved towards Lin Feng again. Chu Zhan Peng had already moved back and dived towards Lin Feng again, which blew him away for a second time. Lin Feng’s face deathly pale.

Lin Feng was clearly injured after such a brutal onslaught. Chu Zhan Peng had attacked Lin Feng with the element of surprise and because of the speed in which he attacked, Lin Feng didn’t have the time to defend and was actually injured. At the same time, the legendary roc continued beating its wings in the sky.

Even though Chu Zhan Peng was taking advantage of a difficult situation, his strength was still incredible, he was extremely strong. He had attacked and injured Lin Feng in the blink of an eye.

Meng Qing’s silhouette flickered and she immediately appeared in front of Lin Feng obstructing the path towards the injured Lin Feng. She released her ice Qi which soared to the skies, her face at this moment looked scary.

“Meng Qing, get back!” Lin Feng raised his head and when he saw Meng Qing, he looked like he was scared and shouted out, which shocked Meng Qing.

“I have already told you, all those who try to humiliate or harm you will die. Today, no matter what price needs to be paid, I will keep my promise.” Said Lin Feng sounding determined which stupefied Meng Qing. Immediately after, her beautiful face turned

red.

Lin Feng had sworn that he would kill She Qiong, no matter what, he would keep his promise, because he had said that for her.

“Let me help!” Said Meng Qing who couldn’t help but worry about Lin Feng losing his life. Her ice energy made Lin Feng feel chills as he grew closer.

“Let me do this alone!” Insisted Lin Feng while shaking his head. He caressed Meng Qing’s hair, smiled and said: “I told you, from now on, I will be the one to protect you.” When Lin Feng finished talking, he moved back and pulled Meng Qing away from the battle.

Meng Qing looked at Lin Feng’s back and felt proud. A magnificent and resplendent smile appeared on her face. That heartfelt smile made everything else in the world lose its splendour.

When the crowd saw that pure and holy smile, they were dazzled. Her beauty was simply breathtaking. For such a beauty, they were ready to kill the gods and worship devils.

Everybody who saw that scene started to feel that Meng Qing and Lin Feng were made for each other, they were soulmates. As far as She Qiong was concerned, he was extremely far from being worthy of Meng Qing.

No matter what, if he won or lost this fight, the real protagonist on that day was Lin Feng. Lin Feng was doing everything in his power to keep Meng Qing smiling, with a smile which dazzled everyone.

Lin Feng turned his head back to his opponents, his face was no longer soft and gentle as when he was speaking to Meng Qing, there was only the endless coldness of his pitch-black eyes. His pitch-black eyes were filled with killing intent. He was fixedly staring at She Qiong and Chu Zhan Peng.

“Chu Zhan Peng!” Lin Feng laughed out as if the name itself was a joke.

“The other day, you stormed into to the Celestial Academy to challenge me, how prestigious! You wanted to fight against me and so we agreed to have our fight today. Even though you were despicable and attacked me from behind, I do not mind, I will still fight you today. The members of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue are only a despicable bunch, nothing but a bunch of cowards and traitors. I have already grown used to their shamelessness, therefore, attacking me from behind is absolutely despicable, but I would expect nothing less from the scum of the Holy Courtyard.” Shouted Lin Feng whose words echoed across the sky. He was humiliating Chu Zhan Peng and the entire Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.

Each and every person from the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was staring at Lin Feng with cold expressions, but none of them could find the words to reply.

“In front of someone stronger than you, words are useless. I, Chu Zhan Peng, will kill you and then nobody will dare to say that the way I attacked you was despicable. The people will continue to sing my praises and say that our battle was a magnificent display of my power.” Said Chu Zhan Peng while staring at Lin Feng in an ice-cold way. A moment before, Lin Feng had been injured by his attack, that’s all.

“You’re right, in front of someone stronger, words are useless. Such shamelessness and such despicable methods are really lamentable. Chu Zhan Peng, I will kill you, you and She Qiong will be buried here today.” When Lin Feng finished talking, the crowd shivered. Lin Feng was still as audacious as before, even when standing before one of the eight high-officials and She Qiong, two extremely strong cultivators.

Lin Feng sounded like he was already certain of his victory against the two.

His deadly energy dashed into the skies. In Lin Feng’s right hand, there was a black sword filled with a terrifying killing intent.

At the same time, in his left hand, Lin Feng was condensing a terrifying pure Qi. It was pouring into a vortex in his left hand.

Lin Feng stretched out his left hand and the pure Qi transformed into a black flame, which perfectly matched the black sword in his right hand, he looked truly formidable.

But that wasn’t the end, the black flame continued to absorb Lin

Feng's pure Qi as a black lotus slowly started to form in his hand, it was strangely beautiful.

The black lotus, the grim fire black lotus.

“Boom boom boom boom!”

Everyone could hear the sound of their heart beating in their chest. They were astonished. They had thought that Lin Feng's deadly energy was his hidden card but he still had even more up his sleeve.

Lin Feng was still as shocking as ever. Every time people thought that he had shown his strength and power, they found out that they had only touched the surface of his true strength.

Was that terrifying black lotus the reason for Lin Feng's confidence?

In his left hand, he held a calm and tranquil black lotus, in his right hand, he held a terrifying black sword which oozed killing intent, but they were shockingly both filled with the same monstrous deadly energy!

Lin Feng was surrounded by deadly energy which fused into each of his hands, it was astonishing.

Chu Zhan Peng was surprised and looked directly at Lin Feng's hands that held both the black lotus and the black sword. A trace

of fear could be seen in his eyes.

Everybody already knew how powerful the deadly energy was, but the black lotus in Lin Feng's hand also seemed incredibly powerful, maybe more so than the sword.

She Qiong had already seen Lin Feng's black lotus and its terrifying power. Back then, Lin Feng had only broken through to the first Xuan Qi layer but it was already enough to threaten his life when using it. At that moment, Lin Feng's black lotus looked much more powerful than in the past.

“Chu Zhan Peng, today I will show you that apart from being detestable and attacking by surprise, there is nothing else you can do before me.” Said Lin Feng whose confidence made people shiver. He once again released a storm of deadly energy while talking, which filled the air around him.

Chu Zhan Peng pulled a long face. His wings were beating slowly when suddenly, his silhouette flickered and he disappeared from his initial position. He had thrown himself towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng smiled coldly and stretched out his left hand. He then waved his hand and the black lotus suddenly started to open which made Chu Zhan Peng quickly turn in retreat.

“With his legendary roc spirit, he can really run away.” Thought Lin Feng ignoring the fact that Chu Zhan Peng had once again flew into the air ready to swoop down. Lin Feng took a step and jumped towards She Qiong. His deadly energy was crashing through the air

with him. At that moment, Lin Feng had completely forgotten about his injuries.

She Qiong pulled a long face. Lin Feng was definitely going to kill him, no matter what, because Lin Feng was doing this for Meng Qing.

At that moment, She Qiong's heart violently pounded. He felt like he was facing a madman and that madman could not be reasoned with, he would only kill.

“Chu Zhan Peng, let's work together and kill him!” Shouted She Qiong while moving back at full speed.

The crowd sighed, this battle was too unfair. There were two people grouping against one and one of the group was even a high-official. The old man overseeing the competition didn't even try to stop such a battle from happening.

Chapter 433: Piss Off!

At that moment, the national competition seemed like a theatre play; nobody had anticipated such a thing.

Who would have imagined that Lin Feng would fight against the high-official Chu Zhan Peng and the youngest officer of the Imperial City Guards all by himself, one genius against two.

Chu Zhan Peng and She Qiong were both incredible talents. However, Lin Feng's talent outshone them by far. That is why She Qiong and Chu Zhan Peng only needed to agree to work together for them to kill their mutual enemy.

Chu Zhan Peng remained silent for a short while but eventually nodded in a cold and detached way while saying: "Alright. Let's kill him together."

Two geniuses were agreeing to work together and kill Lin Feng.

At that moment, Lin Feng was cold and aloof; his pitch-black eyes looked emotionless and expressionless. He took a step forward and flew towards She Qiong while releasing an astonishing amount of deadly energy.

Chu Zhan Peng had a legendary roc spirit, his speed was incredible, his claws were extremely sharp, and he was in a much better condition than She Qiong. Killing him would be harder than a weakened She Qiong. That was why Lin Feng decided to kill She Qiong first and then he would take care of Chu Zhan Peng.

When She Qiong saw the deadly energy crashing through the atmosphere towards him, he pulled a long face. Lin Feng was determined to kill him first.

His flood dragon spirit roared, and its gigantic eyes never left Lin Feng for even a second. The flood dragon wrapped around She Qiong's body and enveloped him completely. His arm looked like it was gathering an exceptionally dangerous energy.

“DIE!” Shouted She Qiong loudly. The force of his flood dragon: warp fist bombarded towards Lin Feng. The gigantic flood dragon was following behind She Qiong's fist as it raised its head to roar.

Chu Zhan Peng obviously understood what She Qiong was planning, so he spread his wings and rushed to attack Lin Feng with unbelievable speed. His speed was incredibly shocking to witness.

Two people attacking at the same time, one from the front, the other from behind, they were using such a despicable tactic to deal with the injured Lin Feng.

“Wind.”

A gentle breeze floated through the air. Lin Feng was calmly analysing the wind as it blew over him, his body slightly shook, and his entire silhouette seemed like it had moved several thousand times, in different directions, in the blink of an eye. Each of his moves seemed like it had a million variations and each would

lead to a different destination. Lin Feng had fused with the very wind itself, and suddenly, multiple silhouettes appeared.

In the sky, there now stood a countless number of Lin Feng's.

“Huh?” She Qiong was stupefied. He only saw Lin Feng and all those after images moving towards him; their speed was incredible as they flew towards him from multiple directions like a strong gale.

The deadly energy surrounding his body was growing more and more violent, more and more terrifying.

“I don't think that you can fight against two people at the same time!” Said She Qiong. His flood dragon roared, and they rushed straight towards the group of Lin Feng's, ready to destroy everything that crossed its path.

“Die! ” Shouted Lin Feng in a deep voice. Without mercy, he thrust out with his black sword which was filled with an immense deadly energy.

“Roaaarrr!”

“Boom!”

The deadly energy and the flood dragon collided which caused the air itself to shake from the pressure. At the same time, Chu Zhan Peng had almost arrived at Lin Feng's back; his sharp claws

were about to impale Lin Feng and rip a massive hole through his chest. Those claws were clearly aiming to rip Lin Feng's heart directly from his chest with one swoop.

“Get lost!”

Lin Feng spun his body around in the air, and his black lotus was pushed towards Chu Zhan Peng's direction, his black lotus contained a thick concentration of deadly energy and grim fire.

Chu Zhan Peng was stupefied, his claws stopped in place, if he had continued with his attack then his claws would have landed directly on the black lotus.

Chu Zhan Peng spread his wings and abruptly came to a halt. After that, a purple light emerged from Lin Feng, immediately that purple spirit rushed out and caught the black lotus as if it was another hand.

“Huh?” The crowd was speechless, what was Lin Feng doing? Why was the purple spirit now holding the black lotus?

After some consideration, the crowd understood Lin Feng's intention. His purple spirit seemingly had its awareness and could control the black lotus to attack Chu Zhan Peng if he came close. Even Chu Zhan Peng was dumbstruck when he saw this.

Was such a thing even possible?

Lin Feng could have his spirit use the black lotus to attack without even looking?

At that moment, Lin Feng had already stopped paying attention to the black lotus behind him. His deadly energy burst into the sky, and his sword descended towards She Qiong. Without even glancing behind him to see his black lotus and Chu Zhan Peng, he released his deadly energy and attacked.

Lin Feng's deadly energy seemed like it was endless as if he had an endless amount of deadly energy within him. However, She Qiong wouldn't be able to continue carrying out such powerful attacks to defend against Lin Feng forever. The deadly energy was destroying everything. At that moment, She Qiong unleashed another flood dragon warp fist and used the force to propel himself back, but Lin Feng's sword still reached its target.

There was a large wound across She Qiong's abdomen, but if he had been a little bit slower, that wound would have been through his heart.

The deadly energy was putting immense pressure on She Qiong's wound which caused a hideous expression to appear on his face. It was excruciating; he was barely able to breathe. Were two people working together really unable to defeat Lin Feng?

Lin Feng didn't intend to give him time to contemplate, the multiple Lin Feng's appeared and rushed forward like the wind, they were getting closer and closer to She Qiong. The deadly energy was still adding a tremendous pressure onto She Qiong's body, and his chest was feeling tight.

“Aahhhhh...” Shouted She Qiong, but his voice sounded weak as he was struggling for air. He felt completely dispirited; his courage was disappearing. There was nothing worse than dying. His shout was a shout of fear and despair. At the same time, it was incredibly weak and shrill due to the deadly energy crushing his body from all sides.

At the same time, Chu Zhan Peng didn't stop moving, but the purple spirit did have its awareness. It was attacking with the black lotus every time that Chu Zhan Peng tried moving forwards. Chu Zhan Peng had no doubt that the purple spirit and black lotus would gravely injure him or even take his life if he was careless.

“Die!” shouted Lin Feng with his expressionless black eyes. He raised both his hands into the air and slashed down with his sword, filled with killing intent.

A rumbling emerged in the atmosphere. A brutal, deadly energy was pressuring and preventing She Qiong from dodging, even though he managed to partly dodge the attack, blood burst out of his mouth, and his body was blown away.

Lin Feng wasn't going to let him off so easily. His murderous intent was still filling the skies. He rushed forwards again and brandished his sword once more, another strike and he would be able to kill She Qiong!

“That's enough! Stop!” Shouted the old man coldly which made the atmosphere shake and shocked the crowd.

Lin Feng was a bit surprised, at the moment when he was about to kill She Qiong, the old man ordered them to stop. However, a moment before, when Chu Zhan Peng had joined the battle to help She Qiong kill Lin Feng, the old man hadn't said a word.

Who couldn't see that the old man was abusing his power and authority to help She Qiong?

Lin Feng obviously understood what was going on. His facial expression looked ice-cold, his murderous intent and deadly energy were still filling the air, Lin Feng didn't even attempt to stop.

"Stop!" Shouted the old man again, his voice was so sharp that it hurt Lin Feng's ears. Immediately after, he saw the old man take a step through the air and appear in front of him. He then punched through the air; that punch looked terrifying, and huge Qi waves rolled through the atmosphere causing Lin Feng's deadly energy to come to a halt, immediately after he moved back.

"Fifth Xuan Qi layer." The crowd was stupefied, that old man had the strength of the fifth Xuan Qi layer. He was much stronger than Lin Feng, and Lin Feng was still able to resist thanks to the deadly energy. His grim fire black lotus could defeat cultivators much stronger than Lin Feng, but only by around one or two layers. However, the current black lotus was not powerful enough to kill someone at the fifth Xuan Qi layer.

"I told you to stop, did you understand?" Shouted the old man in

an extremely aggressive tone while releasing a cold energy.

Lin Feng looked at the old man's face; he looked incredibly ugly and devious.

“What a crappy competition, it's a shame that it has you as it's corrupt overseer. What a disgrace.” Said, Lin Feng, while looking at the old man, he then continued on an ice-cold tone: “If I had known it was this corrupt earlier, I would never have bothered with this laughable joke of competition, it's run by evil, shameless bastards like you.”

Lin Feng didn't even care about the competition anymore. The people in power were just using their authority in this competition to play with him. Nobody was following the rules and abiding by a fair competition, was this really how they planned to find geniuses?

When the crowd heard Lin Feng, they were touched and sighed. Indeed, that competition hadn't been so great for Lin Feng; it was pointless.

“Say that again!” Said the old man while staring at Lin Feng with an evil look. His face was overflowing with killing intent.

“Say it again?” Lin Feng smiled coldly and said: “I said, today, no matter what happens, She Qiong will die, and nobody will stop me. Your shitty excuse for a competition means nothing to me, now piss off!!” Lin Feng's eyes were pitch-black, and his murderous intent grew even more intense. His words had left everyone

aghast. Lin Feng had told the old man to piss off, what was he thinking!

Chapter 434: The Mysterious Apparition

The light of the full moon was shining down upon the still lake.

At that moment, everybody was silently staring at that proud young man.

He had killed Ling Tian, then he began a battle to protect the honour of his woman and proudly declared that She Qiong would die. Chu Zhan Peng even joined the battle and arrogantly flew into the air to launch a surprise attack. On top of that, at that moment, in front of everybody, Lin Feng was telling a senior of the fifth Xuan Qi layer to piss off.

On the ground, in the group from the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, Lin Qian raised her head and looked at that prideful young man. She couldn't help but sigh...

If Lin Feng had stayed in the Lin Clan, if Lin Qian had treated Lin Feng as part of the family instead of isolating, despising and humiliating him, at that moment, their clan would be the pride of Yangzhou City and the Lin Clan would have untold glory.

Lin Feng's glory would be shared with her Lin Clan, as well as the ownership of Yangzhou City. He would have become the pride of the clan but at that moment, it was the absolute opposite.

It was the first time that she had such a feeling, she was regretting her past actions against Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was truly powerful and did not let anything stand in his way. He made Lin Qian start to realise how short-sighted she had been.

At that moment, Chu Zhan Peng already couldn't fight against Lin Feng anymore. Lin Qian could see how terrifyingly strong Lin Feng had become. Two years before, he was only trash of the Qi layer.

In the Yue Clan, there was someone who also had the same feeling as Lin Qian and was sighing.

The patriarch of the Yue Clan, Yue Qing Shan also sighed while looking at that young man, his grandson. If he had been a member of the Yue Clan, he could have grown up alongside Yue Tian Ming and they would have been as close as brothers. Who would have dared to provoke them if they were united by such a strong bond?

In five years, Yue Tian Ming and Lin Feng will become the most talented cultivators of Xue Yue.

At that moment, the old man who was overseeing the competition looked ferocious. Lin Feng had told him to piss off in front of millions of people.

She Qiong and Chu Zhan Peng stopped in place and were shocked. The black lotus had returned to Lin Feng and it was emitting a crackling sound in the air, apart from those sounds, the atmosphere was deathly silent.

“Alright, alright, alright.....” Said the old man three times with deadly energy leaking from his body.

Lin Feng released some more deadly energy which covered the skies. Lin Feng wasn't scared at all. He only looked cold and determined, nobody could stop him.

If things were pushed to that point, Lin Feng would give his all to kill all three of them.

Lin Feng didn't want to use the evil swords, they were too terrifying and might attempt to devour his soul and take over his body. The evil swords were able to take control over his body like an evil parasite. However, if he ignored the danger and used the evil swords, everybody would know of their existence and strong cultivators would try to steal the evil swords from his body.

Lin Feng would use them only if he had no other choice because the result would be a bloodbath. Then he would be forced to leave Xue Yue and hide somewhere that no one would ever find him.

“How should I deal with you?” Said the old man evilly. In his eyes, Lin Feng had already signed away his life.

Even if Lin Feng's natural abilities were extremely high, they were enemies, and the stronger an enemy was, the more urgently he needed to die.

The old man had lived for so many years, he could obviously understand that the sooner one killed their enemies while they were weak, the better it was, and the longer one waited, the less chances one would have to kill them.

Geniuses rose very quickly but they could also fall just as quick because people were scared to let such geniuses live for too long when there were grudges between them.

“Deal with me?” Lin Feng’s eyes looked cold and detached and some deadly energy was released from his body. His eyes were filled with killing intent.

“Kill him.” Said the old man to She Qiong who was still behind him. They definitely had to take Lin Feng’s life! She Qiong had lost his dignity, it was clear to everyone that Lin Feng had dominated and humiliated him. If the old man hadn’t come out, She Qiong would be long dead. He wanted to kill Lin Feng and wash away his shame.

“This brat doesn’t respect his elders and superiors. He must be punished.” Said Duan Tian Lang at that moment. He wanted to kill Lin Feng more than anyone.

“Kill him! He’s a disgrace to our national competition, he must die!”

“The boy must die!”

At that moment, many voices were filling the air. It was the members of the Yu Clan, of the Wan Shou Sect, and of many other influential groups, that all wanted Lin Feng dead.

Lin Feng glanced at the crowd but remained expressionless. All those people wanted to put an end to their grudge with his death.

When the crowd heard the shouts from all the people who wanted to kill Lin Feng, they sighed.

He had natural abilities but wasn't that useless to him right now? He didn't have an influential background and he had offended so many people, who were working together to kill him.

The world was cold and cruel. Strength was what mattered the most, there are no laws if there is no power to uphold them. Everything always came down to strength, if a person was strong enough, who could stop them from doing what they wanted?

That national competition was a competition to select an outstanding genius, it was the competition of Xue Yue, there were rules, but Lin Feng had offended so many powerful groups... And because they wanted him to die, something as whimsical as a rule wouldn't stop them.

Lin Feng only had himself as backing, he was desolate and lonely like the moon floating in the sky above, even though his natural abilities were more impressive than the majority of the eight high-officials, everything came down to strength.

“What a pity.” Thought many people while looking at the proud young man. They sighed again. What a pity. He had no other power to rely on, so he would fall to their schemes, another genius would die.

There were so many people shouting out for the death of Lin Feng, yet there was nobody who was rushing out to his defence.

Only Meng Qing was releasing her Qi, ready to fight. If they wanted to kill Lin Feng, she would abandon everything and destroy them all.

“Did you hear? Everybody wants your life.” Said the old man while looking at Lin Feng. He was smiling and found the entire situation amusing. Lin Feng had no way out.

Lin Feng smiled as he thought, “You all want me dead?”

A powerful, deadly energy burst across the skies and flooded the atmosphere. Everyone could feel the killing intent, and fury unleashed.

“You all want to kill me? go ahead and try!!” Shouted Lin Feng furiously while smiling coldly. At the same time, Meng Qing rushed into the sky and released a bone chilling ice Qi.

When the old man sensed their energies, he just smiled with mockery. The deadly energy was extremely powerful and Meng Qing’s ice Qi was extremely dense, but so what? They had no

influence, no power supporting them, what could two people do alone?

“Alright, I will give it a try.” Said the old man coldly as he moved forward.

When Lin Feng saw the old man move, he closed his eyes. He could sense the evil swords with his soul, and they were trying to move.

“Foolish old thing!”

At the moment when Lin Feng was about to unleash the evil swords, a voice filled the air. That voice wasn't loud, but everybody had heard each word distinctly.

After the words were said, multiple ribbons of different colours flew across the lake, they were fluttering in the wind. It seemed like the sky was filled with colourful ribbons. They had invaded the entire sky.

“What's going on?” When the crowd saw the colourful ribbons, they were all surprised. The old man was surprised as well. On top of that, those colourful ribbons all shot towards him with incredible speed.

As if Lin Feng had realised something, he suddenly opened his eyes. But what he saw had left him stupefied.

Those colourful ribbons?

The scene seemed familiar. Back in the Lovesick Forest, those colourful ribbons had appeared at the most crucial moment and saved him.

At that moment, Lin Feng was once again in a dangerous situation, and once again those colourful ribbons appeared... And they were moving straight towards the old man!

It seemed like someone was coming to the rescue of Lin Feng.

It was very strange. Lin Feng didn't understand what was going on. Those colourful ribbons arrived at the old man in the blink of an eye. The old man groaned coldly and raised his hand which was as sharp as a blade. He started to cut through the colourful ribbons, but at the same time, many other colourful ribbons rushed towards the old man from every direction. The ribbons were all directly connected to the same place on the ground as they wrapped around the old man in the sky, they seemed like colourful bridges to heaven. It was incredibly beautiful.

“Who's that?” Everyone was left speechless. They all looked around and tried to figure out who had initiated the attack. Finally, they saw multiple feminine silhouettes in the distance. Those colourful ribbons were held in their hands.

In the middle of the women, there was a lithe and graceful woman wearing white clothes who looked as pure and holy as snow. Her magnificent style and elegance were unmatched under

the heavens.

However, the woman was wearing a bamboo hat, and a fine white veil was covering her face. She looked like a goddess.

“Who is she?” When the crowd saw the woman, they couldn’t help but ask. She looked aloof, but her beauty made everything else seem lacking. That holy and pure silhouette reminded people of when they first saw Meng Qing!

Chapter 435: Looking Down On Everybody

“What an incredible woman!” At first glance, the crowd was gasping with amazement when they saw her. They were all fixedly staring at her silhouette; their eyes couldn’t move away. Many people wanted to see the under the veil; it was the same reaction as when people wanted to see Meng Qing’s face.

That woman was able to cause such emotion to stir in the people’s hearts; her aura was extraordinary.

Lin Feng was also stupefied. It was the first time he had encountered this woman. He didn’t know her and felt it was very strange. However, after concentrating on her aura, Lin Feng felt like they had encountered each other before as if they had already met.

He had the feeling that they had never gotten to know each other, but they had crossed paths, the feeling was extremely strange. Lin Feng couldn’t explain it.

Of course, the women didn’t concern themselves with the thoughts of the crowd. They only noticed that many people were staring at them. Some people were even standing on the tips of their toes to try to see them, but it was already too late.

The colourful ribbons had already created a bridge across the sky, and the veiled woman was sliding up the ribbons into the heavens. Immediately after, the crowd saw the other women jump onto other ribbons and glide into the sky; it was like a fairy-tale.

At that moment, the beautiful woman had already passed Lin Feng who was still in the air.

“Come, all of you.” Said the woman in an indifferent voice. However, there was a tinge of warmth in her voice. Her colourful ribbons were fluttering in the wind as all the women had finally caught up with her.

The entire group was composed of beautiful women. When they arrived near the mystical and mysterious woman, the ribbons suddenly surrounded the old man and completely restrained his movements.

“Who are they?” When the crowd saw those mystical and mysterious women appear, everyone was asking themselves who they were. They were walking through the sky on flying ribbons as if they were walking on flat ground. The entire group was extremely strong, and they were all women, the crowd was intrigued and curious as to who this mysterious group was.

Within the members of the Yu Clan, many of them felt their hearts racing; it was them, or more precisely, it was her!

Teng Wu Yao, the patriarch of the Wan Shou Sect, also started to shake. Since the last time he was warned, he already understood that the person he could not offend was her!

The most astonished person was the head of the Yue Clan, Yue Qing Shan.

When he saw that woman, he abruptly stood up; he was shaking from head to toe; his eyes were filled with shock and anger.

That move astonished the people of the Yue Clan, why was the head acting so strangely? Why did he seem so shocked? How could a single person shock him to this extent?

“It’s her. She came.” Thought a few well-informed people when they saw the events unfolding.

A subtle sound spread through the air interrupting everyone’s train of thought. They only saw the old man was suddenly pierced by the multiple ribbons surrounding his body. He tried to escape, but when he saw the faces of all the women, he was astonished.

“Get him!” Said the mystical woman, her voice was extremely cold.

In a flash, an endless stream of colourful ribbons floated through the wind towards the old man.

At the same time, the other women shot into action. Six women were encircling the old man, in front of him, behind him, on his left, on his right, under him and above him. He had absolutely no escape from any direction.

A terrifying Qi then emerged in the atmosphere. The myriad of colourful ribbons started to flutter. At the same time, a pure

condensed in the air and the atmosphere sounded like it was breaking. All those six women were releasing their pure Qi which caused the air to tremble.

The most astonishing thing was that the pure Qi seemed like it was connecting itself to the ribbons.

“Break!” Shouted the old man furiously while pulling a long face. An incredible power was unleashed and bombarded the colourful ribbons, halting their advance. But each time the old man stopped one of the ribbons, the other ribbons would riddle the old man’s body with attacks.

“****!!!!”

The six women shouted something inaudible at the same moment. Suddenly, In the air, six colourful ribbons fused together. These ribbons were formed of pure Qi which meant that the pure Qi of the six had combined.

“Formation!”

The crowd was astonished. Those six women were combining their pure Qi; they were going to combine their power and use it to fight against the old man.

“Die!” Shouted the old man furiously. He attacked towards the ribbons once again; his body rose into the air, but it seemed like no matter where he went, the women would follow.

“Boom!” A terrifying punch suddenly bombarded the atmosphere, and the atmosphere felt like it was shaking.

An endless stream of Pure Qi filled the air, and it seemed like it could break through anything as it rushed against the old man’s fist, knocking him back.

The old man started to shake. His punch was easily deflected which caused him to pull a long face.

“Pure Qi Prison!” Shouted the six women in unison. Their pure Qi looked incredibly powerful; the crowd was dumbstruck.

The six women were in perfection harmony with each other, as their pure Qi formed a cage which imprisoned the old man.

The old man’s face was a sight to be seen; his face grew glum, and he began to shake in terror. He could clearly sense the power of the pure Qi cage. How powerful!

When the old man noticed that the pure Qi was growing more violent over time, so he quickly shook his hand and formed a terrifying blade around his fist, it was made entirely from pure Qi.

“Arrghhhh!!!” The old man roared with all his might. His body rose into the air and a powerful punch smashed against the Qi cage. The cage emitted a bright light on impact and the sound of cracking filled the air.

“Bind!” Said another voice in an ice-cold tone which caused the atmosphere to shake. The pure Qi cage gave off a bright light and a terrifying pure Qi emerged. The Pure Qi rushed straight towards the old man.

“BOOM!”

A terrifying sound filled the air the two Qi's collided. The old man was starting to shake as his attack had been overcome and the threads of pure Qi immediately started to seal off his body. He was struggling like a madman to break free from the binding, but he was unable to stop the pure Qi from binding him.

“Bind!” The colourful ribbons fluttered on the wind and imprisoned the old man. From head to toe, the old man wrapped up like a colourful mummy. His body was bound in the shape of a cross, and his face was deathly pale with blood was flowing from his mouth.

“THUMP! THUMP! THUMP!”

Millions of hearts were all violently pounding at the same time; they couldn't believe what they had witnessed. A short time before, the old man was controlling everything and acting in an insufferably overbearing manner. However, in the blink of an eye, he was tied and bound by multiple colourful ribbons.

Those women were all extremely strong, but why did they attack the old man?

The mysterious woman looked at the old man who was bound by the colourful ribbons and said indifferently: “You think that just because he has no influence and no power supporting him, you can strut around and kill him as you please?”

Her words shocked the crowd.

She was obviously pointing towards Lin Feng.

That mysterious woman had come to the aid of Lin Feng.

The old man was astonished, his face had turned deathly pale, there wasn't a single drop of colour left in his body.

“Today, I have had enough. No matter how many influential groups step forward, if you continue to act like you are the kings of this world, I will show you what fate awaits you.” Said the mysterious woman while glancing at the crowd. “Since you refuse to abide by the rules and choose to break them, I will also ignore the rules; this national competition is over.”

When she finished talking, the mysterious woman turned to Lin Feng, a soft and tender expression appeared under her veil, her coldness and aloofness had vanished.

The twinkling of tears even started to appear in her eyes, but she quickly controlled herself.

“He wanted to take your life; now his life is in your hands. As far as the other two are concerned, the battle can continue. We will see if anyone has the courage to interrupt!” Said the woman while pointing at the old man and then to She Qiong and Chu Zhan Peng. Lin Feng had the power to kill the old man and continue his battle against She Qiong and Chu Zhan Peng.

Nobody would be able to intervene.

That woman was extremely aggressive, she looked down on everybody as if they were ants.

Chapter 436: The Massacre!

“Who is she?” The onlookers were growing very curious. Who was this woman who had the courage to look down upon everybody?

The people who were being looked down upon included members of the Yue Clan, the Yu Clan, the Wan Shou Sect, the Du Gu Clan, etc... They were all extremely powerful and influential. The mysterious woman had appeared to save Lin Feng and bound the old man who was overseeing the competition.

She wasn't even paying attention to the king who was still atop the dragons.

How could the crowd not be astonished?

“What a proud temperament!” Whispered Yue Qing Shan. His facial expression was strange. He was confused. That was his daughter, whom he hadn't encountered for more than eighteen years. Back then, she already had the power to cause waves throughout the entire country.

At that moment, though, she returned and wasn't even paying attention to her father, she treated him no better than she would a stranger.

The old man and all those with influence attempted to bully Lin Feng because they thought that Lin Feng didn't have anyone powerful supporting him. When watching how shamelessly Lin

Feng was targeted, she wasn't able to control herself; no one could stop her from intervening.

She was proud and aloof, but her message was clear; Lin Feng also had a powerful supporter behind him and everybody should fear the consequences of angering Lin Feng's supporter.

When Lin Feng heard the woman speak words of disdain toward the crowd, he was astonished. Her temperament was extremely familiar, but he could not remember where he had seen it. He was starting to have a deeper impression of *déjà vu*.

Why was she helping him? Was she the owner of the Lovesick Forest?

If she really was the owner of the Lovesick Forest, it meant that she was the beautiful woman who used to be the most outstanding female cultivator of Xue Yue. She had cut off all contact with her clan because she fell in love with a man without power or influence.

"Do we know each other?" Asked Lin Feng while looking at the mysterious woman, he was too curious.

The mysterious woman's heart felt like it had been ripped from her chest. How wouldn't she know Lin Feng? How many mothers couldn't recognize their son?

Her eyes had started to grow moist, under her veil. She slightly

noded, of course, they knew each other.

“First, you must deal with your current situation, and after that, I will tell you everything.” Said the woman while trembling. It was taking all of her power to remain calm.

“Alright.” Replied Lin Feng curiously while nodding. It seemed like many things were still hidden from him. There were many secrets in this world, and it might require more time to understand them all.

“Go and finish your battle with those two. No need to be worried about any further interruptions, I will kill anyone who attempts to get involved in this fight.” Said the mysterious woman with a coldness appearing on her face. She looked extremely aggressive.

If anyone got involved, she would kill them!

No influence? No support? She wanted everybody to know that nobody could bully and humiliate her son.

“Alright.” Noded Lin Feng solemnly. The members of the Yu Clan, the Wan Shou Sect, etc. Didn't make any attempts to intervene. They looked aggressive and arrogant, but the mysterious woman had loudly stated that she would kill anyone trying to intervene, so who would dare to intervene? It seemed like many influential people already knew the identity of the mysterious woman and everyone who knew her identity, was scared. No one dared to speak a word without thinking it over several times.

Lin Feng turned his head and looked at She Qiong and Chu Zhan Peng while releasing a terrifying, deadly energy.

She Qiong had to die for Meng Qing and Chu Zhan Peng's hatred of Lin Feng was extremely intense. Besides, Chu Zhan Peng attacked him by surprise which was cowardly and despicable; Lin Feng would not spare him. Today would see the death of a high official.

Lin Feng moved forwards and quickly arrived in front of She Qiong. He didn't need to waste any power being cautious anymore; nobody would disturb him. Lin Feng could focus his entire concentration on the opponents he was fighting!

A rumbling sound filled the air, and deadly energy crashed towards She Qiong's direction which made him frown.

She Qiong was pulling a long face, who was that mysterious woman and why was she protecting Lin Feng? Besides, she had also had the old man restrained and said his life was in Lin Feng's hands.

The flood dragon spirit appeared once again behind She Qiong. He looked both ferocious and frightened at the same time. Lin Feng was more outstanding than him on every possible level. A moment before, if the old man hadn't intervened, She Qiong would have already died.

"Chu Zhan Peng, let's fight together!" Said She Qiong while

glancing over to Chu Zhan Peng.

Chu Zhan Peng looked serious and solemn as he nodded. He was also curious to know who that mysterious woman was. Why was she able to act so domineering and imposing, yet nobody dared to utter a word against her?

“Die!” Shouted Lin Feng. His deadly energy poured into the atmosphere, as he flew like the wind in She Qiong’s direction. His target She Qiong had not changed. He was going to kill She Qiong and then he would fight against Chu Zhan Peng.

“Roaaarr!! The flood dragon howled as She Qiong charged forwards. It seemed like a flood dragon was trying to emerge from his body and into reality. At the same time, Lin Feng’s deadly energy and She Qiong’s flood dragon collided at full power.

“Chu Zhan Peng!” Roared She Qiong. Chu Zhan Peng understood what She Qiong meant; he released his large wings once again from his back; it seemed like he had transformed into a gigantic legendary roc. He spread his wings as his silhouette flickered. His body streaked across the sky and almost instantly he was closing in on Lin Feng.

“Get lost!” Lin Feng’s purple spirit rushed straight at him, while Lin Feng’s grim fire condensed in his hand. After a split second, a black lotus was formed and immediately moved in Chu Zhan Peng’s direction.

A calm and deadly energy invaded the atmosphere. The purple

spirit caught the black lotus in the air and swiped it in Chu Zhan Peng's direction which caused him to retreat in a hurry. At the same time, Lin Feng took another step towards She Qiong; nobody would prevent him from killing She Qiong.

His deadly energy started to become even more violent as it rushed through the air.

“Die!” Shouted Lin Feng as a terrifying, deadly energy rushed forward with the intent to kill. A rumbling sound unceasingly spread across the sky. It looked like nobody could stop that surge of deadly energy from reaching its target. Lin Feng was closing in on She Qiong with the intent to kill.

When She Qiong saw a black sword start to move in his direction, his expression grew even more ferocious. Lin Feng seemed like he was becoming stronger during their battle. That deadly energy was moving forwards with an indomitable will.

Lin Feng wanted She Qiong dead, and nobody could stop him. His killing intent came from the depths of his heart to form his deadly energy. The power of Lin Feng's deadly energy was improving thanks to his incredible comprehension ability. Lin Feng would stay true to his promise and kill She Qiong.

She Qiong needed to die, that was Lin Feng's deepest desire, his murderous intent was unbreakable.

“Kacha!” The atmosphere seemed like it was starting to shatter. His sword was lacerating everything in its path towards She Qiong;

only despair was left in She Qing's eyes.

Was he going to die?

She Qiong was the youngest officer of the Imperial Guards, he had practiced the warp fist and broken through to the fourth Xuan Qi layer, he was extremely strong. He was considered to be a top genius of the Imperial City but at that moment, at the national competition of Xue Yue, it seemed like he was going die at the hands of Lin Feng!

When he thought back to what he said to Meng Qing, about Lin Feng being unable to compete with him regarding influence and power, he felt like he was ridiculous. He had despised Lin Feng when he said that he would die no matter what. But, at that moment, he was going to die.

She Qiong calmly looked at the black sword moving towards him and then, everything suddenly came to an end. His heart was no longer beating, and the life had already left his eyes.

Lin Feng stayed true to his word; She Qiong was dead, and nobody could stop him.

“He's dead...” The crowd could feel their hearts twitching. Another genius had fallen, he had died by Lin Feng's hands.

Lin Feng still looked as emotionless as before; his face only had room for a terrifying, murderous intent.

He slightly moved his purple spirit, and the black lotus flew towards him, which astonished the crowd. It seemed like he could control the black lotus with his mind, no one could understand how such a thing was possible.

They obviously didn't know that Lin Feng had practiced the surplus soul's technique, and he could split his soul into many surplus souls. Lin Feng could already divide his soul into ten thousand surplus souls. The purple spirit which had been holding the black lotus then fused with another surplus soul so he could control his spirit and the black lotus while fighting.

"Now, it's your turn." Said Lin Feng while stretching out his hand that was holding the black lotus. He was speaking slowly which made Chu Zhan Peng narrow his eyes. Chu Zhan Peng then smiled coldly and said: "I have a legendary roc spirit, which grants me incredible speed, how do you intend to kill me if you cannot catch me?"

"You are not the only person in the world who can use a spirit." Replied Lin Feng indifferently. Immediately after, a dragon's roar spread through the air causing the atmosphere to vibrate. A dragon had appeared behind Lin Feng.

Lin Feng had a second spirit!

When the crowd saw the other spirit, they were astonished, each and every single person was dumbstruck!

Chapter 437: What Kind of Life?

“Roar!” The dragon roared, besides there was more than a single head and they were all roaring. That dragon had seven heads which looked down at the crowd causing their souls to tremble in fright.

“Dual spirit...” The crowd was astonished. Lin Feng had hidden something else, he had his purple spirit and a dragon spirit and when considering that dragon’s Qi, it seemed much more terrifying than Lin Feng’s purple spirit.

Of course, some people had already recognized the spirit and all of those who could were particularly dumbstruck!

That was.... The heavenly dragon spirit! It was the spirit of the Yue Clan!

Lin Feng surprisingly had the spirit of the Yue Clan, in other words, the blood of the Yue Clan was flowing through his veins!

When people discovered that, they were gobsmacked, many thoughts were circulating at full speed through their brains...was Lin Feng a member of the Yue Clan?!

“No, it can’t be!” Suddenly, a few people looked as if they had understood something incredible. It couldn’t be, Lin Feng was born in Yangzhou City, he couldn’t be a member of the Yue Clan. Besides, if he was a member of the Yue Clan, with such incredible natural talent, would Yue Qing Shan have allowed Lin Feng to be

bullied in such a way? He would have already got involved.

“Wait wait...” A great deal of people were stuck trying to understand the situation. Their hearts started pounding as they all thought of an answer.

If the blood of the Yue Clan flowed in somebody’s veins, it didn’t necessarily mean that the person was a member of the Yue Clan or that they were named Yue. There was another possibility, the possibility that a member of the Yue Clan had a child outside of the clan which inherited the blood spirit.

When the crowd thought about that possibility, they also looked to the mysterious woman in the sky.

Eighteen years ago, there was a woman from the Yue Clan who was so gifted that she shocked the entire country. However, because she fell for someone against the clan’s wishes, she had cut off ties with the Yue Clan and was never heard from again.

That mysterious woman must be the same woman who disappeared eighteen years ago, Yue Meng He! She had disappeared after she went against her family because of the man she loved.

Lin Feng was stood in the sky with that very woman, he was eighteen years old with the blood of the Yue Clan running through his veins.

The last time, at the Mount Sword, Yue Qing Shan also provided

a small assistance to Lin Feng.

Thoughts were racing at full speed, many people were dumbstruck and others felt their hearts pounding.

The truth was already crystal clear to those influential powers.

The one who was the most outstanding female cultivator in the country, who disappeared 18 years ago, was standing in the air in front of them. She was the mysterious woman. Others began to gradually understand the situation.

“Yue Meng He!” Thought many different factions while looking towards the Yue Clan. They all glanced at Yue Qing Shan, the head of the Yue Clan, for a second to confirm their suspicions. From his reaction, it was definitely Yue Meng He.

Lin Feng must be her son! Who was the person who said that Lin Feng had no influence and no one supporting him?

Who would dare to anger someone who was one of the most amazing cultivators of the country from eighteen years previous? Who knew how strong she had become within the past eighteen years?

The crowd was both terribly excited and puzzled at the same time. They looked at Lin Feng, confused as to what type of life he had lived so far.

After all, Lin Feng was only eighteen years old and he probably didn't know about the events of the past. He didn't know the full story regarding him and his parents, how could he make the connection?

Lin Feng had no idea of what other people were thinking. Concerning Chu Zhan Peng, he had already seen the blood spirit of the Yue Clan, the heavenly dragon spirit. He had never thought that Lin Feng would have this spirit since he was born in Yangzhou City.

Besides, many of the members of the Yue Clan were also shocked when they saw Lin Feng's spirit. The blood spirit of their clan? And on top of that it had seven heads!!

"Sigh....." Yue Qing Shan sighed deeply. He slightly closed his eyes and didn't open them for a long time. A painful smile could be seen on his face.

Why were the heavens so cruel towards him? His daughter, Yue Meng He, was the most gifted cultivator that the Yue Clan had been blessed with in generations, but she cut off all ties with the clan. Now, his grandson grew up without knowing that he had the blood of the Yue Clan was flowing within his veins. His dragon spirit even had a total of seven heads, only Yue Tian Ming could match his incredible power!

"What's that?"

At that moment, someone looked at the different heads of the

dragon, there was a bestial white light shining from one of the heads, it looked deathly pale and was releasing a bestial Qi, it looked gloomy.

That is..... A shaman spirit! The spirit that belonged to the Wan Shou Sect, it was Teng Wu Yao's spirit!

How could Lin Feng also have a shaman spirit?

Rumour said that the heavenly dragon spirit could consume ferocious beasts and spirits as their own strength.

When had Lin Feng's spirit come into contact with a cultivator who possessed a shaman spirit?

The crowd looked at the Wan Shou Sect and more precisely at Teng Wu Yao. They only saw that Teng Wu Yao looked particularly glum at that moment. He was fixedly staring at Lin Feng with enormous killing intent being released.

Lin Feng had a heavenly dragon spirit, no wonder Wu Zhen had disappeared without a word. Lin Feng killed him and consumed his spirit.

When Teng Wu Yao thought about how his son had been killed by Lin Feng, his face grew even more ferocious, his eyes wanted to kill Lin Feng using only his stare.

However, at that moment, Lin Feng wasn't paying attention to

people's expressions of surprise or to Teng Wu Yao's murderous intentions, he was focusing all of his attention on Chu Zhan Peng.

“The other day, you challenged me to a one-on-one fight and then today you attacked me by surprise with another person, but I will still honour your request for a fight. I know that you harbour killing intent, I will give you the opportunity you need. I want to see what Chu Zhan Peng, the high-official, can do apart from attacking people by surprise or being shameless and arrogant. I want to see if your arrogance and pride is justified.” Lin Feng was fixedly staring at Chu Zhan Peng and releasing a deadly energy which moved through the atmosphere towards Chu Zhan Peng's.

Lin Feng's purple dragon spirit and his heavenly dragon spirit circled the sky. Their gigantic evil-looking eyes were staring directly at Chu Zhan Peng like he was food. Being observed by two large monsters whose eyes looked particularly ruthless made Chu Zhan Peng feel even less comfortable.

“Spirit Fusion!” Shouted Lin Feng in a deep voice. In a flash, his two spirits slowly started to fuse together. The gigantic purple dragon was combining into the heavenly dragon spirit.

“Roaaarr!” A loud roar reverberated through the atmosphere. After fusing together, Lin Feng's spirits were releasing a terrifyingly powerful Qi.

His two spirits had fused!

“Die!” Shouted Lin Feng furiously. In his left hand, he had the

black lotus, in his right hand, he still had his black sword, coupled with his spirit fusion, Lin Feng looked like an unstoppable monster, he couldn't lose!

“Chu Zhan Peng is doomed!” Thought most of the people watching. They didn't even dare to believe otherwise. Chu Zhan Peng was ranked sixth amongst the high-officials and was going to lose to Lin Feng!

But Lin Feng was so incredible and awe-inspiring that they couldn't help but admire him.

“Let's fight!” Shouted Lin Feng. His deadly energy crashed through the air emitting a rumbling sound. His body then flew through the air in Chu Zhan Peng's direction.

In the sky, there was only deadly energy as far as the eye could see.

Chu Zhan Peng's wings were flapping in the air but he looked dumbstruck. Lin Feng had a black lotus in his left hand and a terrifying black sword in his right, what a monster!

“Eeeeeee.....” A sharp sound emerged from the legendary roc's mouth. A few threads of pure Qi turned into blue and green lights which were as sharp as claws, that shot towards Lin Feng.

“Pierce.” Said Lin Feng while raising his deadly sword. It seemed like it could annihilate anything in its path, in the blink of an eye,

Chu Zhan Peng's attack was shredded into nothing.

Besides, the deadly energy in the atmosphere didn't stop moving, it still crashed through the atmosphere in Chu Zhan Peng's direction.

Chu Zhan Peng spread his wings and his silhouette flickered, he flapped his wings with such power that it created a small hurricane in the air. At the same time, his wings continued flapping as he turned away in an attempt to escape. Surprisingly, he didn't have the courage to fight against Lin Feng any longer after his attack was so easily destroyed.

"Die!" Shouted Lin Feng while attacking with his sword while rushing forward like the wind.

At the same time, Lin Feng's fused spirits roared and charged forwards. Many purple lights were twinkling on the body of the heavenly dragon. All of its movements were monstrously fast, it was tyrannical.

Those purple lights shot out like snakes, but they moved much faster and were much more brutal than any ordinary snake.

"Roaaarr!" The dragon roared, its seven heads started to shake. It seemed like something was propelling Lin Feng through the air, he was moving extremely fast and looked like his power was being increased by several folds.

“Whoosh.”

The purple snakes had caught up with Chu Zhan Peng and wrapped around his body, binding him.

“Lacerate!” Shouted Chu Zhan Peng furiously, his wings were sharper than most swords, so the majority of the purples snakes were lacerated, but the purple light was growing more and more making it more painful as he cut the snakes. The dragon started to breathe a purple light from its mouth which strengthened the purple spirit further, The snakes then charged at Chu Zhan Peng’s body without restraint and bound every inch of his body in place.

Chapter 438: The Death of a High-Official!

“What a terrifying spirit!”

Chu Zhan Peng possessed a legendary roc spirit and his strength was in his speed, but Lin Feng’s purple spirit, after the fusion, had breathed out an incredible number of purple snakes which moved as fast as lightning, they were even faster than Lin Feng who could move with the wind. Chu Zhan Peng was restrained by the purple snakes in an instant; he was completely smothered by them.

A terrifying and sharp sound emerged in the atmosphere as the purple snakes surrounding Chu Zhan Peng’s body started breaking apart. In the middle of those purple snakes, Chu Zhan Peng unleashed a terrifying power.

In a flash, the myriad of purple snakes had vanished.

However, at the same time, Lin Feng had already arrived, and his shocking, deadly energy replaced the purple snakes that surrounded Chu Zhan Peng. Chu Zhan Peng had just destroyed the purple snakes when he noticed the deadly energy surrounding him. It was coming so fast that Chu Zhan Peng didn’t even have time to dodge, he could only try to block it.

“Arghhhh!” Chu Zhan Peng shouted furiously, as a pure brutal Qi rose into the air and the incomparably sharp wings of the legendary roc started swiping towards the deadly energy.

“Boom!”

“Psssh!”

Lin Feng’s deadly sword pierced through Chu Zhan Peng’s legendary roc spirit and a fountain of blood sprayed into the air. Chu Zhan Peng unleashed a scream of agony as he used pure Qi to propel himself backwards. He needed to escape at all costs.

“NO! Zhan Peng!” Shouted Chu Qing at that moment. He couldn’t help but throw himself towards Lin Feng like a bolt of lightning crossing the skies.

But his speed crossing this large distance was a fraction slower than Lin Feng’s sword.

Lin Feng’s entire body released a powerful, deadly energy as his sword filled with killing intent. Lin Feng took another step forwards, his dragon roared as the terrifying Qi crashed into the dragon’s body, Lin Feng wasn’t even phased as he continued forward with his sword.

“Psssh!”

Lin Feng sliced down with his sword. Another spray of blood filled the air, and the same horrible shriek could be heard again. Chu Zhan Peng’s body was covered with blood from head to toe. His face was scarlet red and painted with blood. He no longer had the power left to fly anymore, and his body started to plummet towards the ground.

At the moment when Lin Feng was attacking Chu Zhan Peng's plummeting body, Chu Qing had joined the battle, he had arrived beneath Chu Zhan Peng and unleashed his pure Qi in Lin Feng's direction.

"Die!" Shouted Chu Qing furiously as he punched through the air, his fist unleashed a sharp Qi towards Lin Feng. Chu Qing's face was filled with murder when he saw the Qi about to reach Lin Feng.

"Wind." As if Lin Feng hadn't seen Chu Qing's attack, his silhouette flickered, and just like the wind he drifted along the sky.

His terrifying Qi rolled through the atmosphere. Chu Qing flew into the sky and in a flash, he was at the same altitude as Lin Feng, it wouldn't be easy for either side to miss an attack from this distance.

"Die!" Shouted Lin Feng in a deep voice. Under the moonlight, many images of Lin Feng appeared.

Lin Feng passed by Chu Qing as if he was never there; they looked like strangers passing each other on the street.

Even though Chu Qing was standing in his path, Lin Feng continued past him and moved towards Chu Zhan Peng, at the same time he released a black object from his hands which rushed towards Chu Qing.

Chu Qing suddenly lowered his head and saw a huge wound had appeared in his chest. There was a black lotus that had landed on his chest, as the flames penetrated into his body. His chest felt like it was on fire, the Lotus had burned a hole through his entire chest.

“Ahhhh!!” A horrible and bloodcurdling shriek filled the air. Immediately after, the crowd saw Chu Qing’s body was burnt black. Fire. That black lotus had unleashed condensed grim fire which burnt Chu Qing into ashes.

“How scary.” The crowd was shocked, and their hearts were pounding restlessly. The patriarch of the Hao Yue Sect, Chu Qing could be burnt alive by Lin Feng’s black lotus with such little effort?

All the members of the Hao Yue Sect stood up and fixedly stared at the black flames. In a flash, the last of Chu Qing’s body was turned to ashes and disappeared in the wind. He had been burnt alive.

He was dead. The patriarch of the Hao Yue Sect, Chu Qing, was no more.

Besides, it wasn’t over, Lin Feng after attacking Chu Qing with his black lotus, continued to release his deadly energy which crashed downwards towards Chu Zhan Peng. His deadly black sword also continued on its path and descended from the sky.

The black light from the deadly energy was illuminated by the pale moonlight; it was strangely beautiful. Lin Feng's deadly sword was about to reach Chu Zhan Peng who was currently cowering in fear. Suddenly, Chu Zhan Peng looked terrified; he couldn't believe what he was seeing; his eyes were filled with resentment, grief and many other feelings.

However, nothing could be changed. Chu Zhan Peng was one of the eight high-officials and a genius cultivator; he would never have thought that a little insect who was only at the Qi layer, would one day become strong enough to kill him. He had destroyed the Yun Hai Sect and completely disregarded all of its members, but Lin Feng continued to grow despite adversity.

Back then, Lin Feng was only a cultivator at the Qi layer, he was nothing to Chu Zhan Peng, but at that moment, he had become an unbelievable genius who could kill one of the eight high-officials.

“Splash!”

Chu Zhan Peng's body was blasted into the water of the lake with a loud splash. Water splashed everywhere as his blood dyed the water with a tinge of red. Then, thick red blood spread across the surface of the lake.

At that moment, Chu Zhan Peng and his father Chu Qing were reunited.

Every single member of the Hao Yue Sect was shaking. They were dead! The patriarch of the Hao Yue Sect had just died, and now his

son was killed! This was the end for the Hao Yue Sect.

Besides, nobody was left to avenge them. Who would dare to fight against Lin Feng? Chu Qing was killed by him in an instant.

The crowd looked at the proud young man and felt like the entire competition had been a dream. That outstanding young man had astonished them time after time again, causing them to be left in disbelief. He was offering the most outstanding and dazzling of shows.

From that day, Lin Feng would be a ranked high-official, immediately entering at the sixth position.

Ling Tian was dead, She Qiong was dead, Chu Qing was dead, Chu Zhan Peng the sixth high-official just died, and they were all killed by Lin Feng! Nothing could stop Lin Feng from becoming the sixth high-official of Xue Yue at that moment.

On the side of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, Duan Tian Lang was left mouth agape. He was fixedly staring at Lin Feng with murderous intentions. They were all dead and no one had managed to kill Lin Feng!

Besides, he was her son.

Luo Xue was also pulling a long face. Initially, he still wanted to avenge his fellow disciples Bing Yuan's death. However, at that moment, he had already given up on the idea. Killing Lin Feng? He

would just get himself killed instead!

At Luo Xue's side, there was Lin Qian. She looked absolutely desperate and pitiful at that moment.

Chu Zhan Peng, her only hope, was dead.

Besides, it wouldn't be an exaggeration to say that Chu Zhan Peng's death was directly caused by her. If she hadn't taken him to get revenge on Lin Feng, Chu Zhan Peng would never have encountered Lin Feng, and they wouldn't have been led down this path. Chu Zhan Peng would never have a reason to make attempts on Lin Feng's life if it wasn't for Lin Qian pushing him. The events which caused his death were all her fault.

Because of her, the Lin Clan had collapsed into ruin and a never before seen genius was expelled from the clan. Because of her, the Hao Yue Sect had lost its patriarch and junior patriarch, the entire sect would be removed from history.

The patriarch of the Hao Yue Sect had died after joining a fight between juniors, Chu Zhan Peng had died after attacking Lin Feng by surprise, the members of the Hao Yue Sect felt like there was no longer any prestige remaining. Many of the members would leave and the other sects would tear apart the remains of the Hao Yue Sect.

But Lin Feng wasn't thinking about what would happen to the sect now; he was looking at the colourful ribbons and the old man being restrained.

At that moment, the old man looked deathly pale; there wasn't a single trace of colour on his face. The regret was written all over his face, but he couldn't change his actions even if he wanted to.

What he had done was catastrophic, he had provoked her. His life was at their mercy and nobody would come to his rescue. Nobody would even think about trying to save him.

The old man understood exactly what identity this woman held. Nobody could save him from death.

The old man had a great deal of power and influence on his side, but today he was going to die.

The old man hated himself for his own stupidity. He hadn't even considered the possibility of Lin Feng having a powerful support behind him. He foolishly believed that Lin Feng was only still alive because he had luck on his side.

When Lin Feng saw the old man, his facial expression became cold, and he released more deadly energy which fiercely cut through the air.

“You thought that you could bully me because I have no backer, that's why you abused your power to help She Qiong fight against me. You tried to make it so that, I, Lin Feng, had no choice but to die. Now, your life is in my hands. Is there anything you have to say for yourself?” Asked Lin Feng coldly. If the old man hadn't directly interfered and prevented him from finding Meng Qing,

Meng Qing wouldn't have been injured!

Chapter 439: The Pieces Come Together!

When the old man heard Lin Feng, he remained silent, what could he say in this situation?

It was exactly as Lin Feng described it, and now the old man's life was in Lin Feng's hands.

“Is there any possibility of a negotiation?” Asked the old man while looking at Lin Feng.

“No, there isn't.” Replied Lin Feng without any hesitation while shaking his head.

“When you were in the position of power, you humiliated me and played with me as if I was nothing. You wanted to take my life and humiliate Meng Qing. Now that I am the one with power, do you really think that I will be merciful and spare your life?” When the crowd heard Lin Feng, they sighed. Indeed, everybody had seen how the old man had treated Lin Feng. In the illusion, he had prevented Lin Feng from meeting Meng Qing, Lin Feng wasn't able to enter the room where Meng Qing and She Qiong were fighting.

Besides, after the illusion stopped, Lin Feng and She Qiong started fighting. When She Qiong seemed to have the advantage, the old man hadn't intervened, When Chu Zhan Peng joined the battle and attacked Lin Feng by surprise, the old man didn't act. The old man only took action when he saw that She Qiong was about to die. He was playing with Lin Feng the entire time, because he was supporting She Qiong. The situation had now drastically

changed and at that moment, Lin Feng had the power, the old man's life was in his hands, so would he let the old man live? Impossible!

The old man sighed, he felt regret from the bottom of his heart but there was no cure for regret.

“I hate my own foolish actions, I thought about the gains from interfering with a rising genius, unfortunately, I was just fooling myself.” Sighed the old man. He then slowly closed his eyes and said: “Let me die in peace.”

“Alright, I will give you that.” Lin Feng slightly nodded and raised his hand, a black flame started to burn, it released threads of deadly energy into the air.

Lin Feng's hand shook and the grim fire landed by the old man's heart. In a flash, the deadly energy spread across the defenceless old man's chest. The old man's facial muscles twitched and immediately after, his head fell limply towards his chest as he stopped moving. However, the grim fire continued burning his body into nothingness.

A cultivator of the fifth Xuan Qi layer was dead! And on top of that, he was sent from the Imperial City.

The crowd sighed, just how many strong cultivators had died today? Ling Tian, She Qiong, Chu Zhan Peng, Chu Qing and the old man, these were only the few that were killed by Lin Feng.

The fire kept burning across the old man's body as the colourful ribbons returned to their owners. At that moment, a ring which was diffusing pallid lights appeared in the air in front of Lin Feng which surprised him.

Lin Feng stretched his arm out and grabbed the ring.

The old man had broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer and was from the Imperial City, there were probably lots of treasures and wealth that had accumulated over a long time in that ring.

After that, Lin Feng turned around and looked at the mysterious woman. He looked perplexed, he still didn't understand why she was helping him, and why did he have the same feeling of closeness whenever he looked at her?

"Do we know each other?" Asked Lin Feng again while looking at the mysterious woman. Lin Feng's intuition was telling him that there was a connection between them.

When the mysterious woman heard Lin Feng, she started to tremble.

She could walk through the sky, look down upon the earth, she could raise her hand and kill thousands, but she was unable to remain calm in front of Lin Feng. Lin Feng's indifferent and emotionless voice when speaking with her made her bite down on her lips, she wanted to shout the truth from the top of her lungs, but she didn't know what to say.

Could she tell Lin Feng that she was his mother even though she hadn't seen him throughout the entire eighteen years of his life?

Lin Feng was waiting for her answer but she remained silent.

The people who understood their story were sighing, the woman was also sighing, everything was about to change.

"She's Lin Hai's wife and you ask her if you know each other?" A shout suddenly interrupted. A few people sighed, nothing could change what happened in the past, that was the truth of the matter. That sentence made Lin Feng's heart start to race.

Lin Hai's wife!!!

A sharp and cruel light filled Lin Feng's eyes. The one who had just spoken was Yue Qing Shan, the head of the Yue Clan.

"What the hell is going on?!" Lin Feng's thoughts and feeling were completely chaotic. A moment ago, he had guessed that this woman was the owner of the Lovesick Forest and last time, Duan Xin Ye had told him that the person was a beautiful woman from the Yue Clan. She was the most dazzling female cultivator of Xue Yue, but she eventually cut ties with the Yue Clan. In other words, it was also possible that she was related to Yue Qing Shan.

When Yue Meng He saw Lin Feng's expression, she nodded slowly in agreement. She put her hand on her bamboo hat and threw it away. The bamboo hat flew away on the wind and the

mysterious woman's face appeared.

She looked pure, delicate and soft. She had arched eyebrows and an oval face, her beautiful eyes were filled with tears and her face had turned red. She still looked tender and soft, but there was something more, she looked sad.

“Meng He, you haven't changed at all.” Yue Qing Shan's silhouette flickered and he rose into the air. While looking at that woman's face, he couldn't help but sigh.

Yue Meng He looked at Yue Qing Shan, she was extremely puzzled. If Yue Qing Shan had stood by her and agreed for her to be with Lin Hai, none of this would have happened.

“You have changed, your hair is now white.” Said Yue Meng He in a low voice. It was impossible to see her thoughts from her facial expression.

“Indeed, I am old now. I might die soon, but even now, you still refuse to call me father.” Said Yue Qing Shan who had mixed feelings. He loved his daughter and he was able to see her again, but they were no better than strangers.

Her father!

Many people didn't know that Yue Meng He was his daughter, when they heard that, their hearts felt uneasy.

Yue Qing Shan was saying that Yue Meng He refused to call him father, so she must be his daughter!

Yue Meng He, eighteen years ago, used to be the most outstanding female cultivator in the country.

Many people found themselves excited when they recalled the story about the events eighteen years ago, so that's it, the incredible female genius who had amazed Xue Yue eighteen years ago was his daughter.

Besides, it seemed like Lin Feng was Yue Meng He's son... So wasn't he also Yue Qing Shan's grandson!?

He had the heavenly dragon spirit, the spirit of the Yue Clan, everything was becoming clearer. Lin Feng was also starting to understand everything.

Lin Feng had the blood spirit of the Yue Clan and was the head of the Yue Clan's grandson.

"Call you father?" Yue Meng He frowned and then said coldly: "Do you think that you have acted as a father?"

Yue Meng He's voice was filled with resentment, she was blaming Yue Qing Shan for everything that happened, which left him speechless.

"Everything I've done, if it wasn't for you then it was for the Yue

Clan.” Replied Yue Qing Shan. He looked troubled after hearing Yue Meng He’s words, but he replied with a clear conscience.

“So you still think that what you did was right for the Yue Clan... And right by me?” Yue Meng He was looking at him like he was pathetic. She smiled coldly and said: “So what do you want, why have you come over to me?”

When Yue Qing Shan heard her words, he was surprised. He always thought that he had made the correct choice, but Yue Meng He, from beginning to the end, never changed her view. They were both alike, neither would admit if they had been wrong. When there was a large disagreement between a father and his daughter, it was difficult to solve it.

Lin Feng was standing between them, unable to calm down. His heart was drumming in his ears and his thoughts were beyond chaotic.

He was trying to remember Duan Xin Ye’s story about what happened eighteen years ago with the four geniuses, but he never paid it much heed.

Amongst those four geniuses, three of them had fallen in love with the fourth, the most outstanding female cultivator in the country. After that, Zhuge Wu Qing gave up his pursuit and the beautiful woman had chosen the man who had no family or influence. In the end, the one from the Imperial Clan was angry at Yue Meng He and her lover, so he sealed her lover who wasn’t famous and forced him to leave the Imperial City.

The Imperial Clan, the sealed doors!

Lin Feng's heart was racing. He suddenly remembered that his father had a black mark on his body, it was a sealed door.

The outstanding yet unknown cultivator who had amazed the country eighteen years previously. The one left with a sealed door on his body, was his father, Lin Hai! All the pieces were starting to come together! Lin Feng would have never thought that the story that he had heard by chance, was hiding such a big secret, it was the story of his parents!

Chapter 440: Satisfied!

When Lin Feng looked at that beautiful woman, he had the impression that he must be dreaming. That beautiful woman was his mother!

She was once the most beautiful woman of Xue Yue and she definitely deserved that title.

Eighteen years later and she still looked so beautiful, graceful and elegant, what must she have looked like eighteen years ago? She was probably even more beautiful than one could imagine.

Yue Qing Shan sighed, he was looking at Yue Meng He while remaining silent. He then looked at Lin Feng, he wanted to say something, but didn't know what to say. In the end, his silhouette flickered and he moved back down and returned to the Yue Clan.

Yue Meng He stopped looking towards Yue Qing Shan, she then looked at Lin Feng and nibbled on her lips. She said in a low voice: "Little Feng, you've been suffering for eighteen years."

Lin Feng opened his mouth and then closed it as nothing was coming out. Even though he had arrived in this world a few years ago, his soul had already fused with that of the real Lin Feng. He was part of the old Lin Feng and the old Lin Feng was part of him.

He was unable to forget the memories of his previous self, therefore, seeing that woman, who gave the impression of a strong yet elegant woman, who seemed to care so much about him, was

very strange to him. It seemed like that slim and graceful woman was... his mother.

Lin Feng smiled wryly for a while and took a deep breath. The Lin Feng who was originally from this world had already died, it was useless to continue thinking about it.

He was himself and he had to live for the present. There may have been two in the past, but now there was only one Lin Feng. He had to live his life the way he wanted to, he wanted to make those close to him happy... Above the water of the lake, which had tints of red from the blood, there was a proud genius, Lin Feng.

“Mother.” A magnificent and radiant smile appeared on Lin Feng’s face. After all the chaos in his heart, he felt like he had been reborn, this could be a new start. He suddenly felt like he had become more mature, he understood many things about himself and his past self. Lin Feng was also more detailed in his way of thinking.

Being called ‘Mother’ caused Yue Meng He to be speechless. She was standing in the moonlight which illuminated her beauty, as well as her radiant eyes.

Tears had begun to form on the corners of her eyes. She had been waiting to hear these words for eighteen years.

During those eighteen years, she wanted to hear Lin Feng call her ‘Mother’ with all her being and finally, she had the chance to hear the words she had always dreamed of.

When she heard Lin Feng call her ‘Mother’, all her sadness washed away and she was overcome with happiness. She had done everything during these past years for the sake of Lin Feng and now she felt like all the suffering was worth it.

Yue Meng He moved over to Lin Feng and put her two hands on his face. She couldn’t help but gently caress her son’s face. Her son wasn’t any weaker than her when she was at his age.

Lin Feng was a genius when it came to swords, she was proud of him! She was deeply gratified in her heart.

“I just wanted to scream at all those fools, how in the world could my son be a piece of trash?” Yue Meng He laughed and gently caressed her son’s head with a magnificent smile on her face. It seemed like she had been keeping tabs on Lin Feng for the last eighteen years and knew that people would call her son a piece of trash, but by relying on his own efforts, Lin Feng had risen to the top.

If Lin Feng hadn’t been extremely strong and didn’t have extremely high natural abilities, she might not have been able to contact her son.

If he hadn’t been strong, he wouldn’t be a free man, if Lin Feng had been a worthless cultivator, she would’ve rather let him live an ordinary life and not get involved with the world of cultivation. Even if he wasn’t outstanding, he could at least have a happy and tranquil life.

That had always been Lin Hai's thought, it was agreed between Lin Hai and Yue Meng He.

Therefore, Lin Hai never tried to force Lin Feng to cultivate, he wanted him to have the chance at life as an ordinary person, but after that Lin Feng displayed his talent, Lin Hai knew his son wasn't ordinary. He decided to let Lin Feng leave home and create his own path. The result of his actions was a complete success, Lin Feng was proof.

Lin Feng had come to the Imperial City and relied on his own talents to accomplish a great deal of meritorious acts, which made him the stuff of legends.

At that moment, Yue Meng He and Lin Hai had discovered that Lin Feng had started to walk a very straightforward path.

But no matter what path Lin Feng chose, his parents would silently and secretly guide him until they could meet again. Until that moment, his mother was always secretly Monitoring him.

Many people had thought that her son had no influence and no powerful backers, they thought that they could bully him, harass him and try to kill him, without worrying about an outside force.

How could Yue Meng He let those people get away with that? She had shown herself and she was announcing to everybody that Lin Feng was her son, she wouldn't tolerate anyone trying to bully or kill her son, who would dare say that Lin Feng was trash with her

around?

When thinking about those things, Yue Meng He glanced at the crowd with a cold glare and spoke.

“A moment ago, so many people were saying that my son needed to die and that they wanted to kill him, come out and show yourselves, I dare you to say it again.”

Yue Meng He's words stupefied the crowd.

A moment before, the Yu Clan, the Du Gu Clan, the Wan Shou Sect, the Hao Yue Sect, the Luo Xia Sect, the Ice and Snow Mountain Village etc. had all said that they wanted Lin Feng dead, but at that moment, when Yue Meng He was glaring at them in such an ice-cold way, they could only shake and shiver without saying a word.

Nobody dared to say anything because nobody knew how terrifyingly strong she had become after eighteen years of seclusion.

Perhaps Yue Meng He had already become stronger than the head of the Yue Clan, Yue Qing Shan.

On the path of cultivation, seniors passed their innate talents on to the next generation and the next generation was expected to surpass them with time.

Everybody was silent. Yue Meng He smiled coldly and said: “You’re a bunch of worthless cowards, you don’t even speak when I am here, if anyone attempts to harm my son, I, Yue Meng He, will annihilate them!”

When she finished talking, Yue Meng He suddenly released a monstrous deadly energy which rolled across the sky and suppressed the entire crowd. Many people couldn’t breathe under such a heavy pressure.

“What a terrifying pressure!” Many people looked glum, especially those who had a grudge against Lin Feng. Yue Meng He was too strong, that pressure alone was choking them and it was only a warning, it was a guarantee that she, Yue Meng He, had the power to enforce her words.

Besides, the crowd knew that if they offended Yue Meng He, they would also offend someone else, Zhuge Wu Qing.

If anything happened to Yue Meng He, the Yue Clan would definitely intervene.

“Hmph.” Yue Meng He groaned coldly and said: “This so-called genius competition is pointless, a great majority of you are nothing but corrupt and despicable people, who have no principles. I will be watching you in the future. In a short while, the people from the empire will arrive, at that time, I am convinced that they will pick out the most outstanding geniuses themselves, they have eyes. They will know with a glance what kind of trash you people are.

When she finished talking, she looked at Lin Feng and said: “Little Feng, this competition is over, let’s go.”

“Alright.” Nodded Lin Feng. Yue Meng He and Lin Feng’s silhouettes flickered and they instantly arrived next to Meng Qing.

Yue Meng He glanced at Meng Qing and smiled. The crowd was dazzled by the two beauties.

Yue Meng He was named the most beautiful woman in Xue Yue eighteen years ago, and she was still extremely beautiful. Then there was Lin Feng’s lover, Meng Qing, she looked holy and pure, like a celestial being, Yue Meng He and Meng Qing standing next to each other was too beautiful, the rest of the world lost its beauty in their presence.

But those two women weren’t in the same generation, so there was no use comparing between the mature one and the young beauty. Meng Qing was Lin Feng’s woman and was therefore Yue Meng He’s daughter-in-law, how could there be competition between them?

When Lin Feng saw Yue Meng He and Meng Qing look at each other, he still felt extremely nervous. In his previous world, this would mean that the mother-in-law was sizing up the daughter-in-law.

Lin Feng wasn’t the only one who was nervous, something very rare happened at that moment, Meng Qing had a nervous expression on her face. When she saw that Yue Meng He was sizing

her up, she lowered her head shyly.

“Yue Meng He, Meng Qing, it’s interesting that you both have the character “Meng” in your name!”

Yue Meng He continued to stare at Meng Qing and then said while laughing: “My son is a smart young man.”

“Eehh....” Lin Feng was surprised. Yue Meng He glanced at Meng Qing for a few seconds and then said a few words to break the awkward silence. Lin Feng was speechless as he smiled wryly.

Meng Qing who was still lowering her head had a magnificent smile on her face. Yue Meng He was Lin Feng’s mother so Meng Qing needed her approval for Lin Feng and Meng Qing’s relationship, it was extremely important to her!

Chapter 441: The Crown Prince!

The light of the full moon was still shining down on the lake, but light was starting to form on the horizon. The water of the lake was still calm. It seemed like the light from the horizon was growing more and more intense.

At that moment, there was nobody fighting above the lake any longer. Yue Meng He and Lin Feng had already left.

After they had left, the people around the lake remained silent. Nobody knew what to say. Some people were still digesting the shocking events they had encountered that night.

Lin Feng had caused everyone's hearts to race. He had shocked everybody, from the beginning to the end. First, he released a terrifying, deadly energy which he formed into a sword, he then revealed the power of his Black Lotus. He killed Ling Tian; he killed She Qiong; he killed Chu Qing and Chu Zhan Peng.

So many extremely famous cultivators were dead because of Lin Feng. Lin Feng had achieved a miracle when facing a strong opponent, he would show more strength; it seemed like no matter how strong his opponent was, he always had another hidden trick to deal with them.

At the same time, Yue Meng He had finally revealed herself. She was the daughter of Yue Qing Shan, the head of the Yue Clan. Eighteen years ago, she was the most beautiful and most outstanding female cultivator of Xue Yue; she was one of the four

strongest cultivators in the country. Everything about her amazed people, Yue Meng He was truly gifted.

After having stayed in the dark for eighteen years, she had finally revealed herself, for her son, Lin Feng.

Just like eighteen years before, she was still as amazing, as dazzling and as graceful as ever. She was also extremely talented when it came to cultivation; Lin Feng definitely shared her talent.

In Lin Feng's veins was the blood of the Yue Clan. Thanks to that, he had the heavenly dragon spirit of the Yue Clan, the heavenly celestial fangs spirit.

This time, the real hero of the national competition was Lin Feng.

Many people were still silent on the bank of the lake; they were looking at the nine dragons floating above the water. The person on the throne had only said two sentences; then he had stopped talking as if he never existed, to begin with. When Yue Meng He attacked the old man, he didn't even attempt to stop her.

Until that moment, nobody knew exactly who he was, many people believed it to be the king of Xue Yue.

A gentle breeze started to blow across the lake, the dreary and desolate moonlight was starting to fade, and it was growing cold.

“Everybody may leave now.” Finally, the one sitting on the throne spoke, he sounded calm and serene, but his words were firm.

Leave?

Was everybody just supposed to leave? Was the national competition over? Had it really been stopped?

The crowd all let out disappointed sighs, many of them still wanted to see the other high-officials fight, but now it seemed impossible. Most of them had travelled a long way to watch; they could at least be happy that they had seen the rise of Lin Feng, he would be the newest entry to the eight high-officials.

From that day on, Lin Feng was one of the eight high-officials.

The dragon roared which caused the air to shake. The water of the lake started to grow turbulent as the nine flood dragons dashed into the sky and spread their gigantic wings.

When the crowd saw those eight mighty dragons, they started to shake. They were wondering who the dragons’ master was.

“Who was it on the throne? It should be the king, right?”

At that moment, a member of the Luo Xia Sect whispered, trying to guess who the person was.

“The King? In my opinion, he wasn’t anyone powerful. Lin Feng acted so aggressively, Yue Meng He then threatened and insulted everybody, and all those people were killed in front of him, should such a coward be called a king?” Joked his interlocutor.

“Brother, don’t talk so loud! What if he heard you!” Replied the other one surprised. How could they provoke the person sitting on that throne, his status must be immense.

“I’m serious, what are you scared of? Even if he hears you, our teacher would not fear him.” Said the other in a loud voice, he was sucking up to his teacher, Gu Chun Qiu.

“Alright, shut up!” Shouted Gu Chun Qiu.

“Teacher, what I am only speaking the truth, that person didn’t even dare to speak up, he just hid behind the dragons and sat on his throne. If he is not a coward and a weakling, what is?!” Said that person even more loudly. At that moment, everybody could hear his words and many people were watching him.

Gu Chun Qiu frowned and then the sound of a dragon roar filled the sky. A terrifyingly brutal Qi emerged and pressured everybody, which made their facial expressions change to one of fear. How terrifying! What pressure!

Gu Chun Qiu’s face also drastically changed... That pressure was painful for him to withstand. It was brutal, aggressive and violent. At that moment, the person sitting on the throne was still silent

but was obviously furious.

“This doesn’t look good.” Said Gu Chun Qiu in a low voice. Besides, the other members of the Luo Xia Sect looked even glummer, especially the one who had just shouted out. His face turned deathly pale in the blink of an eye, absolutely void of colour. That pressure had fallen onto his body and terrified him.

A subtle sound spread in the air, it was as if the atmosphere was going to break under such pressure. The flood dragons’ roars were growing more violent; their roar could almost tear apart the atmosphere. Then the curtains covering the throne were turned into dust.

Immediately after, the crowd saw a silhouette streak across the sky above the lake. He was looking down to the ground, so his long hair hung loosely as it flowed on the wind. He looked extremely majestic and domineering as he stood in the sky, he also looked extremely brutal and aggressive, like a monarch, his Qi was as glistening as jewels but felt like death itself.

“Run!” Shouted Gu Chun Qiu but many people couldn’t escape; they were consumed by the monstrous energy, they couldn’t move under such pressure. Some people even fell to their knees, they all felt ice-cold sweat dripping down their backs, especially the one who had just insulted that person, his face was colourless and his face was twitching.

That brutal silhouette nosedived in a flash, cracking sounds spread through the air and blood burst into the sky. Hatred could be seen emerging in the eyes of the people close to the victim, and

in a flash, those people became corpses too. That silhouette was slicing apart his enemies in the most brutal and cruel way.

Besides, those who had just witnessed that attack had started to scream. They couldn't resist the power of the pressure anymore. Their blood vessels were starting to burst, and blood filled the air.

The majority of the members from the Luo Xia Sect were now dead. Gu Chun Qiu had been slightly faster than the others and managed to escape the catastrophe.

Everybody was stupefied by that brutal display. The man looked terrifying. Glancing at him once was almost enough to feel pain, his expression was extremely sharp.

He was wearing a yellow chang pao, and his energy was brutal, violent and monstrously strong. His brutal and violent Qi gave people the feeling that there was only room for him in the world, it was if everybody else didn't have the right to exist.

That person frowned and looked towards Gu Chun Qiu.

“Those who have no respect must die!” After saying that, that man released a deadly Qi which moved straight towards Gu Chun Qiu whose facial expression drastically changed.

How could this be happening? How was it possible? He was so terrified when seeing the power of the attack that he didn't even think about blocking.

He didn't need to fight; he stood no chance at victory. The only thing he wanted was to make it out alive.

Pure Qi surrounded his body, and he quickly ran away. Rose coloured clouds started to form around his body. The brutal figure rushed forwards and threw himself at Gu Chun Qiu. All of his movements seemed random, but he was very organised. The brutal energy was filling the atmosphere around them.

“Die!” A terrifying voice resonated in Gu Chun Qiu's brain. He abruptly started to tremble. He wanted to dodge but how? It seemed like it was impossible at that moment.

It was the first time that he had felt such fear. It seemed like that person was inside his mind.

“Pssssh...”

Blood splashed everywhere. Gu Chun Qiu, the patriarch of the Luo Xia Sect, had been killed in an instant. His body was destroyed, he was dead.

Because of a few words, the Luo Xia Sect was annihilated. It sounded like a ridiculous lie, but this was the reality.

As the crowd watched on, flabbergasted. The powerful and brutal looking man flew through the air and landed on a dragon. He looked extremely aggressive; he was looking down on all the

people around him.

“Eighteen years ago they brought us great pride, so when those seniors appeared, I would let them express themselves freely. But from today, Xue Yue is under my control and only mine!” When he finished talking, his dragons roared and soared to the sky, however, the people’s hearts were pounding when they recognised the man.

“The crown prince, Duan Wu Dao!”

Chapter 442: Meeting Again

The prince who was silently sitting on the throne was in the sky and looked extremely aggressive, proud and arrogant. Other than the prince, who could act in such a manner?

This was precisely Duan Wu Dao; he was just like the rumours said, unruly, wild and aggressive. If somebody offended him, they would die, if they respected him, he would let them live happily. Respecting him was their only choice.

His dragons roared, and a strong wind rolled through the atmosphere, and Duan Wu Dao disappeared into the horizon, but the crowd couldn't calm down.

First, Lin Feng had astonished them, then Duan Wu Dao, those two young men had made people's hearts tremble. The Luo Xia Sect had suffered tremendous losses. Even though the powerful sects in the country had a great deal of influence and power, if they insulted or disrespected him, they would die. If someone was strong enough, they have absolute freedom to do as they wished. The power and influence of those sects were nothing in front of Duan Wu Dao and his monstrous strength; he could destroy it all in the blink of an eye.

“He deserves to be the first ranked high-official. Rumours say that all the other seven high officials working together would still be weaker than him, I wonder if it's true...?” Thought some people at that moment. Du Wu Dao was monstrously strong. In people's eyes, Chu Zhan Peng was strong and had terrifying natural abilities, but in comparison with Duan Wu Dao, he seemed

insignificant.

“He’s become even stronger.” Thought Yue Tian Ming while looking at Duan Wu Dao vanishing into the horizon. Yue Tian Ming was ranked second amongst the eight high officials, his goal had always been to surpass Duan Wu Dao but at that moment, he had just found out that Duan Wu Dao had become even stronger. The difference between them had grown even larger, Duan Wu Dao was becoming much stronger over time, he was monstrously strong.

.....

In the Lovesick Forest, there was a restricted area filled with beautiful green bamboo trees, the air was pure and fresh, nature was in a beautiful harmony.

In the middle of the bamboo trees, there were many small houses; they were equally spread across the bamboo forest. Those who lived there could hear the rustling from within the forest.

Yue Meng He, Lin Feng and Meng Qing were walking slowly through the bamboo forest. The others had gone back alone.

“Mother, have you stayed here for eighteen years without leaving?” Asked Lin Feng while looking at Yue Meng He. According to Duan Xin Ye, after having disappeared eighteen years ago, the four outstanding disciples had stopped showing themselves. Lin Feng’s mother had always stayed in the forest, in that restricted area, she didn’t allow people to see her, and she

didn't see others. She lived in isolation during the past eighteen years.

“Indeed, I rarely go out.” Replied Yue Meng He while slightly nodding which made Lin Feng sigh with sadness. That place was very beautiful but staying there all the time was probably very lonely, at least Lin Feng wouldn't be able to do it.

Lin Feng enjoyed cultivation; he wanted to become an extremely strong cultivator; he wanted to break through to the different cultivation layers in the hopes that he could soar into the heavens and never have to worry again.

“Little Feng, do you think that it was terribly boring for me to stay here for eighteen years? maybe even useless?” Asked Yue Meng He while looking at Lin Feng in a soft and gentle way.

“Indeed.” Replied Lin Feng while slightly nodding. He did think that way.

“Wait until you understand the Lovesick Forest better and we will see if you still think that way.” Said Yue Meng He with a mysterious smile on her face which surprised Lin Feng. Could it be that that forest hid something special?

“I first want to show you a certain place.” Said Yue Meng He without explaining anything.

The three of them continued walking; the path was covered with

a fresh and green grass. They were walking neither slowly nor fast through the forest.

In front of Lin Feng appeared many trees, they looked extremely old, and the trunks were huge. Two or three people holding hands wouldn't have been able to encircle them.

Those trees were at least a few hundred years old and an ancient Qi was emerging from them.

They then took a few more steps, and a gigantic tree appeared in front of Lin Feng, it seemed like it was holding up the sky. It was a terrifying diameter of a ten meters, each of its branches was extremely solid; they wore the sturdiest branches and roots he had ever encountered.

That tree was a thousand years old and gave off an ancient feeling.

Lin Feng was astonished. At the top of the tree, there were some log cabins. They looked comfortable yet simple.

Lin Feng looked at the log cabins, then his eyes followed the tree to its trunk and landed on a bench made from stone. There was a silhouette calmly sitting on that bench. That person had a chisel in his hand; he was calmly carving something onto the tree. Besides, next to that man, there was an image, and that man was carving it into the tree.

When Lin Feng saw that person, he frowned but immediately after, he looked relaxed and smiled, he recognized him.

Lin Feng started walking softly, without making any sound. He was walking towards that person.

Meng Qing followed Lin Feng but in a flash Yue Meng He caught her arm pulled her back. She then put her finger in her mouth to tell Meng Qing not to make a sound, and then she smiled. Meng Qing nodded and stopped moving. She only calmly watched as Lin Feng arrived behind that person.

Lin Feng was still not making any noise. He slightly bent over and looked at the chisel in the person's hand. That person was calmly carving each and every single detail onto the tree. That carving looked extremely clear and detailed. It really seemed like the sculpture was the original item.

Lin Feng kept looking at that hand, and he was surprised, that person used the same strength for each movement, his movements were extremely accurate, what a skilful man.

Lin Feng watched the person putting the same pressure on the chisel for each and every single movement. The depth of the carving was the same in every location. Wood shavings were floating gently on the wind.

“The ten thousand things of creation can be used anytime and anywhere to practice cultivation.” Sighed Lin Feng. That person looked like he was in a state of meditation, just like Yan Yu Ping

Sheng when he was playing the zither. That was a path to improving one's heart and changing one's state of mind. One could break through to the next cultivation layer thanks to such practices; one could turn their power from a stream into a mighty river.

When that man finished his carving, the wood shavings flew away, and he then lowered his hand. He smiled and said: "Little Feng, you're making fun of your old man because his hearing has faded with age?" Said the man at that moment. The man slowly turned around and smiled softly.

"Father, you have become much stronger than before, how would you go deaf?" Replied Lin Feng with a magnificent smile on his face. That man was the former head of the Lin Clan, Lin Hai.

"It seems like father and mother stayed here and waited patiently for me to become stronger while helping where they could." Thought Lin Feng. After he had arrived in the Imperial City with Duan Feng, it seemed like certain things were miraculously falling into place, as if someone was attempting to guide him in secret. Lin Feng was sure that much of the help he received in the past was because of his parents.

Lin Hai stood up and hugged Lin Feng's shoulders. Lin Feng had grown as tall as him. Lin Hai smiled, he looked happy.

"I wouldn't have thought that my son would become so famous and stand out so much, it seems like I was wrong to think you were ordinary." Said Lin Hai sounding somewhat proud. His son had become his pride. Back then, he wanted Lin Feng to live as an

ordinary person, he wanted him to have an absolutely normal daily routine, but after knew that Lin Feng could never be an ordinary person. Besides, even if Lin Feng had wanted to have a common and ordinary life, it would have been impossible for him to live a safe and peaceful life, if he were ordinary, people would bully him for being weak.

Lin Feng had started his life as an ordinary young man and then, step by step; he became extremely strong. Lin Hai had never thought that such a thing would happen. After all, when Lin Feng was fifteen, it was impossible for him to be more ordinary.

Lin Feng shook his head and said: “Father, the Lin Clan... Yangzhou City....”

“I know everything already. You handled everything correctly. Don’t think of showing warm feelings to people who treat us badly. You only reacted to their provocation. You have become merciless, little Feng. Too bad that your old father’s cultivation was sealed, that’s the reason I went back to Yangzhou City and became the head of the Lin Clan.” Sighed Lin Hai. Lin Hai had an unyielding personality; he had been extremely aggressive to Lin Ba Dao, Lin Hao Ran, and some other elders because they had bullied Lin Feng. Lin Hai was merciless too. He attacked Lin Hao Ran and killed an elder. Lin Hai was never a coward or a weakling. He had become the head of the Lin Clan but had remained silent because his cultivation had been sealed and because of the secret regarding Yue Meng He.

In the Imperial City, everybody knew about the four outstanding cultivators who had amazed the entire country eighteen years ago,

and they even knew that one of them was carefree, unyielding and proudly soared into the heavens. However, Lin Hai controlled himself and remained hidden inside the Imperial City all this time.

Chapter 443: The Strange Place

“Alright, that’s enough you two, stop talking about such sad things, let bygones be bygones.” Said Yue Meng He indifferently while shaking her head when she heard Lin Feng and Lin Hai. Then, Yue Meng He and Meng Qing joined them.

Lin Hai looked at Yue Meng He and smiled: “Alright, let’s not talk about the Lin Clan. Those things belong to the past so let’s forget about them. But Little Feng, don’t worry, the Lin Clan still has hope, the blood of the Lin Clan will continue flowing into the veins of the new generations.”

“There you go again!” Said Yue Meng He while glaring at Lin Hai which surprised him but he then immediately smiled wryly.

When Lin Feng and Meng Qing saw Yue Meng He and Lin Hai laugh, they laughed too. They looked like they were still deeply in love, a simple and tender love.

“Father, you came to the Imperial City, why didn’t you tell me anything?” Asked Lin Feng who was surprised.

“Little Feng, do you know how your father left the Imperial City in the past?” Asked Lin Hai to Lin Feng which surprised him. He remained silent and replied: “That guy from the Imperial Clan...”

“Indeed. Eighteen years ago, your mother had just given birth to you but Duan Ren Huang sealed my spirit and my cultivation, then he forced me to leave the Imperial City. He forbade me from

entering the Imperial City, not even a single step. Back then, I felt so humiliated. I hated him but because of you, I chose to ignore the humiliation and return to Yangzhou City. I intended to stay there forever, I had decided never to return to the Imperial City again, but you changed my mind. In the end, I stopped caring about such things and broke my promise to never return... So I returned and found your mother.” Said Lin Hai slowly. “Apart from you and those who live here, nobody else knows that I am in the Lovesick Forest, if Duan Ren Huang knew that I had returned to the Imperial City, he would come to kill me, what I am trying to say is, if your life wasn’t in grave danger, your mother would have never revealed herself and brought you here to see me.”

When Lin Feng heard Lin Hai, he remained silent. So that’s how it was. His father had gone to the Imperial City to find his mother and it was extremely dangerous. His father returning to the Imperial City was an absolute secret and he couldn’t show himself to anyone.

“Duan Ren Huang is one of the four geniuses from eighteen years ago?” Asked Lin Feng, a cold light was in his eyes. Duan Ren Huang, what a powerful name, surprisingly his name contained the characters “huang” (means emperor).

“Indeed, that’s him, Duan Ren Huang. He was a very ambitious person. Now, he’s probably the one who is really controlling Xue Yue.” Said Lin Hai coldly. Duan Ren Huang had injured them and forced Lin Hai to leave and never return. Their agreement was that Yue Meng He wasn’t allowed to leave the Imperial City and Lin Hai wasn’t allowed in the Imperial City, otherwise, the Duan Clan would have continued to hunt them down.

“The one who really controls Xue Yue...” Whispered Lin Feng. It was him, he hunted down his parent eighteen years ago and disappeared afterwards. Because of him, Lin Hai was forced to enter the Imperial City in secret, not daring to show himself.

“Little Feng, don’t think about those things too much, maybe Duan Ren Huang is not even in Xue Yue anymore. With his talent and cultivation level, he could have decided to move to a better place with stronger cultivators, he probably didn’t want to stay in a tiny country like Xue Yue. His goal was probably Xue Yu or even the vast and endless Continent of the Nine Clouds.” Added Yue Meng He to which Lin Feng slightly nodded. Indeed, if eighteen years ago things had happened differently, Lin Feng’s father, Lin Hai, would have probably left Xue Yue, he would have followed his martial path and grown even stronger.

“Lin Feng even though Duan Ren Huang hadn’t shown himself for a long time, there is another person whom you should also be careful of.” Added Yue Meng He.

“Whom?”

“The crown prince, Duan Wu Dao.” Replied Yue Meng He in a grave tone. She then continued: “Duan Wu Dao has the same blood as Duan Ren Huang, they have identical temperaments too. Duan Ren Huang and Duan Wu Dao are very close. Besides, Duan Wu Dao is now ranked first amongst the eight high-officials, just like Duan Ren Huang was in the past, they have terrifying strength and shocking talent.”

“Duan Wu Dao!” Whispered Lin Feng. The crown prince Duan

Wu Dao was wild and unruly, aggressive and violent, if anyone offended him, he would kill everyone involved, but if people were nice to him, he would treat them well, he was extremely aggressive when provoked.

“I will be careful.” Nodded Lin Feng.

Yue Meng He smiled and nodded while looking at Lin Feng, she then added, sounding confident: “Little Feng, don’t put too much pressure on yourself. You’re only eighteen years old and you can already kill cultivators of the fourth Xuan Qi layer, you’re much stronger than your father and me at your age. Apart from Duan Wu Dao, none of the other high-officials have more potential than you. You will be stronger than all of them soon enough, it’s only a matter of time. Your objective should be to reach the top of the eight high-officials.”

“The top of the eight high-officials!” Lin Feng raised his head and gazed solemnly into the distance. His objective needed to be more than that.

Maybe his natural abilities weren’t high enough, maybe he wasn’t very strong, it didn’t matter, he always needed to aim for higher goals. If he didn’t have the talent, he would pay in blood, sweat and tears to make his dreams come true. He had to keep climbing higher, until everyone that looked down on him, was forced to look up at him and watch him soar into the heavens.

It was the same as with Chu Zhan Peng, nobody thought that Lin Feng could compete with him. In front of Chu Zhan Peng, he was nothing more than an insect, however, Lin Feng had never

considered Chu Zhan Peng as his goal, he just focused on becoming stronger to protect the ones he cares for. He broke through every hurdle which stood in the way of his martial path.

“Duan Wu Dao, the crown prince, cannot have Xue Yue as his goal.” Thought Lin Feng. If Duan Wu Dao had had Xue Yue as his goal, he would have become dispirited and would have lost the motivation to grow stronger. Duan Wu Dao was able to push everybody aside because he always pursued the goal of becoming stronger.

“Little Feng, I will bring you to a certain place.” Yue Meng He suddenly said mysteriously which surprised Lin Feng. A certain place?

Could it be that there was something incredible in the Lovesick Forest again?

Lin Feng looked at his father Lin Hai, he was smiling, which made Lin Feng even more surprised.

“Alright.” Replied Lin Feng while nodding, he was truly curious.

Yue Meng He led the way and they started walking through a dense forest. Lin Feng and Meng Qing calmly followed from behind. They crossed a distance of about a thousand steps and in front of them appeared a few trees which were around a thousand years old as well.

There were four ancient trees, this place was extremely dark, the trees were blotting out the sky and not a single light could enter their domain. Vines had already wrapped around the trees. In the middle of those four trees, there was surprisingly a cave going into the ground, one couldn't see into the cave though, it was very strange, it looked extremely deep.

Yue Meng He took a step forwards and walked into the cave. Lin Feng was stupefied.

“Little Feng. Come!” Said Yue Meng He while turning her head and smiling at Lin Feng. After that, Lin Hai entered the cave too. Lin Feng looked at them and then suddenly, Yue Meng He and Lin Hai disappeared from sight. They disappeared inside the cave in an instant without any warning.

“What is this?” Lin Feng was dumbstruck. How strange, two people had just disappeared as if they were never there to begin with.

“It must be an illusion.” Suddenly whispered Lin Feng. It had to be a form of witchcraft. Only witchcraft could lead to such a perfect illusion and alter the physical rules of the world.

The path of witchcraft was in perfect harmony with nature, it could borrow the strength of the earth and the sky to reshape the land. One could use it to confuse, or to create illusions or even to kill people.

“Meng Qing, let's get in too.” Said Lin Feng while pulling Meng

Qing's hand. They then slowly entered that cave. Inside that cave, everything was different. Meng Qing and Lin Feng just had the feeling that they were fainting, everything was spinning around them and suddenly, another place appeared around them.

It was a bright and cloudy sky, there was a desert and the sunlight was trying to pierce through the clouds to illuminate the earth below.

“How is that possible? Where are we?” Lin Feng's heart started pounding violently. He was astonished. Meng Qing was astonished too.

When they saw how vast that desert was, they had the feeling that they were still in an illusion, but on the other hand, it felt too real, how could it be an illusion?!

“Where are we?” Lin Feng tried to keep clear-headed and asked that question to Yue Meng He and Lin Hai. Everything was too astonishing, it was so incredible that Lin Feng and Meng Qing couldn't believe it.

“Little Feng, the first time your mother brought me here, I was even more astonished than you.” Said Lin Hai while laughing. He then continued slowly: “You're right, it's not an illusion, were just in another location. This is a strange place we found connected to the Lovesick Forest.”

Chapter 444: Lin Feng's Power and Influence!

“What a strange place!” Lin Feng shivered. This place belonged to the real world, it wasn't an illusion.

After remaining silent for a while, Lin Feng sighed. This world was full of mysteries. Things Lin Feng could never imagine continued to happen, having come to the Continent of the Nine Clouds after his death was already astounding.

Besides, in the Continent of the Nine Clouds, Lin Feng didn't know how many extremely strong cultivators there were. Lin Feng had no doubts that there were cultivators who could destroy mountains and empty oceans, but what he was wondering about was; would he be strong enough to meet them?

“Are there people here like us?” Suddenly asked Lin Feng.

Lin Hai nodded and said: “Yes and many of them also practice cultivation, just like us. This place is still in the Continent of the Nine Clouds but it is a long, long way from Xue Yue. The cave enabled us to come here.”

“You mean like teleportation?” Asked Lin Feng stupefied. In his previous life Lin Feng had heard about teleportation in books and had seen teleportation in movies.

“You know about teleportation!” A flash of shock passed through

Lin Hai's eyes. He was surprised. They were far from being at the level of teleporting themselves, there were some rumours about it though. Lin Hai had read about teleportation in an ancient book but surprisingly, Lin Feng knew about it too.

“Teleportation really exists...” Thought Lin Feng surprised. Considering Lin Hai's words, there were really some people who used teleportation in the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

“But in ancient books, people teleport themselves from one place to another feel dizzy and nauseous, however, I have passed through the illusion and into the cave many times, but I have never had such a feeling, it feels very smooth each time without any strange sensations. It seems like the kind of teleportation they mention in books is not entirely the same as ours, maybe our teleportation is not really a teleportation spell at all, I'm not sure either way.” Said Lin Hai, Lin Feng was speechless. If that wasn't a teleportation spell and the cave illusion enabled them to move from one place to another, then what exactly was it?

Lin Feng suddenly turned his head around and gazed into the distance, the desert was vast and boundless. There was absolutely nothing. Lin Feng was surprised: “Father, how are we going to get back?”

“Very easy. You just need to go stand where you arrived in the first place, close your eyes and think about going back. That is why I am saying that it doesn't seem like a teleportation spell, in the ancient books, they talk about two types of teleportation: a return teleportation, a one-way teleportation. For the return teleportation, the two places have a gate so people can cross back

and forth, in the case of one-way teleportation, there is no possibility of returning, but here, we used an illusion to travel here, then we just have to think of the location to return.”

“How strange.” Lin Feng didn’t understand how it worked at all. He then asked again: “Father, have you ever walked around here? Have you ever asked people what the name of the place is? Are we still in the Xue Yu region?”

“Even though those people practice cultivation too and speak the same language as us, their personality and mentality is very different. They are very stubborn so-to-say, there is a city: its name is Tianya Haige, its army is extremely strong and they control everything in this region. The region is like a fortress, its inhabitants are only allowed to live inside that city, for example, they cannot go out and wander the desert freely. As far as other places are concerned, they call the outside world “the ruins”. They cannot take even half a step outside of their city.”

“The ruins? They think the outside world is just made of ruins?”
Asked Lin Feng.

“I don’t know. Maybe they haven’t been out of their city before.”
Said Lin Hai while shaking his head. “People there have absolute faith in their government and city, at such a level, it cannot even be called nationalism anymore. They have absolute faith in their beliefs, they believe from the bottom of their heart that the outside world is composed of only ruins. Nobody dares to question that statement, nobody dares oppose the government of Tianya Haige, their religion is omnipresent in their thoughts. Besides, they have never heard of Xue Yue, they only know that they are in the

Continent of the Nine Clouds.”

“What kind of horrible place is that!” Lin Feng was speechless, nationalism, religion?

Nobody dared call their beliefs into question? Nobody dared oppose the government? They didn’t allow anyone to go to other places and have a look...

“Little Feng, don’t judge people and their beliefs, I discovered that place more than ten years ago but I still haven’t really understood its culture, I just know that we are in a distant corner of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. After finding that out, I stopped caring, I just came here to cultivate.”

Yue Meng He smiled and said to Lin Feng: “Little Feng, look!”

Yue Meng He was pointing at something in the distance. There was a large group of people running towards them.

“Little Feng, look over there too.” Said Yue Meng He while pointing to another place. Lin Feng turned his head and saw more silhouettes appear in the distance.

“Eighteen years, I didn’t waste any of that time. All of the women I took in were poor and living miserable lives, I brought them to Lovesick Forest and taught them cultivation. Now, not only do they know cultivation, but they were all taught witchcraft too. They have all spent over ten years training and thanks to their

efforts, they are all strong enough to help shoulder our responsibilities. Some of them even have strength surpassing the Xuan Qi layer, coupled with their witchcraft, they are all extremely strong.”

At that moment, the woman who was referred to as the most beautiful woman of Xue Yue didn't look soft and gentle at all. Sharp and cold lights filled her eyes. Eighteen years ago, because she didn't have the enough strength and because her support abandoned her, she was torn away from her husband. She hadn't even been able to see her husband and son for too long.

Yue Meng He didn't want such a tragic situation to ever occur again, therefore she sheltered those girls and transformed them into powerful women, she taught them cultivation, and the girls had become a source of power and influence for her. She had built that for herself... And for her son, Lin Feng.

Now, her son was with together with her, she would feel less anxious if Lin Feng was protected by her secret troop of women.

That way, Lin Feng would have a source of power and influence to support him at all times, he wouldn't only have his mother's power. Lin Feng would no longer get bullied and humiliated because he had no power or influence, like when the Wan Shou Sect continuously threatened and tried to kill him.

If Lin Feng had this troop of women at his command, Lin Feng wouldn't have needed to fight at all, those women would have slaughtered the Wan Shou Sect to the very last disciple.

Lin Feng nodded, he had already witnessed how strong these women were. The first time was in the Lovesick Forest, when they crippled Yu Qiu's cultivation.

The other time was when six women, all of them only in the Xuan Qi layer, used the colourful ribbons to completely bind the old man's body, they had severely injured him and restrained his every movement, allowing Lin Feng kill him with ease. Their strength was terrifying. Some were even much stronger than Lin Feng!

"Little Feng, all of them are now yours. Let them be your source of power and influence, use them to make the entire country of Xue Yue tremble in fear." Said Yue Meng He which astonished Lin Feng.

"Mine? But..."

"Do you think that with my strength, I still need power and influence to support myself?" Said Yue Meng He interrupting Lin Feng. "From the beginning, when I taught them cultivation, it was exclusively for you. If someday you don't need them, just free them from your service and let them live their own lives."

When Lin Feng heard Yue Meng He, he remained silent. Indeed, Yue Meng He, with her strength, didn't need them.

She had raised them especially for Lin Feng!

Lin Feng would be able to have more power and influence with them acting as his support.

“Alright, I can start with my plan then...” Whispered Lin Feng. He then immediately nodded and said: “Mother, thank you for giving them to me!”

Chapter 445: Break The Spell!

It had been over two years since the Wan Shou Sect, the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, Ice and Snow Mountain Village and the Hao Yue Sect acted together to destroy the Yun Hai Sect.

The elders of the Yun Hai Sect and Patriarch Nan Gong Ling sacrificed their lives to save Lin Feng. They all fought with their lives on the line to protect him, it was a tragic yet moving event. The blood of the Yun Hai Sect formed a river which ran through the Stormy Gorge. Once Lin Feng and Meng Qing had gained enough strength, they would return to see that river of blood.

Since the Yun Hai Sect was destroyed, Lin Feng always carried the ring of the patriarch. He wanted to bring the Yun Hai Sect back to life. He wanted to avenge all past grievances.

All the members of the Yun Hai Sect were sacrificed to save Lin Feng. Even after gaining tremendous strength, Lin Feng could never forget the promise he made. Since the bloodbath on that day, Lin Feng had never forgotten the Yun Hai Sect, he remembered each moment clearly.

Lin Feng would have his revenge. It was only a matter of time, nothing more.

Lin Feng had already broken through to the second Xuan Qi layer but relying on his abilities, he could easily kill cultivators of the third Xuan Qi layer, and killing people of the fourth Xuan Qi layer was only slightly more difficult.

Besides, he had a strong, battle-hardened army behind him, and at that moment, he also received the powerful women raised by Yue Meng He. With all of these people under his control, it was a good opportunity to deal with matter regarding the Yun Hai Sect.

Concerning those who had destroyed the Yun Hai Sect, none of them would be able to escape judgement.

Lin Feng raised his head and looked to the sky. The sky reminded him of the deep look that always appeared in Protector Kong's eyes which was always in contrast to Protector Bei's soft and gentle smile. He could remember how Nan Gong Ling didn't waste any words. Lin Feng was moved and touched by the lives that were sacrificed to protect him. He would never forget their faces as they opened a path for him. Back then, Lin Feng had only broken through to the Ling Qi layer. He was still an immature young man, but Protector Kong and Protector Bei still sacrificed their lives for him. Protector Kong, relying on his shadow spirit, could have easily escaped, but he hadn't. He had stayed and fought with all his power, allowing Lin Feng to escape safely.

Besides, Protector Bei accompanied Lin Feng to the temple, but he turned back and chose to die while fighting with the others. Lin Feng felt like he was reliving all of the moments that lead him to this day.

“Duan Tian Lang!”

There was a name which would remain in Lin Feng's mind. Lin

Feng could see Duan Tian Lang's mocking face as he closed his eyes, causing his expression to suddenly become colder.

Duan Tian Lang had lived far too long, Lin Feng needed to kill him.

Besides, the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue also needed to be erased from existence.

When Yue Meng He heard that Lin Feng accepted the women, she smiled. In Xue Yue, many people wanted Lin Feng dead. Lin Feng now had even more power to protect himself. Even if he only had a few of them to protect him, he would be in no danger.

“Little Feng, their troop has thirty-six in total. Each of the thirty-six are extremely strong and have practiced witchcraft. You can deploy them in a six by six formation, which will allow them to cast six spells, you can also deploy them in a four by nine formation and they can cast four strong spells or nine weaker spells. In these formations, they will combine their power to unleash a spell, if you use nine, their power will combine into a single spell which will allow them to unleash their strongest spells. It allows them to fight with maximum strength.” Yue Meng He explained to Lin Feng. Of course, Lin Feng was going to have them under his control, so he needed to know what abilities they had.

When Lin Feng heard Yue Meng He, he was a bit surprised. They could all use witchcraft and there were thirty-six women in total. They had the power to slaughter an endless number of strong enemies, especially as they grew stronger.

“I created this as a special unit designed to use witchcraft. They are all able to act and fight together in perfect synchronization. The second reason that I chose them was to free them from their tragic fates. After I took them in, they were reborn, they were given a second life in which they are all sisters, this bond that they formed together also increases their ability to use witchcraft.”

Yue Meng He smiled and said: “Lin Feng, do you want to give it a try?”

“Alright.” Nodded Lin Feng. Immediately after, he started walking towards a group of women. There were six beautiful women wearing white clothes, they were sitting on the ground in a circle, their eyes were closed but a strange light was emerging from their bodies.

The atmosphere of the desert was absolutely silent, and there was no wind to break the eerie atmosphere. Lin Feng was slowly walking towards the six women. He was about ten meters away from them, then as he took another step, an extremely strong wind started to blow, it was ice-cold and Lin Feng felt like the wind was piercing through his flesh.

In the middle of the calm desert, a piercingly-cold wind had suddenly unleashed itself on Lin Feng.

But Lin Feng didn't stop walking forwards, he continued. The air continued to grow colder as it pierced deeper into his bones. The golden sand started to spiral across the ground and eventually

started to rise into the air. It continued to spin in the air until it formed a small tornado. He was now surrounded by six small tornadoes.

A deadly energy emerged from the tornadoes and attacked Lin Feng in the blink of an eye.

Lin Feng was surprised. What a pure and unadulterated killing intent. Nothing was being held back!

“Boom!” A violent sandstorm was suddenly unleashed. The small tornadoes started to merge together and form terrifying storm that spun around Lin Feng. Lin Feng couldn’t see anything, he was surround by the terrifying storm.

Lin Feng was astonished, he also released some terrifying deadly energy. Without mercy for his opponents, his deadly Qi immediately burst into the sky and poured into the atmosphere.

Lin Feng was releasing more and more deadly energy, his murderous energy was indestructible.

That terrifying deadly Qi rolled across the sky. The cold sandstorm seemed like it was started to lose its power, as if it was starting to grow weaker. It seemed like Lin Feng’s deadly energy now had enough power to suppress the sandstorm.

At that moment, the deadly energy moved like waves, moving back and forth then crashing down. The wind was slowly fading,

as if it was never there to begin with.

“Young Master’s deadly energy is extremely strong, it is also very pure and dense. It is much stronger than the deadly energy contained within our spell. If we fought, we would definitely lose.” Said one of the six women while opening her eyes. Her voice sounded clear and melodious.

“Chun Feng, now is not the time to give face, you stopped using your full power! He would definitely lose if you didn’t give him face.” Said Yue Meng He while laughing and looking at Lin Feng.

When she saw that Lin Feng looked embarrassed, she laughed even more and said: “Little Feng, don’t think that those six tornadoes are not strong, it was only the beginning of their spell. If the six tornadoes really merge as one, the strength you released a moment ago would only provide you with a few extra moments of life.”

Lin Feng looked pensive. With the deadly energy that he had just released, he wouldn’t have won against a genuine formation spell?

“Of course, if you spare no effort and use every ounce of your strength, you would have the power to overcome the spell and win against these six.” Said Yue Meng He explaining to Lin Feng in detail. If he used every ounce of his power, he would be able to defeat the six cultivators surrounding him, but there were still thirty other members. Yue Meng He’s troop wasn’t considered a weak force at all.

In eighteen years, Yue Meng He had spared no effort in order to create such a powerful group.

“Mother, tell them to use their full strength.” Said Lin Feng while slightly grinning. His smile was filled with confidence which stupefied Yue Meng He. She immediately said: “Chun Feng, the young master wants you to use your full strength, you know what you have to do.”

“I know.” Replied Chun Feng while smiling at Yue Meng He. Very quickly, their tornadoes rose into the air and the tornadoes began to encircle Lin Feng again.

“Little Feng is still too young. He has too much confidence, maybe he will need to be injured by the spell before he understands.” Thought Yue Meng He while smiling.

“Lin Feng will win.” Said Meng Qing at that moment in a low voice which stupefied Yue Meng He. She then said to Meng Qing: “How come you believe in Little Feng so much?”

“I believe in him more than I believe in myself. If he says that he is going to try something, it means that he has a plan to win.” Explained Meng Qing to which Yue Meng He shook her head and said, while smiling: “Meng Qing, you have too much confidence in him.”

Of course, Yue Meng He was actually extremely happy to see Meng Qing's faith in Lin Feng.

Yue Meng He was still smiling and when she suddenly heard a large impact. The sandstorm had stopped blowing and the six women were blown away.

Yue Meng He was astonished. Immediately after, she saw Lin Feng appear in front of her again, he looked calm and serene as if nothing had happened.

“It seems like you know my son much better than me.” Said Yue Meng He to Meng Qing. Lin Feng had won, and he won very quickly. In the blink of an eye, he had broken the spell.

Yue Meng He turned to Lin Feng and asked: “You understand the intricacies of spells?”

“Yes, I do.” Replied Lin Feng while nodding. In Yangzhou City, he had spent a long time researching spells and formations. That sandstorm spell formed from six tornadoes wasn’t that complex, it was very simple for someone with the know how to break.

Chapter 446: Yan Dang Mountain

Yan Dang was the name of a mountain chain to the north-west of Yangzhou City. Many influential groups resided within this mountain chain.

At the top of the highest mountain in the Yan Dan Mountain Chain, there was a vast and boundless palace. The owner of that palace was respected and revered by everyone within the surrounding hundred kilometres. That palace was a restricted area though, ordinary people couldn't enter it and even many nobles didn't dare try to enter.

That was due to the fact that the owner of the palace was an old man with an extremely bad temper. The old man's specialty was swords. When he was angry, he would go out and destroy a small mountain. He had the power to turn mountains into ashes, not to mention human beings.

Besides, that old man had two disciples, a young girl and a young man. They were both extraordinarily talented, they could even go head to head with the smaller influential groups within the country by themselves, they were very strong.

At that moment, in the palace, there was a terrifying deadly energy floating in the atmosphere. It then dashed into the sky making the air shake so violently that the ferocious beasts in the region started to run in the opposite direction. The deadly energy was so strong and powerful that it could cause one's soul to shake!

“Boom!”

The deadly energy exploded again as a silhouette appeared in the sky and then landed on the top of the palace. He was releasing even more monstrous deadly energy.

At that moment, the old man didn't look like an old man at all, he looked like a beast.

Behind the old man, there was a beautiful girl. Her eyes were cold and filled with killing intent.

Lin Feng had killed her fellow disciple, she hated him, they had to avenge her fellow disciple's death. She hadn't gone to look for Lin Feng because she knew that she didn't have the power to go against him. Instead, she ran day and night until she returned to Yan Dang Mountain, so she could tell her master of Ling Tian's death.

If her master got involved, it would without a doubt be the end of Lin Feng.

“You stay here, I, Ji Guang, will go collect his head and bring it back here for all to see. I will avenge my beloved disciple.” Said the old man coldly. The girl looked at him in a calm and solemn way while nodding, and then she replied: “Yes, Master.”

The old man released a pure Qi which broke the stones under his feet. He jumped into the air and started to run across the sky,

however, shortly after he moved into the sky, a sword beam appeared in the valley and rushed towards him.

This stupefied the old man. He didn't hurry to leave and waited for the person to arrive before him.

It was a man who looked around thirty years old. He looked smart and handsome, his eyebrows were sharp like swords. His eyes were the eyes of a madman who would destroy everything with his sword. His aura was swift and sharp, like an accomplished sword cultivator....

“Ji Guang!” Said the man in a cold tone which surprised Ji Guang who was still fixedly staring at him.

“Who are you?” Asked Ji Guang. The man was filled with killing intent, but at the same time, he looked like an extremely powerful opponent.

“I've heard that you, Ji Guang, are an expert at using swords. When you hold a sword in your hands, you become a messenger of death, everybody that encounters your sword is sent to their grave. I think that we could learn from each other, let us compare notes.” Said the man in a cold tone. A terrifying battle energy emerged from him, that person was challenging Ji Guang's sword.

The girl who was behind Ji Guang frowned. That man was only about thirty years old and he was challenging her master to a sword duel, how arrogant!

A terrifying sword energy emerged from the man's body. That sword energy was monstrously sharp and the most terrifying thing about it was the lack of emotion.

It was as if all his emotions were void; as if his sword was the only thing in the world and everything else was merely straw dogs.

“Zhuge Wu Qing!” Ji Guang was astonished. Even though he had never seen Zhuge Wu Qing, in Xue Yue, apart from him, nobody else had such a powerful and emotionless sword.

Two powerhouses were fighting with swords, they were both extremely famous sword cultivators, one was Ji Guang, the other one was Zhuge Wu Qing.

Ji Guang also released a terrifying sword energy which covered the skies. It seemed like there were millions of extremely bright lights which twinkled in the sky. It was dazzling! The entire Yan Dang Mountain Chain was illuminated by his sword energy.

“Who is fighting?”

“What a terrifying sword energy!”

The people from the mountain chain started to notice the scene above them. They all started shaking under the pressure of such powerful sword energy. That sword energy was definitely from Ji Guang's sword. Surprisingly, there was another extremely strong sword cultivator who was fighting against him. Who was strong

enough to compare with Ji Guang's sword?

The girl behind Ji Guang started shaking. What a terrifying sword!

“Zhuge Wu Qing, since you have come to fight, use your full strength.” The sound of a sword unsheathing filled the air and a sword appeared in the old man's hand, it looked like a ray of light. A gigantic sword spirit then emerged from behind Ji Guang, the spirit was unleashing a shocking sword energy.

“I, Zhuge Wu Qing, haven't directly used my sword for eighteen years but today, in front of a venerable old man like you, I will unsheathe my sword!” Said Zhuge Wu Qing calmly. A simple-looking sword sheathe appeared behind his back. It was shaking intensely and the sound of a sword being unsheathed spread through the air. Zhuge Wu Qing had unsheathed a blood-red emotionless sword.

“Ji Guang, your life is over.” Said Zhuge Wu Qing looking as calm as before but his voice was ice-cold and emotionless.

Those two incredible sword cultivators were going to fight to death, if one of them managed to reach the other with their sword, they would definitely kill the other. There would only be one person walking away today.

Ji Guang's heart was palpitating.

Nobody said anything, as the two sword energies started rolling through the atmosphere and colliding against each other. An extremely bright sword Qi and an emotionless sword Qi illuminated the atmosphere in their own respective way.

A sudden wind emerged as the sword energies rose into the skies and crashed against the other. Suddenly, the two silhouettes disappeared from sight. The pressure released by the sword energies was intense, everyone under that pressure felt like they were going to be ripped apart.

The sky was tearing and ripping sounds filled the air. In a flash, the two silhouettes reappeared, an extremely bright sword Qi and an emotionless sword Qi emerged with them. It seemed like everything else had disappeared from sight and only the two swords remained in the air.

This was the confrontation of two amazing sword cultivators. The stronger a sword cultivator was, the more dangerous and terrifying their battles were to watch.

The two fighters then returned to their original positions.

Ji Guang looked at Zhuge Wu Qing and said: “Was this only for the advancement your sword?”

Zhuge Wu Qing shook his head, he had stopped stubbornly following the path of the sword for a long time now.

“You lost your beloved disciple and wanted to use your sword to avenge him. However, the one you want to harm is somebody that I will use my sword to protect.” Said Zhuge Wu Qing calmly. Ji Guang looked like he understood the deeper motives behind Zhuge Wu Qing’s actions.

“I understand.” Whispered Ji Guang. Without any further movements, the sound of a sword cutting through flesh filled the air. A fountain of blood burst into the air and Ji Guang’s body separated into two parts.

“Ahhhhh.....” The girl screamed, she was terrified and started shaking from head to toe. There was no longer any strength remaining in her body and her face had turned deathly pale.

“Kacha!”

“BOOM!”

The palace at the top of the mountain started to tremble and then suddenly a huge crevice appeared in the centre, as if it had been cut in two. Sunlight could now pass through the large crevice. It was an astonishing sight!

Zhuge Wu Qing turned around, his body transformed into a sword and he pierced through the atmosphere as he streaked across the sky. As he disappeared from sight, a few drops of blood could be seen falling from his sword.

After Zhuge Wu Qing left, the girl was left alone in the middle of the empty palace. She continued to cry throughout the night.

All of this had been too shocking for her. Her master had lost his life in mere moments from a single sword strike.

The memory of Lin Feng killing Ling Tian with a single sword strike seemed to overlap with the current images in her mind. Lin Feng killed Ling Tian just like Zhuge Wu Qing killed her master, Ji Guang.

At that moment, this little girl felt an endless ocean of regret. Because she had made a small remark that convinced Ling Tian to go to Yangzhou City, he was now dead. Because of her, her master Ji Guang wanted to kill Lin Feng and was killed instead. She felt endless guilt!

Everything she did was a joke. It was laughably pathetic; her incredibly powerful fellow disciple had been killed... Her master that incited fear in so many people, had been killed...

Lin Feng had no idea about the events that were occurring at this moment. How could he know that Zhuge Wu Qing travelled to Yan Dang in order to kill Ji Guang if he moved against Lin Feng. Lin Feng didn't even know who Master Ji Guang was, and he also didn't know that if Zhuge Wu Qing hadn't intervened, he might have found himself in a very dangerous situation in the future.

In the desert, Lin Feng was sitting cross-legged with his eyes closed. However, his terrifyingly powerful soul was floating

through the air.

The sand was rolling across the ground as the wind blew. Lin Feng started to focus and used his pure Qi to control the movement of the yellow sand.

There was currently a scroll laying in front of the cross-legged Lin Feng, one that he unfolded. On the scroll, one could see various text and pictures. It was a formation.

At the top of the scroll were the word: Nine Palace Dragon Formation!

Lin Feng had found this formation inside the ring of the old man that he killed during the national competition and was using this time to learn it!

Chapter 447: Tianya Haige

Yue Meng He, Lin Hai and Meng Qing were looking at the storm of golden sand that started to form. The formation was slowly coming into being which shocked everyone.

They were all looking at each other with disbelief. Yue Meng He was stunned, but pleasantly surprised. She asked: “Has Little Feng learnt any witchcraft or formations before?”

“I don’t know. But considering his vast knowledge, he has probably learnt about witchcraft and formations before. Besides, his understanding of it doesn’t seem to be superficial.” Replied Lin Hai. Yue Meng He nodded in agreement. The Nine Palace Dragon Formation was very famous within the Imperial City. If one managed to unleash the formation, it could trap other people inside.

If someone who wasn’t strong enough was locked inside, he wouldn’t be able to break out and would remain a prisoner forever.

Lin Feng, only after studying it for a brief time, was able to make the rudimentary form of the formation appear. It was an extremely rare occurrence to see someone so talented using the formation.

“Master, look!” Said one of the girls in white. She was pointing into the distance. Those girls had been raised by Yue Meng He, they all respected her as their master.

Yue Meng He raised her head and saw a storm of golden sand, it

was slowly transforming into nine palaces. Floating in the air were nine palaces formed completely from the sand.

“Not bad.” Yue Meng He smiled. The Nine palaces had already taken shape. After a short time, Lin Feng would be able to cast the Nine Palace Dragon Formation. How could she not be happy for her son?

However, at that moment, Lin Feng abruptly opened his eyes, his eyes were filled with a deep and mysterious expression.

“Go!” Lin Feng pointed out with his finger and the golden sand started to whistle through the air. At the same time, a dragon’s roar filled the sky. The golden sand filled the air and eventually surrounded Yue Meng He and the others. Suddenly, they were all standing in a completely different location. They were all inside a golden room. They were together a moment ago, but at that moment, they were each alone inside a golden room. They were all trapped inside an identical golden room.

“Illusion!” Yue Meng He was shaking and her face was frozen. A moment before, she thought that Lin Feng still needed some time before he was able to use the formation, but at that moment, she realized that she was wrong, Lin Feng had managed to cast the Nine Palace Dragon Formation.

“Mother, how is it?” Asked Lin Feng as he appeared in front of her.

“Not bad.” Said Yue Meng He while smiling. She was impressed

by her son's talent, he was extremely talented on the path of cultivation, but he also had the power to cast spells and formations.

At that moment, Yue Meng He wasn't aware that Lin Feng could also concoct pills and fabricate weapons. She was unaware of how talented he was in a great deal of areas. His soul was extremely powerful compared to others, so no matter what he did, his talent would be extraordinary. Even his understanding of the Qi was much more advanced than others with the same amount of power. His soul was extremely powerful which allowed him to sense the many different domains, including witchcraft, alchemy and many others. No matter what Lin Feng attempted, he would be beyond the ordinary.

Lin Feng's soul was very different from an ordinary person. Because he cultivated the surplus souls technique, his soul was several times stronger than others.

The fact that Lin Feng had immediately appeared beside her in the illusion, didn't surprise Yue Meng He, Lin Feng was the one controlling the formation, using the power of his soul, he would be able to freely travel throughout his illusion. If he wanted to change anything inside the illusion, it would only take a thought, he had absolute control. So if he wanted to enter the illusion, it only took a single thought.

“This is my limit, I cannot hold it for much longer. It looks like I will still need some time to master it. I need to reach the point of making it appear in a flash and have it remain indefinitely, only then have I mastered this formation spell.”

When Yue Meng He heard Lin Feng, she nodded while looking gratified, in such a short time, Lin Feng was already able to achieve so much. Lin Feng didn't look proud or arrogant at all, he was only focused on mastering the formation.

Even though Lin Feng could look or sound arrogant when dealing with his enemies, he wasn't really an arrogant person, on the path of cultivation, there was no room for arrogance. He would only act arrogantly in front of other people, as a means to prevent them from seeing him as weak.

“Mother, I need your help with this. I want to see how easy it is to break my illusion. Can you use your power to break it?” Asked Lin Feng. He wanted to see how much power his illusion could withstand.

“Alright.” Yue Meng He nodded as she released a shockingly powerful Qi. Lin Feng quickly moved away from her. Yue Meng He's silhouette flickered and she flew into the air with her fist raised above her head. Her fist immediately collided with the roof of the golden room.

“Kacha!”

The golden rooms seemed to shake and sounded like they were about to crack apart. Yue Meng He was stupefied, but immediately after, she smiled. After her punch, cracking sounds unceasingly spread through the air as the golden rooms started to shatter into oblivion. After, a rumbling sound spread through the air and the

illusion disappeared completely from sight. Lin Feng and the others were back to the golden desert where they were previously.

The different parts of the Nine Palace Dragon Formation were dependent on each other. If a single spell was broken, the entire formation would collapse.

Lin Feng sighed with disappointment. When facing an extremely strong cultivator, he could attempt a millions different methods, but a single punch was enough to defeat him and break his illusion.

When the others appeared in the desert again, they looked towards Lin Feng, everyone was still shocked. Lin Feng was extremely talented, surprisingly, he was able to learn the spells and create the formation in such a short time, that was talent.

“Mother, how powerful was it?” Asked Lin Feng to his mother.

Yue Meng He had a magnificent smile on her face, she nodded and said: “Little Feng, you are at the second Xuan Qi layer but by using a single spell, you will be able to imprison cultivators of the fourth Xuan Qi layer without problem.”

When Lin Feng heard Yue Meng He, he smiled. When a cultivator could use witchcraft, they had the complete advantage when fighting against those with a similar level of power. Otherwise, what would be the point in studying spells and formations? If spells provided no benefit, then it would have been safer to focus solely on cultivation.

Cultivators who were extremely talented when using spells could even imprison and kill cultivators who had cultivation levels which were much higher than theirs. With an extremely high cultivation, there was nothing that was impossible. However, spells were able to close the gaps between cultivation levels, making the impossible, a reality. Therefore, many people dedicated their lives to witchcraft and the study of spells and formations.

Lin Feng wouldn't be one of those people, for him, spells and alchemy were tools he could use to benefit his cultivation. With that spell, he wouldn't be afraid of fighting against multiple cultivators at the fourth Xuan Qi layer.

“Little Feng, you have spent a great deal of time on your cultivation, let's take this chance to go back and rest.” Said Yue Meng He when she saw that Lin Feng was working so hard. She also felt worried, after all, how could any mother bear to watch her son living such a harsh life?

But Lin Feng shook his head and said: “Mother, I want to go to Tianya Haige and visit the city.”

“Go to Tianya Haige?!” Yue Meng He was stupefied and remained silent. She knew nothing about the mysterious city. She really hoped that Lin Feng wouldn't have any ideas about going there.

But Lin Feng wanted to go so she couldn't stop him.

“Chun Feng and Xia Yu will go with you.” Said Yue Meng He

while nodding.

“No need, Meng Qing and I will go alone, that’s more than enough.” Replied Lin Feng while shaking his head.

“But, ok.” Replied Yue Meng He when she saw how firm Lin Feng was being. She decided to accept his decision.

“Little Feng, Tianya Haige, even though it’s a city, it’s huge... even gigantic! It is much, much, much bigger than our Imperial City in Xue Yue. Tianya Haige has a central district, which is filled with terrifyingly strong cultivators. If you go there, be extremely careful. It would be better for you to stay away from the central district.” Warned Lin Hai. He didn’t feel at ease, they were in a foreign land, dangers could be everywhere.

“Don’t worry father, I will be careful.” Replied Lin Feng while smiling. There were some terrifyingly strong cultivators in the central district of Tianya Haige. Could there be cultivators of the Tian Qi layer or higher?

Concerning Lin Feng, he would leave Xue Yue sooner or later, it was only a matter of time. He would go and explore the Continent of the Nine Clouds to meet more powerful cultivators. At that moment, he was in front of Tianya Haige, it was a great opportunity to meet incredibly strong cultivators and see what attracted them here.

“Meng Qing.” Lin Feng looked to Meng Qing, of course, she would agree to go with him. She walked towards him without a

word and they both shot into the distance, leaving only a cloud of golden sand behind.

Lin Hai looked at Lin Feng's back and smiled.

“Meng He, Lin Feng has become a true man.”

Chapter 448: The Wolves of the Desert

Lin Feng and Meng Qing were running across the desert and were surrounded by a cloud of sand. The desert was extremely vast. Lin Feng and Meng Qing had already been running for a few hours but they still hadn't made it through the desert.

What annoyed Lin Feng the most was that because of the constant sandstorms, they could only run aimlessly across the sand and they didn't know if they were heading the right way.

“Meng Qing, sorry for not asking for more details before I decided to leave.” Said Lin Feng when he saw that Meng Qing was covered in sand and tired from having to run. He felt guilty. He had thought that the desert would be much smaller and they could immediately cross it, but after a few hours, apart from a few silhouettes in the distance, they hadn't encountered anything at all.

“Don't blame yourself!” Said Meng Qing while shaking her head. She gazed into the distance and pointed while saying: “Look, there are some people over there. Let's go over and ask them.”

Lin Feng looked in the direction that Meng Qing was pointing and saw a few silhouettes moving through the desert. He then said: “Let's go and see.”

The two of them started running and very quickly, they arrived in front of those people. The group consisted of four boys and a girl. They seemed to be wearing peculiar clothes, their hair was

also messy and unkempt. Their tanned skin paired with their messy hair made them seem wild. However, the girl was very different. She seemed to be quite pretty.

When the five people saw Lin Feng arrive, they all glanced at him.

Lin Feng only looked back at them. They were in foreign territory so it was better to see how the locals would behave.

“Hello, may I help you?” Asked the girl, taking the initiative to speak first which relieved Lin Feng. Even though she had said only a few words, Lin Feng could see that those people weren’t much different from them.

“We have gotten lost in the desert. Could you help us find our way?” Asked Lin Feng politely.

When those people heard Lin Feng, they were stupefied. They got lost in the desert? They were probably young nobles who never left home, otherwise how would they get lost? Besides, the two of them looked very clean and elegant compared to the group. Lin Feng was handsome and looked very wise for his age. Meng Qing, even though she was wearing a fine veil which covered her face, they could still see that her features were very beautiful.

“There is only one direction to go, continue moving west and you will eventually leave the desert, but we’re heading that way so we can go together.” Said the girl while smiling. Her eyes were sparkling, she looked extremely enthusiastic.

“Alright.” Said Lin Feng. How could he refuse? Mixing with the local people would be a great way to learn about their culture and traditions.

“My name is Nuo Na.” Said the girl while smiling at Lin Feng. She was happy to hear Lin Feng’s quick response.

“Lin Feng.” Replied Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng!” Whispered Nuo Na. She then asked: “Lin Feng, if you are lost in the desert, how did you get out here?”

“I had nothing to do at home so I wanted to explore.” Replied Lin Feng in a soft voice while smiling.

“You are from the city?” Asked Nuo Na which surprised Lin Feng. From the city? Could it be that these people were not from Tianya Haige?

“You could say that, yes.” Replied Lin Feng while nodding, his response was extremely quick. Nuo Na didn’t doubt his words, Lin Feng and Meng Qing looked so clean and elegant, if they had lost their way in the desert, it probably meant that they were from the city.

“You’re so brave, surprisingly you have come all the way into the territory of the Wolves of the Desert.” sighed Nuo Na which stupefied Lin Feng: “The Wolves of the Desert?!”

“Don’t tell me that you don’t know about the Wolves of the Desert!?” Nuo Na was speechless. What kind of young master was Lin Feng? Surprisingly, he had never heard that the outer areas of the city were the territory of the Wolves of the Desert.

Lin Feng smiled wryly. It was his first time in this land, the fact that he didn’t know about them wasn’t strange at all.

“Lin Feng, in the city, there might be people who can protect you, but outside of the city, in the territory of the Wolves of the Desert, you have to be very careful. They are extremely wild, aggressive, brutal and violent. If you see them, you have to avoid them. They are the strongest group outside of the city. There is no way for us to fight against them.” Explained Nuo Na to Lin Feng. Lin Feng understood the whole story a bit better. The Wolves of the Desert were just a powerful group of bandits.

“Thrum! Thrum! Thrum!”

The ground was starting to shake beneath their feet as a huge cloud of sand could be seen. In the distance, a group riding horses appeared, Nuo Na and the others were frozen in fear.

They raised their heads and looked towards the group in the distance, when they saw the huge cloud of sand, their facial expressions gradually became grave.

“Shit! Speak of the devil..... Lin Feng, those people are from the Wolves of the Desert, we have to go, we can’t afford to cross their

path. They might decide to attack us!”

While talking, Nuo Na started running. Immediately, the four others from her group followed closely behind her.

Lin Feng was dumbstruck, he glanced at the horses in the distance and then followed behind Nuo Na. They had to hurry if they wanted to avoid the group of bandits.

But what surprised Nuo Na was that the sound of the galloping horses was growing louder and louder as if they were coming closer.

Nuo Na glanced back and her face turned deathly pale. They were actually moving in their direction.

“Oh no..” Nuo Na was surprised. She started to run even faster, but how could she run faster than horses? Very quickly, the horses arrived and then surrounded them, they then started to run circles around them, forming a ring of sand. In the middle of the cloud of sand, the bandits looked like they found the situation amusing, especially the one leading them, who was a young man. He looked like he was about to burst into laughter. He was fixedly staring at Meng Qing and Nuo Na, while looking particularly perverted.

Nuo Na and her friends pulled a long face. What they feared the most was actually happening. Surprisingly, they had come across the Wolves of the Desert.

“Venerable and respected young man, hello, we are disciples of the Black Wood Tribe. I am the daughter of the head of the Black Wood Tribe. We have accidentally crossed your path, I hope that you will not be offended and let us go.” Said Nuo Na in a polite tone. At the same time, she declared her social status in an attempt to make the Wolves of the Desert less aggressive.

The horses finally stopped galloping. That evil-looking young man smiled coldly and said: “The daughter of the head of the Black Wood Tribe? Wow, amazing, terrific! You... Almost scared me!”

“Hahaha!” All those Wolves of the Desert burst into laughter. It seemed like Nuo Na was trying to use her social status as a deterrent.

But those people didn’t care at all, it seemed like Nuo Na and the others were terribly unlucky this time.

“How should I deal with that girl of the Black Wood Tribe?” Said the young man while laughing like a madman. He was asking the group of bandits.

“Let’s take her back.”

“Of course, we should give her to the second young master, she can be your eighth wife.” Joked the group while laughing in a hysterical way which made Nuo Na’s face turn deathly pale. Those people had just called him... Second young master?

“Second young master, I didn’t know that such a venerable and respectable person as you would appear in this place. Please forgive my offence, the Black Wood Tribe will be extremely grateful for your kindness.” Said Nuo Na whose face was still deathly pale. She sounded very sincere though.

Lin Feng frowned and looked at the group coldly. Those Wolves of the Desert were exactly the way he would imagine a group of outlaws to be. They were just horse-mounted bandits, nothing more. But they were powerful which was why Nuo Na and the others were scared.

“Perhaps it’s time for eight wives.” Said the second young master while laughing again. Immediately after, he started galloping away at full speed.

“I hope that Nuo Na has heard and understood. During midday, I will come to the Black Wood Tribe and will propose a marriage alliance between us. All of you must be there, not a single person is allowed to be absent, if one of you is missing, we will exterminate the Black Wood Tribe!” Said the second master whose silhouette was disappearing into the horizon. The other members of the Wolves of the Desert then followed him, leaving a huge cloud of yellow sand behind them.

Nuo Na’s face was turned deathly pale. A marriage alliance?!

She had would be forced into becoming the wife of the second master of the Wolves of the Desert! Besides, she would become the eighth wife, or maybe even the ninth or the tenth....

“Nuo Na, let’s hurry and go back. We will talk to our head.” Said one of the boys to Nuo Na. He looked anxious.

“Leave?” Nuo Na looked like she was about to cry. She then said in a feeble voice: “It seems that I’m the one to blame, outside of the city, the Wolves of the Desert are everywhere.”

Chapter 449: The Tribe

Nuo Na turned around and looked at Lin Feng: “Lin Feng, is that beautiful girl your wife?”

“Wife?” Lin Feng was stupefied, but he immediately smiled warmly and replied: “Yes, she is.”

When Meng Qing, who was sitting next to him heard him, she felt very embarrassed but at the same time, a sweet and warm feeling invaded her heart.

“You should both run away, quickly! Go back to the city!” Said Nuo Na.

Lin Feng looked surprised and replied: “But you heard that guy, he said that tomorrow at midday, we all have to be there, not a single one of us should be missing, otherwise he will destroy your tribe.”

“I heard him but I cannot get you involved, the second young master of the Wolves of the Desert is probably interested in your wife as well, you should run away as soon as possible!” Said Nuo Na. She was advising Lin Feng to leave.

“What about you? What if a catastrophe occurs?” Lin Feng was surprised, he wouldn’t have thought that Nuo Na would advise them to leave when she was in such a critical situation.

“I will sacrifice myself and marry the second young master of the Wolves of the Desert, then nothing bad will happen to the Black Wood Tribe.” Said Nuo Na.

“No, you can’t do that, how can you marry him?!” Said one of the young men who was shaking his head frenetically.

When Nuo Na saw his facial expression, she smiled wryly and said: “Hei Shan, I’m sorry. I will not be able to marry you in the future when you are the strongest warrior in the tribe.”

“Nuo Na, I will never let you marry one of the Wolves of the Desert.” Replied Hei Shan with a barbaric expression on his face. He kept shaking his head over and over again. Nuo Na was smiling wryly... What bad luck it was for them to encounter the second young master of the Wolves of the Desert.

“Nuo Na.” Said Lin Feng at that moment which made Nuo Na turn her head towards him.

“How strong are the Wolves of the Desert?” Asked Lin Feng.

Nuo Na looked at Lin Feng and immediately started speaking slowly: “Very strong. Actually, the Wolves of the Desert are a tribe, they are the strongest tribe outside of the city. They are much stronger than most of the other tribes which is why they roam freely. Apart from them, there are many other tribes that roam the desert and many of those tribes could destroy my tribe easily.”

“What about their battle strength?” Asked Lin Feng again.

“The Wolves of the Desert is a tribe divided into many smaller tribes, in order to become the head of one of those branches, a cultivator must have at least broken through to the Xuan Qi layer. They are also the persists of the tribe and are extremely strong. The Wolves of the Desert has many strong cultivators. The weakest of them are of the Ling Qi layer. Besides, the head of the entire tribe, the King of the Wolves, is extremely strong, but I don’t know how powerful he is. What I can guarantee is that he has at least broken through the first Xuan Qi layer into the second, or maybe more. Otherwise, he wouldn’t be able to assume his position as King of the Wolves.”

After Nuo Na explained those things to Lin Feng, he remained silent for a while, his eyes were twinkling, second Xuan Qi layer!

“Let’s go to the Black Wood Tribe together.” Said Lin Feng at that moment, which stupefied Nuo Na, she didn’t understand why Lin Feng wanted to come.

“Lin Feng, are you sure?” Asked Nuo Na solemnly.

“I am sure.” Said Lin Feng while nodding. He smiled and added: “You still have to show me the way out of the desert.”

When Nuo Na heard Lin Feng, she smiled. Since Lin Feng insisted, she wouldn’t try to convince him any longer. She only nodded and said: “Alright, let’s all go back to the Black Wood Tribe then.”

It was exactly how Nuo Na said, they continued heading directly to the west. After a while, they were out of the desert, but the landscape didn't look anything like Lin Feng had imagined. The land was still a vast and boundless desert, but there were exotic trees growing from the sand to form a jungle. As far as Lin Feng could see there was sand and exotic trees.

Of course, many tribes were probably living in the jungle or roaming the open desert, just like the Wolves of the Desert.

The Black Wood Tribe was situated on a hill. There was five-six hundred households built around the hill. It looked more like a fortified hill village.

“As expected, it's just a small tribe.” Thought Lin Feng when he saw the small fences and simple defences that were erected. Their defences didn't look good at all; they were very basic defences. They were able to stop normal people and wild beasts, but were far from being able to stop most cultivators.

When Nuo Na came back, all the people started to greet her. Nobody asked her what she had obtained during her trip though, everybody was just staring towards Lin Feng and Meng Qing. They were very curious as to who these people were.

“Nuo Na, who are those two strangers?” Asked one of the tribe.

“They are my new friends, we met in the desert.” Explained Nuo Na. She didn't mention what had happened in the desert with the

Wolves of the Desert. She didn't want anyone to panic.

“Nuo Na!” Said a loud and vigorous voice which interrupted the conversation. The crowd slowly opened a path and shouted “The Head, the head has come!” one after the other.

“Father.” The crowd opened the way and a tall and strong man appeared in front of Nuo Na.

“Nuo Na, didn't you bring any items back?” asked the head of the Black Wood Tribe. She just shook her head, she didn't know what to say.

“Nuo Na, has something happened? Something that prevented you from returning with a good harvest?” Asked Hei Mu at that moment. Nuo Na shook her head again and said: “Nothing, father.”

“What are you talking about?” Suddenly said Hei Shan while moving forwards, he looked at Hei Mu and said: “Foster father, we encountered the Wolves of the Desert.”

“The Wolves of the Desert!” When the crowd heard his words, many people started to shake. They all looked terrified.

“Hei Shan, shut your mouth!” Shouted Nuo Na, but her father glared at her until she lowered her head in silence. He then said to Hei Shan: “Son, tell me what happened.”

“Foster father, we ran into these two when crossing the desert, then the Wolves of the Desert appeared. One of the men with them was the second young master. He clearly said that at midday tomorrow, he will come and propose a marriage alliance. They also said that all of us had to be here, if any of us were missing, they would destroy the tribe.” Hei Shan hadn’t even finished talking that the crowd around them burst into an uproar. All sorts of shocked comments were spreading throughout the crowd.

Hei Mu looked stupefied as well. The second young master of the Wolves of the Desert.....

It was said that this perverted young man loved women more than anything else in life. If he saw a beautiful woman, she would be forced into becoming his wife. He already had seven wives but it was still not enough for him, he was never satisfied.

“Nuo Na, what do you intend to do?”

Nuo Na groaned coldly, she remained silent for a few seconds and replied: “I want Lin Feng and his wife to leave. Then I will sacrifice myself and marry the second young master from the Wolves of the Desert, that way, I will be the only one to suffer, nobody else needs to get involved and nothing will happen to the tribe.”

“You’re too naive!” Said Hei Mu interrupting his daughter. “It’s impossible to bargain with such people! Besides, how do you know that you’re the one he wants?” While talking, Hei Mu glanced at Meng Qing. He could see how incredibly beautiful he features were, the second young master was probably extremely interested in her.

“Nuo Na, you still haven’t introduced your two friends to me.” Asked Hei Mu in a loud voice while looking at Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng glanced at him. Hei Mu really deserved to be the head of the Black Wood Tribe, the way he handled things was more well-practiced than Nuo Na!

“I met Lin Feng in the desert and we became friends. That beautiful woman is his wife.” Said Nuo Na introducing her friends.

“Oh. They look like a perfect match.” Replied Hei Mu while nodding. He then immediately added: “It’s getting late, go find a place for our guests.”

“Hei Shan, bring Lin Feng and his wife to one of the guest houses, Also don’t bother them and let them rest.”

When Hei Shan heard Hei Mu’s order, he nodded and said: “Alright, I will let them rest.”

Lin Feng glanced at Nuo Na and saw that her mouth was slightly open, she was astonished but she didn’t say anything, it would have been useless anyway so she kept her mouth shut.

“Lin Feng, come with me.” Said Hei Shan politely. Immediately after, he brought Meng Qing and Lin Feng to a large house and prepared everything for them to stay the night. Lin Feng didn’t say anything and happily accepted.

After Hei Shan left, Lin Feng frowned.

He walked to the window and opened it. He could clearly sense that some people were observing them. Hei Shan didn't trust Lin Feng, he was afraid that Lin Feng would leave and cause the destruction of the Black Wood Tribe. Therefore, he had people watching them, ready to intercept them if they left.

But if Lin Feng wanted to leave, would any of this be useful?

Chapter 450: The Most Important Person!

Hei Mu was the head of the Black Wood Tribe, he couldn't afford to be as naive as Nuo Na and tell them to leave.

Besides, Hei Mu understood the situation much better than Nuo Na, the second young master of the Wolves of the Desert probably wasn't interested in Nuo Na, but rather Lin Feng's wife. If that was really the case, then since Lin Feng left, the Black Wood Tribe would definitely be destroyed. That was the last thing Hei Mu wanted to happen. He couldn't afford to gamble with thousands of lives and let them leave.

Even though Lin Feng could understand Hei Mu's point of view, he still felt angry. Of course, he was Lin Feng and not Hei Mu. Hei Mu and Lin Feng were neither friends or enemies, so why would he care about Hei Mu's point of view? Lin Feng didn't want to allow others to spy on him, nobody would accept such a thing. If he really wanted them to stay, he could have told them clearly, he didn't need to use such despicable means.

Besides, Lin Feng had come here by his own free will.

"I am going out." Said Lin Feng to Meng Qing while smiling. Meng Qing slightly nodded. She had of course sensed the people surrounding them, she also didn't feel comfortable with it. Who would allow unknown people to watch them while sleeping or cultivating?

Lin Feng left the room and started to walk away. He looked like

he was leaving the territory of Hei Mu's Tribe.

As expected, Lin Feng hadn't even made it very far when two silhouettes appeared in front to block him, while they remained silent.

"What do you want?" Asked Lin Feng sounding indifferent, yet cold.

"Dear guest, please go back." Said one of them, he was wearing black clothes and his voice contained a coldness. He was expressionless.

"I want to go out for a walk." Replied Lin Feng while shaking his head.

"Dear guest, it would be best for you to go back, there are some ferocious beasts out there, it's not safe." Said his interlocutor while still blocking his path.

"I don't need you to worry about my safety." Said Lin Feng while smiling and continued walking. The two people were stupefied and immediately moved in front of him again while shouting: "Since it's that way, don't blame us!"

"Why would I blame you?" said Lin Feng sounding indifferent. He then released a terrifying energy which froze the two people in place. They were shocked.

“GET LOST!” Shouted Lin Feng. His shout caused fear to overcome the hearts of the two people blocking his path. At the same time, a fist landed on each of their chests and their bodies were sent hurtling backwards.

“They want to rely on you to keep me here, but you only amount to this.” said Lin Feng coldly. The two people were crawling across the ground and viciously staring at Lin Feng. They immediately picked themselves up and ran away.

“Hmph.” Lin Feng groaned coldly, turned around and went back to his room. He looked at Meng Qing and said: “Meng Qing, should we stay here tonight or go out?”

“Let’s leave. It will be calmer outside.” Said Meng Qing while smiling. Lin Feng grabbed Meng Qing’s hand and started to move. These days, Meng Qing stopped rejecting his advances. She held onto Lin Feng’s hand and they left the tribe together. They rose into the air and streaked across the sky. In the blink of an eye, they were gone.

After Lin Feng and Meng Qing left, a group of people with torches and lanterns rushed towards the guest house. When they saw that it was empty, they were astonished.

“Bastard! Where did they leave from?!” Hei Mu was furious.

“Father, Lin Feng is not a member of our tribe, if he left, just let it be, we shouldn’t interfere with others.” Said Nuo Na who was by his side.

“Shut the hell up!” Said Hei Mu. “What do you know? They left which means our Black Wood Tribe will meet its end. If you want to marry the second young master of the Wolves of the Desert, that’s your problem, but now everybody is involved, your brothers and sisters will all die!”

Nuo Na’s face turned deathly pale, her lips twitched and she said: “Father, it was your fault for sending people to spy on Lin Feng, otherwise he wouldn’t have left. If he had wanted to avoid the situation, he wouldn’t have come to our tribe in the first place.”

“Smack!”

Hei Mu was furious and immediately slapped his daughter’s face. He looked ice-cold.

“You slut! Look at what...You’re staying in the guest house now, I’ll lock the door, and tomorrow when the second master arrives, I will give him the key. You’ll be his and I’ll even congratulate him at the wedding.”

Hei Mu’s voice was ice-cold. He then ordered a few guards to stay and prevent her from leaving. Nuo Na’s face was deathly pale and the tears started to flow down her cheeks. In tribes like these, men held absolute superiority over women, the Black Wood Tribes was no different. For the sake of the tribe, her father would rid himself of all emotion and abandon her, he would sacrifice her for the sake of the whole tribe.

Lin Feng had no idea of what was happening after he left. They had already arrived at the top of a small mountain. It was a very dark and cold night in the desert.

Meng Qing slightly moved and put her head on Lin Feng's shoulders. She then said: "Lin Feng, don't you have the feeling that there is something strange about this place? As if there is something different."

"Huh?" Lin Feng was stupefied. He then looked at Meng Qing and said: "You also feel it!"

Meng Qing smiled and said: "Lin Feng, don't forget that I practice a lower moon skill, the sun is its polar opposite. I can sense both water and fire distinctly.

Lin Feng nodded. Water and fire were opposite elements so Meng Qing being able to sense the overwhelming fire Qi wasn't surprising at all.

"I can also sense it. It's like there is a fire burning under our feet that could explode at any moment."

Lin Feng had practiced the Cosmos-Burning Sun skill, he was still unable to advance it to an authentic sun skill, but it was still at the level of a lower sun skill. It was enough to sense that under their feet, a terrifying fire Qi was burning, it was a very scary feeling.

"I wonder if my mother and father sensed it too when they

arrived.” Whispered Lin Feng while looking into the distance.

“Don’t think about it too much. Have some rest. Tomorrow, we are going back to the Black Wood Tribe.” Said Meng Qing while leaning against Lin Feng’s body and smiling.

“Meng Qing, how do you know that we’re going back?”

“Because I understand your heart. If we leave it like that, it could be a catastrophic disaster for Nuo Na. She can stay with us if you like.” Replied Meng Qing in a soft way. Lin Feng was astonished: “You don’t mind me having other women by my side?”

“I don’t mind, really. Lin Feng, if you meet a girl that you like, she can stay with us, I really don’t mind. As long as there is room for me in your heart, I don’t mind.” Lin Feng was astonished. While talking, Meng Qing looked sad, did she really think it was ok?

“You’re lying.” Said Lin Feng while gazing into the distance. Meng Qing shivered at those words.

“Well, even if I don’t like it, I would have to accept it. The most important thing to me is that I always have a place in your heart.” Replied Meng Qing in a soft way. Her voice was sweet and gentle. She loved Lin Feng wholeheartedly, she couldn’t change that. She was extremely scared to lose him. It didn’t matter that their love was a wonderful and beautiful story, or that she was extremely beautiful, she couldn’t help but be scared of losing him.

Lin Feng hugged Meng Qing tightly and ran his fingers through her hair. His face was filled with warmth and sweetness. Meng Qing was his first love. She was always by his side, she had always protected him and had never asked for anything in exchange. No matter if she was acting coldly or laughing wholeheartedly, he loved her. For Meng Qing's smile, he was ready to do anything, he would destroy the world for her. How could he ever stop loving her?

“If there ever was another woman, Meng Qing, nobody would be able to replace you, nobody. You will always be the most important person in my life.”

Lin Feng was still gazing into the distance, but he had a magnificent smile on his face. However, he couldn't agree to having only one woman by his side, because in the Imperial City, there was another woman who wanted nothing more than to be by his side, she was waiting for him. She spent her days drawing portraits of his face, she had dedicated her entire life to him.

Sometimes, Lin Feng asked himself why he was going so far for a woman, why he would do anything for a smile? For love, one could accomplish great thing, for love, nothing was impossible!

When Meng Qing heard Lin Feng, tears started to roll down her cheeks. He was saying that she was the most important person in his heart and that she would always be. That was enough, for her, that was enough!

Chapter 451: Kill Me?

At midday, the scorching sun was soaring high in the sky and the golden sand of the desert seemed like it had turned into lava beneath people's feet.

At that moment, the scorching sun was shining down on the Black Wood Tribe, even though it seemed calm and peaceful, the atmosphere was rather depressing.

At the entrance of the Black Wood Tribe, a great majority of the tribe members were standing in wait. The head of the tribe was standing at the very front, his daughter Nuo Na was also by his side, however, Nuo Na's hair was an absolute mess and she was bound by rope. Her face was one of sadness. However, she wasn't scared at all, she only felt desperate and hopeless.

She had been tied up by her own father and he was going to sacrifice her to a monster, the second young master. How could Nuo Na not feel desperate and hopeless?

Everybody was calmly standing there and waiting.

Finally, the sounds of hooves filled the air and drew the attention of the Black Wood Tribe, they all looked extremely nervous.

Very quickly, a cloud of golden sand rose in front of them and a group of armoured-horses arrived at the entrance of the village.

“I am the Second Young Master of the Wolves of the Desert, I’ve come today to propose a marriage alliance!” A loud and clear voice filled the air. Immediately after, many people were applauding and cheering him. With one sentence, he had stated his purpose as marriage, it didn’t differ much from a kidnapping though, the second young master only allowed the Black Wood Tribe to keep face, nothing more.

The different horses opened a path for the young man as he appeared before the eyes of the Black Wood Tribe. That young man looked extremely arrogant.

When he saw that Nuo Na had been tied up, he was stupefied and said in an ice-cold tone: “Who is the head of the Black Wood Tribe?!”

Hei Mu took a step forward and looked at the young man while bowing, he then said in an overly polite tone: “Venerable and respectable second young master, I am the humble head of the Black Wood Tribe, I heard that you were interested in my daughter Nuo Na, I, Hei Mu, am willing to give her to you. She is now yours to do with as you please.”

But the second young master frowned and said coldly: “Who tied her up? I am here to propose a marriage alliance, this is not a kidnapping! Besides, I want your daughter and the other girl who was with her yesterday. I want you to hand them both over to me, they will be my new wives.”

“As expected.” Hei Mu wasn’t surprised, that second young master had come for Lin Feng’s wife, Nuo Na was just a bonus,

nothing more.

“Venerable and respectable second young master, please accept my most sincere apologies, I tied Nuo Na up because she voluntarily released the other girl.” Said Hei Mu sounding angry at his daughter, but in reality he was terrified of the second young master. The Wolves of the Desert were the cruellest people in the region. If the second young master didn’t forgive them, it would be the end of the Black Wood Tribe.

When the second young master heard Hei Mu, he was stupefied. Then, an ice-cold light started flashing in his eyes.

“Do you know why I came here? Do you know what my purpose was?” Asked the second young master in a very aggressive tone which caused Hei Mu to shake.

“Yesterday, I didn’t immediately attack and kidnap them because I attached too much importance to her feelings, I felt a great deal of esteem and respect for her, that is why I said, and I couldn’t have been clearer, that I wanted EVERYBODY to be here today, otherwise, why do you think that I came here in person for your daughter? That’s ridiculous.” the second young master’s voice was becoming colder and louder as he spoke. He then added: “Now, you allowed her to leave...?”

Hei Mu was shaking, he was terrified.

“Venerable second young master, my daughter received a bad education, she let her go. You can take Nuo Na and deal with her as

you wish, you can humiliate her as you see fit.” When Nuo Na heard her father’s words, her face turned red. Her father was telling a monster to take her and humiliate her... Could he still be considered her father?

“I will.” Said the second young master in an ice-cold tone before adding: “But first, I will destroy the Black Wood Tribe.”

“Young master!” Shouted Hei Mu. He raised his head and said: “Second young master, I am offering you my daughter! And after that, the Black Wood Tribe will listen to anything you say, we will work for you!”

“Huh?” The second young master was stupefied. When he heard that the Black Wood Tribe would be willing to work for him, he thought that it might be a better result than annihilating them.

“What a shameless excuse of a father!”

At that moment, an ice-cold voice filled the air, everybody was stupefied.

“Who’s that?!” Hei Mu turned around and immediately saw two people in the distance slowly walking towards them. It was precisely Lin Feng and Meng Qing.

When Hei Mu saw them, he was stupefied, the second young master also narrowed his eyes. Immediately after, he smiled, he hadn’t thought that Lin Feng and Meng Qing would return.

“Why did you come back?!” shouted Nuo Na. Lin Feng had already left, why did he return? He was delivering himself and his wife to the enemy!

“I never intended to leave.” said Lin Feng while smiling. Lin Feng and Meng Qing quickly arrived in front of everybody else. Then they both glared at the second young master.

“Interesting.” Said the second young master while smiling. He immediately added: “Hei Mu, you said that you were going to work for us, now go and kill that brat and hand me the girl.”

“Yes, master.” Replied Hei Mu and then added: “Hei Shan, go and kill him.”

“Yes, foster father.” Hei Shan took a step forwards and looked at Lin Feng with an ice-cold glare while releasing a deadly energy. Initially, he was supposed to marry Nuo Na once he became the strongest warrior in the tribe. He felt that stopping to talk with Lin Feng was the cause of everything that was happening, if they had never met Lin Feng in the desert, none of this would have happened, because the Wolves of the Desert wouldn't be interested in them if not for Meng Qing.

Lin Feng looked at Hei Shan's deadly energy and laughed. He then said: “I am warning you, don't attack. I never show mercy to those who want to kill me.”

“Die, bastard!” Shouted Hei Shan ferociously while throwing

himself towards Lin Feng. He released a brutal energy which created a hurricane as he attacked.

“Wow! How strong!” Thought the members of the Black Wood Tribe while looking at Hei Shan. They were all cheering for him, he really deserved to be called a warrior of the Black Wood Tribe, Hei Shan was really strong.

Very quickly, Hei Shan arrived in front of Lin Feng, his fist was moving closer and closer to Lin Feng’s chest but Lin Feng remained absolutely motionless, he wasn’t reacting at all.

“Kill him!” Shouted someone from the tribe. Lin Feng had to die for them to survive.

Nuo Na opened her mouth, her face was deathly pale. Lin Feng had returned, but he was going to die... Hei Shan was one of the strongest warriors of the Black Wood Tribe, how could Lin Feng compete with him!

While Nuo Na was thinking this, Hei Shan’s fist bombarded Lin Feng’s chest making all the members of the Black Wood Tribe laugh out in joy, Hei Shan was monstrously strong, Lin Feng didn’t even put up a fight.

“BOOM!!”

Hei Shan’s fist crashed onto Lin Feng’s chest causing his clothes flutter in the wind, however, the smiles suddenly froze in place.

They could all clearly see that Lin Feng was still standing, motionless, and his expression was unchanged. He hadn't moved at all and he was clearly still conscious.

Lin Feng wasn't dead, he wasn't even injured.

"Huh?" Hei Shan was shocked. He punched Lin Feng again but Lin Feng remained completely motionless, like a huge mountain. Hei Shan was dumbstruck. He raised his head and looked at Lin Feng who was now laughing because he found the situation terribly amusing.

"How's that possible? What's going on!?"

Hei Shan's fist was shaking, everybody watching was astonished as well. Lin Feng had just been punched in the chest by Hei Shan multiple times, but he hadn't even moved an inch.

"So that's how you were planning to kill me." Laughed Lin Feng coldly. He looked perfectly calm and unaffected by what just happened. Everybody was stunned.

They hadn't thought of the possibility that Lin Feng would be a strong cultivator.

"I warned you before about attacking me." Said Lin Feng in a cold tone. He then slowly raised his hand, and then pointed his finger, Lin Feng's finger was pointing directly at Hei Shan.

Suddenly, Lin Feng's finger started to move which frightened Hei Shan who started to quickly retreat.

However, as weak as he was, would he have a chance to retreat?

Lin Feng's finger immediately landed on Hei Shan's throat and slit from ear to ear, after grabbing his throat and convulsing, he slowly collapsed onto the ground, dead.

"Hei Shan is dead?!" Hei Mu was shocked and his heart was now palpitating even more violently. Hei Mu was blankly staring at Lin Feng's figure. He would never have thought that the delicate and handsome looking Lin Feng was actually a powerful cultivator.

"Because of a few words from them, you wanted to kill me. How ridiculous." Joked Lin Feng. Hei Mu wanted to kill him because of what the second young master said. Hei Mu was convinced that Lin Feng was a weak young noble and not a powerful cultivator.

However, if he had known that the second young master from the Wolves of the Desert was only an insect in comparison with Lin Feng, he would have acted very differently. He was shocked by the turn of events.

Chapter 452: Absolute Despair!

Nuo Na was dumbstruck as well when she saw Lin Feng attack, she also hadn't thought that Lin Feng would be so powerful.

Lin Feng looked like a weak young noble from the city. When they first met, she assumed that he had run away from a noble family and entered the desert. Meeting them and then encountering the Wolves of the Desert had caused this situation.

“Interesting!” Joked the second young master interrupting everybody's train of thought. The second young master was still sitting atop his horse, he then smiled and said: “I wouldn't have thought that the tribe would allow someone like you to cultivate. Even if you have cultivated a little bit, the truth is that everyone from the Black Wood Tribe is useless.”

When Lin Feng heard him, he was surprised but immediately laughed and shook his head. That second young master was really a waste of space; he hadn't even been able to determine Lin Feng's strength from such a blatant display of power.

“Lang Ya, take some people and bring me his head!” Said Hei Mu in an ice-cold tone while pulling a long face.

Lang Ya was the strongest warrior of the Black Wood Tribe. He had already broken through to the fourth Ling Qi layer. He was using his famous weapon as well, his wolf-tooth club. His wolf-tooth club weighed a hundred and fifty kilograms. With a single attack he could tear flesh and break bone.

Lang Ya was a huge muscular man who was bareback, he grabbed his wolf-tooth club and rested it onto his shoulder, he looked imposing and domineering. His eyes were large like copper-bells, and he was fixedly staring at Lin Feng.

“I don’t need anyone else to interfere, I will kill him myself.” Said Lang Ya in an ice-cold way. He only took a few huge steps in Lin Feng’s direction and immediately arrived in front of Lin Feng.

Without the slightest bit of hesitation, he raised his wolf-tooth club and was aiming at Lin Feng’s head. While attacking with his weapon, a whistling sound filled the air as an extreme force crashed through the air. The members of the Black Wood Tribe were staring at his weapon, Lin Feng had no possible escape from that wolf-tooth club.

But at that moment, everybody was astonished. The wolf-tooth club had struck down, but Lin Feng wasn’t there anymore. He suddenly appeared by Lang Ya’s side.

“BOOM!”

The wolf-tooth club landed on the ground and the shock made Lang Ya’s entire body tremble. The crowd then suddenly saw a strange action from Lang Ya, he fell onto the ground and started crawling. He didn’t have the power to stand up, blood could then be seen dripping onto the golden sand, turning it a deep shade of red. Finally, the crowd realised what had happened and started shaking, their hearts were racing.

The strongest warrior of the Black Wood Tribe was dead. But, they didn't even see how he died. The only thing they knew was that he been killed by Lin Feng, there was no doubt about that. Lin Feng had killed him in the blink of an eye.

"If you are planning on killing me, everyone here should join forces, one or two people will just waste time." Said Lin Feng indifferently which astonished everyone present. Lin Feng was telling everyone there join forces and fight together against him.

Hei Mu was gnashing his teeth and fixedly staring at Lin Feng, but he didn't give another order.

"Trash! Go together and kill him, then bring me his woman!" Shouted the second young master impatiently. He couldn't stand watching this any longer. Lin Feng turned his head towards him and released a monstrous ice-cold energy. It was extremely sharp and piercingly-cold which made the second young master start to shiver. He felt like ice-cold needles were piercing through his skin.

"Second young master, we will kill him and bring you that girl to play with!" Said a few bandits while galloping towards Lin Feng. However, at that moment, he had already released a powerful deadly energy which covered the sky. Those who were attacking Lin Feng were astonished and immediately stopped moving, they didn't dare move against Lin Feng anymore.

The crowd was astonished. Lin Feng suddenly disappeared from his initial position and appeared in front of the person who had

just spoke out, humiliating Meng Qing and Lin Feng.

“Huh?” When that person saw Lin Feng’s ice-cold eyes, he started to shiver. He looked puzzled, he was mounted atop an armoured-horse and should be looking down at Lin Feng, but surprisingly Lin Feng was stood eye level with him, how was that possible?

The man’s eyes then followed Lin Feng’s body down and when he realized what was going on, his heart almost leapt from his chest and a shiver ran down his spine. His face looked terrified and hopeless, because at that moment, Lin Feng was floating in the air, he was walking on air which meant that Lin Feng was AT LEAST a Xuan Qi layer cultivator!

“THUMP! THUMP! THUMP! THUMP!..” The sound of everyone beating hearts was audible. The one on the horse was still shaking and his facial expression was hideous. Xuan Qi layer... Xuan Qi layer... Those were the only words that filled his mind... Xuan Qi layer.

He wasn’t the only one, when the others saw Lin Feng’s body float through the air, they all froze in shock, like statues.

Lin Feng was a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer? But he was so young!

Hei Mu was fixedly staring at Lin Feng. He had given his tribe the order to kill an extremely strong cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer? On top of that, he was extremely young, which meant he was

talented.

Hei Mu was regretting everything. He was finally realizing that his daughter was right, Lin Feng, from start to finish, had never even thought about running away. Otherwise, why would he come back to the Black Wood Tribe with her, only to flee afterwards. On top of that, Lin Feng had never seemed like he was scared of the Wolves of the Desert.

The most ridiculous thing was that Hei Mu had never even considered that such a thing might be possible. After he heard Hei Shan tell him about the Wolves of the Desert, he had only thought about how to appease them and never considered anything else. He had tied his daughter up and delivered him to the enemy. At that moment, he was realizing that in his panic, he had sided against Lin Feng, who was much stronger than the Wolves of the Desert. Thinking back, he should have treated Lin Feng as a respected guest.

However, what really happened was ridiculous.

Hei Mu had been so scared of a weakling, and because of that weakling, he ordered people to kill an extremely strong cultivator, Lin Feng.

The second young master and the tribe were astonished. Lin Feng had the strength of the Xuan Qi layer.

“What did you say a moment ago?” Asked Lin Feng while looking at the man who had just humiliated Meng Qing and him. His voice

was cold and emotionless. The man could only tremble and look blankly at Lin Feng. He kept shaking his head and saying: “I didn’t say a word!!”

“Nothing?” Lin Feng was smiling. His smile was particularly resplendent. He then released a monstrous deadly energy which burst into the sky and enveloped the man’s body, the energy was so oppressive that he was almost falling to the ground.

“Die.” Said Lin Feng. A bright and resplendent light flashed through the atmosphere and fell towards the bandit, a spot of blood then emerged between his eyebrows. After collapsing to the ground, his eyes were still wide open but apart from a few convulsions, his body was lifeless.

“THUMP! THUMP! THUMP!” Everyone’s hearts were pounding while looking at the dead body beneath Lin Feng who was still floating in the air.

“Pssh.. Pssh...” Blood suddenly sprayed into the air, all of the people who were just rushing to attack Lin Feng together had collapsed and fell from their horses. The crowd could only see the light from sword Qi, but they never saw a sword being unsheathed.

Some of the men urged their horses and started galloping in the opposite direction, however, anyone who tried to run was immediately killed under the sword lights. Countless silhouettes were falling from horsebacks one after the other, they were all dead.

It was terrifying, everyone was terrified and panic-stricken.

Fear continued to fill the people's hearts as they then saw Lin Feng slowly rise higher into the air.

A moment before, they looked down on Lin Feng. However, they were now looking up at him and admiring his strength. Lin Feng, to them, was as dazzling as the sun.

"You want to kill me?" Lin Feng's arm streaked across the sky, he was surrounded by the midday sunlight which made his figure seem even more majestic. A few bandits let out horrible shrieks and their bodies flew away. Lin Feng had taken their lives.

"You humiliated Meng Qing?" Lin Feng raised his hand again and his sword light shot through across the sky. Immediately after, more blood splashed into the air. He was killing each of the Wolves of the Desert one by one.

Lin Feng didn't stop killing. His sword light was dancing across the sky as blood filled the air.

At that moment, Lin Feng was still floating in the sky, he looked like a god of death. He was absolutely merciless as he continued his massacre.

The members of the Black Wood Tribe were all astonished and fixedly staring at Lin Feng. Their jaws were agape. They were dumbstruck and had fallen into despair.

In what seemed like an instant, he had already killed a great number of people. In no time, he had slaughtered hundreds of people from the Wolves of the Desert and at that moment, only one was left: the second young master!!

Chapter 453: The Massacre!

“You... You....” The second young master of the Wolves of the Desert looked around him and saw that all of his comrades were already dead. He was still on his horseback, but he was shaking with fear. He looked terrified.

“You... Want to kill me?” Said Lin Feng in an ice-cold tone while walking towards the second young master.

The second young master wanted to kill Lin Feng? Could he? At that moment, all of his followers had been killed by Lin Feng, now his life was in Lin Feng’s hands.

“You wanted to kidnap my wife and force her become your wife?” Said Lin Feng while releasing some deadly energy which caused fear to penetrate deep into the second young master’s heart.

“I am the second young master of the Wolves of the Desert. I am the son of the King of the Wolves. Outside the city, we are the most influential and powerful group, if you kill me, an endless number of people will hunt you down and slaughter you.” Said the second young master, his voice grew louder and louder, he was attempting to restore his courage. He was the son of the King of the Wolves, Lin Feng wouldn’t dare to kill him!

“There is no need for them to hunt me down! After killing you, I will just wait here for them.” Said Lin Feng indifferently, he didn’t even feel the slightest bit intimidated by his interlocutor’s threat.

Lin Feng even looked like he was going to burst into a fit of laughter.

“In three seconds, I am going to end your life.” Said Lin Feng which stupefied the second young master, three seconds?

“Two seconds.” Said Lin Feng while smiling coldly at the second young master who was now galloping away like a madman. A sword rose into the air, it was a scorching sword.

“Don’t....!!!” Shouted the second young master in despair but it was useless. After that, the light from the sword crashed into his body and turned his internal organs into ashes. His eyes were wide in disbelief. Immediately after, the remains of his body fell to the ground, he was clearly dead. The majestic second young master of the Wolves of the Desert had just died with his eyes wide open.

Lin Feng looked as emotionless. He slowly turned around and looked at the members of the Black Wood Tribe, and more particularly at Hei Mu. Lin Feng still looked like he was going to burst into laughter.

Hei Mu’s lips were twitching, he wanted to say something but the words weren’t coming out. Because of a few words from the second young master, he wanted to kill Lin Feng. At that moment, he realized that Lin Feng had singlehandedly killed all the Wolves of the Desert. How ridiculous had he been to want to kill Lin Feng!

A sharp sound filled the air and Nuo Na’s ties were cut. At that moment, she was staring at Lin Feng and she was speechless.

Lin Feng was so young and he had already broken through to the Xuan Qi layer, what a terrifying talent!

“Lin Feng, leave quickly! The Wolves of the Desert will be coming for you! They won't just let something like this go. Take advantage of this opportunity and leave!” Nuo Na suddenly shouted. Outside of Tianya Haige, the Wolves of the Desert were the largest power, and they were the undisputed strongest. They had many extremely strong cultivators. They had a dozen tribe heads who were all at the Xuan Qi layer. They would definitely hunt down Lin Feng and avenge their people.

When Lin Feng heard Nuo Na, he shook his head and smiled, leave? Why did he need to leave?

“Lin Feng, even though you are extremely strong, the Wolves of the Desert are neither weaklings nor cowards, they will definitely come for you.” Said Nuo Na, she was extremely anxious.

“Nuo Na, that's enough. Young master Lin Feng is certainly strong enough to cope with the Wolves of the Desert” said Hei Mu at that moment, he then continued: “Young master Lin Feng, I was blind before, I failed to appreciate your kindness. I hope that we can find a way for you to forgive me. You are always welcome to stay in my tribe and we will properly receive you, as venerable guests.”

Lin Feng looked amused when he saw Hei Mu's face. He had killed that group who belonged to the Wolves of the Desert, he had

even killed the second young master, those bandits would inevitably seek revenge. If they sent people to the Black Wood Tribe and found out that Lin Feng wasn't there, they would slaughter everyone. Therefore, Hei Mu was being very polite and friendly, hoping that Lin Feng would forget that they had just tried to kill him.

“Get out of my sight, I don't want to see you again.” Said Lin Feng coldly which stupefied Hei Mu. He then replied politely: “If you remain here, I will make sure to stay out of your sight!”

While talking, Hei Mu moved back into the crowd, as if he really intended to stay out of sight, like Lin Feng said.

Lin Feng and Meng Qing didn't leave the Black Wood Tribe, they wanted to stay with Nuo Na. Concerning Hei Mu, he kept casting his eyes to the distance, if Lin Feng left, nobody could save the Black Wood Tribe.

One day passed and then another, outside of the Black Wood Tribe, the sound of galloping horses could be heard on the horizon. The galloping horses were making the ground shake, giving people a feeling of majesty and pride.

But the people of the Black Wood Tribe weren't excited at all, they were all terrified.

The Wolves of the Desert had come for their revenge.

The ground continued to shake, a cloud of golden sand could be seen on the horizon. Everybody in the tribe remained silent as the cloud of sand grew closer, they were all trembling with fear.

The group of horses then stopped outside of the tribe. Immediately after, the one who seemed to be their leader said: “Kill everybody! Slaughter every person from the Black Wood Tribe!”

“Yes!” The sound of galloping horses filled the air again, but this time they were attacking the Black Wood Tribe.

“Die!” A terrifying and cruel Qi dashed into the skies and crashed into the crowd of people. All the people who had been touched by that terrifying Qi died.

“Ahhhh.....!”

“Ahhhhhhh..... HELP!!!”

Bloodcurdling shrieks filled the air. The Wolves of the Desert had only one thing in mind, slaughter! Without saying a word, they had already killed a huge number of people, it was a bloodbath.

In a different corner of the tribe, Hei Mu could clearly sense that his people were being massacred. His silhouette flickered and he immediately moved towards Lin Feng’s room.

After a short time, he appeared in front of Lin Feng and said:

“Young master Lin Feng, the Wolves of the Desert have come to slaughter us!”

“So what?” Said Lin Feng coldly while looking at Hei Mu.

“They have come to kill you!” Said Hei Mu whose facial expression was twitching.

“If they try to kill me, I will of course deal with them. I don’t need you to worry about such things. Now, get lost.” Said Lin Feng in an ice-cold tone. He looked absolutely emotionless.

“But... The Wolves of the Desert are slaughtering the members of my tribe!” Said Hei Mu, he still wasn’t leaving, he was expecting Lin Feng to help.

“What does that have to do with me?!” Said Lin Feng whose voice was getting colder.

“I was hoping that you would show yourself to the Wolves of the Desert, and stop them.”

Lin Feng burst into laughter, an evil laughter. He took a step forwards and stood in front of Hei Mu. His face turned ice-cold and he said: “The Black Wood Tribe wanted to kill me on multiple occasions and now that you are in a critical situation, you want me to protect you? Is that a joke?”

“I, Lin Feng, am not a fool.” Said Lin Feng and at the same time

he released a terrifying deadly energy.

“If you don’t get out of my sight immediately, I will kill you!”

Chapter 454: Savage Thoughts

Some deadly energy pressed against Hei Mu's body, he was so scared that his legs became weak.

He regretted everything and felt hopeless. He turned around and his silhouette flickered as he ran away. It was over, the Black Wood Tribe would soon be destroyed.

They had tried to kill Lin Feng and now they wanted his protection, was such a thing possible?

Lin Feng wasn't a saint, he wouldn't fight to save the Black Wood Tribe that wanted him dead. Even if he was going to fight in the future, he wouldn't lift a finger to help them.

Hei Mu walked through the territory of the tribe and all he could see were the scattered corpses of his tribe members. A sudden pain invaded his heart, everything was his fault.

Not far in front of Hei Mu, there was a person riding atop a fiery red wolf. That person looked majestic and cruel. Hei Mu's silhouette flickered and in a flash, he appeared in front of the person.

Then, Hei Mu said in a very respectful way: "Venerable and respectable King of the Wolves, Your Highness, I am the head of the Black Wood Tribe, I am terribly grieved by the second young master's death but it is neither my fault nor that of my people, I had already pledged my loyalty to the second young master, I had

promised to devote my entire life to him. The one who killed the second young master isn't one of us, his name is Lin Feng, he is a young man. Look, he is in there. I beg of you, Your Highness, please forgive us."

The king looked at Hei Mu indifferently and then looked in the direction in which Hei Mu was pointing. The king of wolves expressionless said: "Fire wolf, let's go."

The fire wolf heard the king and its eyes diffused a dazzling light. Apart from its dangerous eyes, the fire wolf's fur was entirely red.

"I beg you, please forgive my tribe." Said Hei Mu while bowing in front of the king.

The king moved next to Hei Mu and smiled: "I forgive you, so you can all die happily."

When Hei Mu heard the king, he was stupefied. Immediately after, the wolf howled and an incredible scorching hot Qi emerged. The fire wolf started to breathe fire around its surroundings, in a flash, Hei Mu was a burnt corpse.

Hei Mu had died, devoured by the flames. The king of the wolves had shown no mercy at all.

"Let's go." Said the king of the wolves while walking in the direction which Hei Mu pointed. At the same time, a group of people were following closely behind him. Their deadly Qi was

thick and dense. Those people were also all releasing their murderous intent in that direction.

“I don’t need so many people to follow me, a few is enough. The others can continue massacring the tribe members. None of them are to be left alive.” Said the king of the wolves in a deep voice. Many people turned back and continued looking for members of the Black Wood Tribe who may have run or gone into hiding. They were going to keep killing until no one was left.

At that moment, Lin Feng was sitting on the roof of the house where he had been staying. He was calmly looking at the silhouettes on the horizon, they were moving in his direction. Lin Feng looked absolutely carefree and unaffected by it though.

Very quickly, the king of the wolves and the others arrived to where Lin Feng was sitting at. They raised their heads and looked at the calm-looking young man. They were all surprised, that young man was very brave, didn’t he know why they were here? Didn’t he know that they were going to kill him?

“Wolf King, I will kill him for you.” Said someone who was standing next to the king of the wolves. He wanted to show his loyalty.

“Alright, Luo Sen, go and take his life. Use your sabers to behead him, then bring his head back to me.” Said the king while nodding.

“Don’t worry Wolf King, my sabers have grown thirsty after not tasting blood in such a long time.” Said Luo Sen while moving

forwards. He was slowly approaching Lin Feng. He then raised his head and looked at Lin Feng who was still sitting on the roof with a carefree appearance.

“Don’t worry, I will not kill you slowly, my sabers will first slowly slice away at your flesh, slash by slash, until, eventually, your head falls down.” Said Luo Sen in a cold and bloodthirsty manner.

Lin Feng was gazing into the distance, calmly and serenely, as if Luo Sen hadn’t opened his mouth at all.

Luo Sen initially wanted to scare Lin Feng but it didn’t work. A bloodthirsty look appeared in his eyes, he looked ferocious and wild. He didn’t even look like a human being anymore, he looked like a bloodthirsty wolf.

Lin Feng glanced at Luo Sen and when he saw that bestial-looking face, he was stupefied, he looked like a hideous wolf!

“Remember, the one who will take your life is one of the heads of the Wolves of the Desert, my name is Yao Lang Luo Sen.” When he finished talking, Luo Sen threw himself at Lin Feng. In his bestial-looking eyes appeared a fiery red light. He really looked like a wolf at that moment.

His right hand suddenly became longer and what looked like five sharp blades appeared. They looked piercingly cold and extremely sharp, besides an ice-cold evil Qi was emerging from them. Those were the sabers he had been talking about.

Each and every single member of the Wolves of the Desert was smiling evilly, as if they could already see Lin Feng's body in front of them.

At the same time, Lin Feng released a terrifying deadly Qi which rolled through the air and enveloped Luo Sen's body. That monstrous deadly Qi made Luo Sen suddenly feel extremely cold and he started to shiver from head to toe. He suddenly looked surprised and was scared.

“Die.” Said Lin Feng while releasing a pure deadly energy that was as sharp as a sword, which pierced straight towards Luo Sen.

Luo Sen was astonished. His sharp claws immediately landed on the deadly energy emitting a sharp metallic sound. However, at that moment, Lin Feng was already standing and had started moving. He released more deadly energy and it slowly formed a black sword in his hand.

His sword was unleashed and a monstrous amount of deadly energy emerged from it and crashed into Luo Sen, his saber-claws were shattered instantly.

“Aaaawuuuuu!”

Luo Sen howled like a wolf. The black sword then immediately penetrated into his body and sliced him apart. Luo Sen was dead.

Lin Feng took another step through the air and moved towards the other members of the Wolves of the Desert. He was still releasing a monstrous amount of deadly energy.

Initially, Luo Sen's corpse was behind Lin Feng, however, without anyone noticing, the corpse disappeared, it had disappeared completely, as if it had never been there. It was very strange.

The other members of the Wolves of the Desert were stupefied. Lin Feng's strength was unbelievable. That scary deadly energy was surrounding them and they were all terrified.

"Let's kill him together!" Said the king of the wolves. The people who were facing Lin Feng with him at that moment were all heads of the subdivisions of their tribe, anyone who tried to take on their combined force would die. They were such a large and powerful group that they had to be divided into subgroups, they were living in packs, like wolves. Everybody was scared of them, if anyone dared to threaten them, they would join hands and kill that person together.

Their eyes were all ferocious and bestial, just like a wolf pack.

"Boom!" Lin Feng took another step and released more deadly energy which soared into the skies, some deadly energy surrounded the group and started to suppress them.

The Wolves of the Desert were now realizing how terrifyingly strong this young man was.

Lin Feng took another step and it seemed like the ground was going to collapse, his deadly energy grew even more powerful and applied a greater pressure.

“Destroy him!” Shouted the king furiously. They couldn’t wait any longer, they had to attack and kill Lin Feng immediately.

After hearing the king, all those heads threw themselves at Lin Feng. Bestial lights were twinkling in their eyes. Lin Feng didn’t have the impression that he was fighting other people, he had the impression that they were all ferocious beasts.

“Die.” Lin Feng’s voice filled the air as a sword descended from the sky and immediately sliced through multiple people. Those people howled with pain as they fell down onto the ground and died. This time, when their silhouettes disappeared, the king’s body started to shake, he grabbed their bodies with his hands and in a flash, their corpses turned into fiery red smoke which penetrated into his body.

“Huh?” Lin Feng was surprised, he didn’t understand what was happening. What technique was that?

But immediately after, his deadly energy became even more powerful and he continued attacking with his sword. He continued to kill his way through the group, one person fell after another.

The king was shaking, he took a deep breath and continued absorb the fiery red smoke from those people. It looked

particularly frightening.

But the faces of those who hadn't died didn't change at all. They looked like this was absolutely normal, in their eyes, there was only savage thoughts, they wanted to tear apart Lin Feng.

However, they were much weaker than Lin Feng and it was obvious, trying to kill Lin Feng was the same thing as willingly courting death. Each time Lin Feng moved his sword, someone died.

With every movement he would take another life.

Lin Feng realized at that moment that each time he killed someone, they were being absorbed by the king of the wolves, and each time he absorbed that smoke, his Qi was becoming more rampant, and he was thus becoming stronger and stronger.

Chapter 455: The Four-Tailed Wolf!

At that moment, Lin Feng stood with his deadly sword in his hand, its deadly energy had enveloped the wolf king's body. The king was glaring at Lin Feng and releasing a coarse and wild Qi.

The king hadn't thought that Lin Feng would be so powerful, but he didn't look scared at all, his eyes were only filled with endless ferocity, his eyes actually looked like those of a wolf.

"Human yet not a human, beast yet not a beast." Said Lin Feng. His opponent gave him the feeling that he was neither a beast nor a human, he just looked extremely cruel and ferocious. Surprisingly, he was able to absorb power from his dead comrades and turn it into his own power.

"Aaaawwwwooooooooooooo....." The wolf king howled loudly while repeatedly shaking his head, his actions seemed just like a wolf. He looked particularly bestial. He didn't even pay attention to what Lin Feng was saying and his eyes continued to grow more ferocious and bestial.

"So that's how it is, the wolf king from the wolves of the desert, must be an actual wolf!" Lin Feng raised his deadly sword and firmly pointed it towards the wolf king. Lin Feng's sword suddenly slashed towards the wolf king at full speed.

The wolf king was fixedly staring at Lin Feng. He crouched to the floor and his hands started to transform into a pair of horrifying red claws which glistened in the sunlight.

“Die!” Shouted Lin Feng. His deadly energy filled the air as his sword descended.

“Gggrrrrrrr....” The wolf king let out a violent growl and launched himself from the back of his fire wolf. His speed was incredible, his red claws revealed their sharp edges as they slashed towards Lin Feng. Suddenly, a terrifying fire Qi emerged from the claws which collided with Lin Feng’s sword, causing a fiery explosion in the air.

The sword Qi started to disperse, leaving Lin Feng astonished. After having absorbed the power of his tribe members, the king had become unimaginably strong, at that moment, he had strength similar to the fourth Xuan Qi layer.

“Aaaawwwwwwwwooooo!” The wolf king howled once again in a high-pitched tone and threw himself towards Lin Feng with all his might, Lin Feng was shocked, the wolf king moved so fast that he seemed to vanish from sight.

Lin Feng took a step forwards and a rumbling sound filled the air. Lin Feng released waves and waves of deadly energy into the air, but it hardly slowed the wolf king’s speed.

“Die.” Shouted Lin Feng again. He continued to release more deadly energy with increased power. It then collided with the wolf king’s fire energy, which created a stalemate between the two energies. The atmosphere was filled with the sound of collisions as the energies continued to fight against each other to decide a victor.

“Die.” Lin Feng’s was surrounded by his deadly energy which was growing denser as he continued to release it into the atmosphere. The sword in his hand had started to turn a deeper shade of black, it looked ominous.

Lin Feng didn’t retreat, he continued to charge forwards. His pure Qi had started to transform into deadly energy which bombarded the atmosphere, causing the wolf king’s heart to tremble.

The bloodthirsty eyes of the wolf king gradually revealed a look of surprise. Lin Feng’s deadly energy was becoming denser and more powerful over time.

“Aaawwwoooooo!” The wolf king howled again while looking to the sky, a sea of flames burst from his body and he threw himself towards Lin Feng, who was slashing down with his sword. Neither side was backing down, they were both pressing forwards gain. Two behemoths were clashing!

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” The atmosphere was shaking and shockwaves spread through the air each time the deadly energy and flames collided, it started to form a hurricane-like wind across the surroundings. All around them, the scenery was desolate, everything in their surroundings had been completely destroyed. The people in the distance were surprised when they noticed their fight. How powerful! They were obviously surprised by the wolf king’s strength, but Lin Feng’s strength surprised them even more, he was incredibly young and already had such a terrifying strength!

Nuo Na was especially astonished. She was standing on the eaves of a house while watching the wolf king and Lin Feng's battle. Her mouth had grown completely dry and she was unable to speak any words. It was too shocking. Lin Feng was even stronger than what she had imagined, it was inconceivable!

At that moment, Nuo Na looked perplexed. Even though Lin Feng had saved her from the second young master, her father had died and all the other members of the tribe were being exterminated. Even if her tribe initially wanted to deliver her to the enemy, she was still very close to many members of the tribe, and they were still her family.

This calamity could have been avoided. Lin Feng's strength was sufficient to deal with the king of the wolves. If her father hadn't ordered people to act against Lin Feng, their relationship with Lin Feng wouldn't have deteriorated, after that, the tribe moved to kill Lin Feng because of the second young master... If they had welcomed Lin Feng and not acted against him, everything would have been different.

"Boom!" Another collision caused the surroundings to shake which interrupted Nuo Na's train of thought. She then turned her attention back to the fight.

She only saw Lin Feng's sword slashing down, the wolf king couldn't bear the pressure, he started to move back. Lin Feng's deadly energy was too frightening, on top of that, it continued to grow more powerful as more deadly energy was released by Lin Feng. It was incredibly scary, it never stopped growing in power.

The wolf king's ferocious eyes looked even more bestial than before. He howled in a deep voice and moved back. However, at that moment, he sensed a terrifying deadly energy envelop his body.

He raised his head and saw Lin Feng's silhouette in the sky above him, he was holding his deadly sword which was now a deep black, surrounded by bright flames, they looked like the flames of a scorching sun. Besides, the powerful sun was shining onto the sword which seemed to increase the ferocity of the flames.

When Lin Feng's sword descended, the sky was torn asunder, leaving a fiery black trail in its path, it looked like a black and red rainbow had formed above their battle. The black deadly energy and red flames slashed across the sky. The sword moved at an inconceivable speed, it appeared out of nowhere, just like the wind.

The wolf king was stupefied but immediately released its terrifying bestial Qi which exploded in every direction.

“Aaawwwooooo!” The wolf king howled in anger. Nuo Nan who was watching the battle was deeply shocked. At that moment, the wolf king's skin started to tear off as he actually started to transform into a wolf, the wolf looked to the sky and gave a long howl. He was an actual wolf!

Flames started to fill the air and surround the wolf.

There was no rumbling or sound of a collision, there was only a subtle sound that pierced into people's ears, it was a terrifying screeching sound.

A large area around the wolf king was burned to ashes. The wolf king and Lin Feng's silhouettes disappeared from sight. There was only raging flames surrounding them.

"Aaaawwwoooo eeeeeee...." The flaming wolf king swiftly moved through the flames. The fire wolf mount which hadn't moved, suddenly turned into a red smoke which rushed towards the wolf king. It swallowed the fire wolf's power and then the flames around its body suddenly grew more intense, it was magnificent.

"A beast." The people watching were astonished and their hearts were unsettled. He was a beast, the king of the Wolves of the Deserts was a.... Ferocious beast?

Lin Feng's silhouette could once again be seen in the air, he was fixedly staring at the wolf, those eyes really looked like those of a wolf. Lin Feng's heart was shaking as well.

How was that possible? Lin Feng had already seen a ferocious beast during its transformation process, only a Tian level beast could transform into a human, but the king of the wolves didn't seem to be at the Tian level.

At that moment, an intense fire started burning around its body and it released a monstrous and terrifying beast Qi. In front of everybody, the tail of the wolf grew longer and started to split

apart, three more tails were formed. The wolf had suddenly become much bigger and now had four tails.

“Four tails...” Lin Feng didn’t understand, after the fourth tail grew, the wolf seemed to stop its transformation.

At that moment, the wolf king, which was an actual beast was still glaring at Lin Feng, it looked hideous, ferocious and cruel.

“How ferocious.” Lin Feng didn’t understand. The king of the Wolves of the Desert was an actual wolf?

“Aaaaaaaaaahhhhhh.....” A sharp scream filled the atmosphere. Nuo Na was the person who screamed out. When she saw the terrifying beast, she was overcome with terror. Her eyes were wide and filled with dread.

Nuo Na wasn’t the only one to react. The members of the Wolves of the Desert, they were ordinary people and were so shocked that they stopped moving. They were just blankly staring at the wolf surrounded by flames.

A four-tailed wolf...

Everyone, at that moment, thought about the same terrifying story which involved fire wolves. That story went back to ancient times. All the people watching had conflicting feelings, because they never believed that the story was anything but fiction. They didn’t think such a thing was possible.

The Wolves of the Desert... Desert... Wolves!

When people thought about it, they couldn't help but tremble in fear. The name "Wolves of the Desert" had another meaning!

Chapter 456: The Ancient Legend

In Tianya Haige, there was a legend which came from the ancient past. In ancient times, Tianya Haige didn't exist, there was only an extremely vast open land. The land was constantly exposed to extremely high temperatures which caused the ground to crumble into sand, forming the desert.

Under the ground, deep under the land, there was an ancient fire which radiated endless heat. That fire burned for eons until it finally started to gain consciousness, several parts of the fire transformed into wolves. That was the legend surrounding how fire wolves emerged in the desert.

Besides, fire wolves were known for having special powers, some of them were proficient in using powerful illusions. Even if the wolves hadn't reached the Tian level, they were able to use the illusions to appear human. After that the wolves would appear no different from anyone else, nobody was ever able to identify a fire wolf's illusion.

Time passed by and the legend turned into a story, a story about the humans who entered a bloody war against the fire wolves, with the humans emerging victorious. However, every few hundred years, fire wolves would emerge from under the desert and the bloody cycle would repeat. After countless bloody wars, the humans built the city of Tianya Haige and sealed the ground surrounding the city. However, outside of Tianya Haige, there was still a vast desert for them to emerge. The wolves didn't try to break the seal in Tianya Haige, instead they would emerge in the outer desert and begin their rampage.

A sea of fire wolves would appear outside of Tianya Haige every few hundred years. Most people didn't believe the ancient legend, but they knew the story regarding the bloody wars.

Since the last time the wolves emerged, the story had faded from peoples' memories. Even though the king was riding a fire wolf, no one would ever connect it to the story regarding fire wolves. However, at that moment, the wolf king had transformed into a four-tailed fire wolf, which filled everyone with dread.

Those tails were a sign of an upcoming catastrophe. The number of tails indicated the level of the wolf. The wolf king had four tails which proved it was a fourth level Xuan beast, if it had five tails, it would mean that it was a level five Xuan beast.

"The external part of Tianya Haige is doomed, everything is going to be destroyed." Thought the tribe members while shaking. Those fire wolves were extremely ferocious and vicious; they were known for their bloody massacres. The emergence of fire wolves would be a terrifying event, it would cause the desert to be dyed red with blood.

In fact, all the leaders from the Wolves of the Desert must have been fire wolves which had transformed themselves to appear as humans, that was how the wolf king was able to absorb their power.

The tails of the wolf king were swinging through the air, its eyes looked cruel and it was fixedly glaring at Lin Feng, it then said:

“Initially, we wanted to start at a later date, but you have forced us to speed up our plans.”

The wolf was still speaking in human tongue, its voice was ice-cold. After it finished speaking, a terrifying fire Qi filled the air and the wolf disappeared into the sand.

Lin Feng wasn't born in the desert, he didn't know about the story regarding fire wolves. He frowned and released a terrifying deadly energy and rushed forwards, he wasn't going to let the wolf king escape.

“Lin Feng!”

However, at that moment, Nuo Na shouted out which surprised Lin Feng. He turned his head and looked towards Nuo Na as if he didn't understand.

He only saw that Nuo Na looked absolutely terrified. Lin Feng was confused by the turn of events. It seemed like everybody there was terrified by the Wolves of the Desert.

“Lin Feng, let's leave quickly! We have to flee the desert and move to the city!” Shouted Nuo Na who was panic-stricken. At the same time, the members of the Wolves of the Desert also started to escape at full speed. Everyone was crazily trying to escape, they rushed through the desert like lunatics.

“What's going on Nuo Na?!” Asked Lin Feng, he had no idea what

had caused the people to run scared. The wolf king had turned into a wolf, Lin Feng was surprised, but not that much. Could it be that Nuo Na was surprisingly terrified because of that?

But at that moment, Lin Feng suddenly felt a tremble run through his body, he looked astonished. Meng Qing and Lin Feng glanced at each other, they both looked extremely surprised.

The fire Qi which they had sensed under the ground was the ancient fire from legends. At that moment, the fire Qi was growing stronger, as if a volcanic eruption was close, it was a disaster.

“Let’s go, we have to run otherwise we won’t make it! I will tell you the details on the way” Nuo Na ignored the fact that Lin Feng and Meng Qing were confused, she immediately rushed over to grab Meng Qing’s hand and started running towards Lin Feng and said: “Hurry up! We have to go and reach the city if we want to keep our lives!”

Lin Feng was stupefied. It seemed like everyone was terrified because the Fire Qi beneath the desert.

“Meng Qing!” Shouted Lin Feng. Meng Qing immediately understood and rose into the air while holding onto Nuo Na.

Nuo Na let out a squeal of surprise. She had always wondered what it would be like to fly through the sky, but at that moment, she only felt nauseous.

Meng Qing had only grabbed hold of one of her arms, suddenly another hand grabbed Nuo Na's other arm, she turned her head and noticed Lin Feng had flown over. Meng Qing and Lin Feng were each holding one of her arms as they flew through the sky.

“How strong... Lin Feng and his wife are both so powerful.” Thought Nuo Na in surprise. Flying through the air was something that she had always dreamt of, and at that moment her dream had come true. However, this was not how she had imagined it, she wasn't as excited and happy as when she dreamt about it.

Her father was dead and her tribe had been destroyed, on top of that, the fire wolves were about to emerge for another blood bath.

“Nuo Na, what's going on?”

The pure Qi was whistling through the air as they flew through the clouds, which made Lin Feng's voice hard to hear over the whistling sounds.

“Lin Feng, approximately every hundred years, the fire wolves emerged from the depths of the earth. These wolves were born in a sea of fire and when they are unleashed into the desert, they started a massacre and moved to attack Tianya Haige.”

With the powerful wind hitting her face, it was difficult for Nuo Na to form a sentence. She then added: “Those fire wolves were able to use illusions, the leaders of the Wolves of the Desert are actually all fire wolves that disguised themselves as humans. Since the wolves have already started to emerge, and didn't immediately

attack, it means that they have developed a larger strategy over the past hundred years.”

“So you are telling me that since the wolf king was a fire wolf, it means that there is an army of fire wolves that have been plotting underground? They were not attacking the humans previously because they were preparing something on a larger scale?”

When Lin Feng heard Nuo Na’s explanation, he remained silent for a moment and then continued to question her. He was surprised. The fire wolves came from the depths of the earth... It seemed like the fire Qi that Meng Qing and Lin Feng had sensed wasn’t an illusion.

“Indeed, they were preparing a large-scale strategy, but because they identified them and because the wolves they were using for the plan were killed by you, they will attack while they still have the element of surprise.” Said Nuo Na while nodding. Her hair was messily fluttering through the wind, her forehead was wrinkled and her eyes filled with dread.

An army of fire wolves would soon emerge.

“Fire wolves...” Whispered Lin Feng. He gazed into the distance and saw countless fire wolves emerging from the sand. The wolves varied in size, some were large and other were small, some only had a single tail while others had numerous tails.

“It’s really happening...”

Nuo Na was stupefied and continued: “Lin Feng, we need to hurry, we have to take shelter in Tianya Haige as soon as possible! Each time the wolves emerge, some monstrously strong fire wolves will be leading them. It’s terrifying! The wolves will continue to emerge until the desert is filled with a sea of wolves, and then they will begin their attacks on Tianya Haige.”

“How far is Tianya Haige from here?” Asked Lin Feng.

“About five hundred kilometres.” Replied Nuo Na which shocked Lin Feng. Another five hundred kilometres?!

“It seems like we are going to have to fight with the army of fire wolves.” Said Lin Feng while smiling wryly. Five hundred kilometres... Meng Qing and Lin Feng couldn’t possibly carry Nuo Na over such a long distance. First, they would consume too much pure Qi attempting it, and second they weren’t able to cover that distance, especially while carrying another person.

“Nuo Na, we have broken through to the Xuan Qi layer, but we cannot continuously fly, we need to use pure Qi in order for us to fly. Only cultivators of the Tian Qi layer are able to fly freely through the sky.” Said Lin Feng, then continued: “I have a large number of purity stones but it’s possible that it won’t be enough to reach Tianya Haige...”

Nuo Na was speechless, so would they have to fight against the wolves?

“Don’t worry, Nuo Na. With Meng Qing and me here, a few fire

wolves won't be much of a problem." Said Lin Feng while smiling. His voice sounded comforting and he was attempting to lighten Nuo Na's mood. But Lin Feng's mind was still reeling, he was shocked that there was a beast swarm which could emerge from underground.

Chapter 457: Crystal

Lin Feng, Meng Qing and Nuo Na were still floating amongst the clouds and looking across the boundless desert. More and more fire wolves emerged from the ground, they were looking for humans to satisfy their bloodlust.

Nuo Na looked exhausted and desperate. She had encountered another catastrophe. It was the worst catastrophe that could happen to all the tribes living outside Tianya Haige, it would be a one-sided slaughter.

Lin Feng looked expressionless but his heart felt heavy. He had tempered his heart through killing, but he wasn't emotionless. Because he had lived through so many massacres already, he was accustomed to people dying. He didn't have the powers of a god. Lin Feng wasn't able to directly oppose fate and save everybody. If he tried, death would come quickly. On the path of cultivation, he had to remain determined and clear headed, he couldn't let his heart be swayed by the cruelty of fate.

On the ground, there was a group of fire wolves that seemed to notice them flying in the sky, which caused the wolves to howl aggressively.

“I can see some of fire wolves transforming into humans!” At that moment, Nuo Na couldn't believe her eyes. She had just noticed an extremely strong fire wolf transforming into a human. Seeing it in person caused her mind to race.

“It’s over.” Nuo Na’s face turned deathly pale. She had never encountered a fire wolf outbreak and she was just noticing how terrible it was going to be.

“What’s wrong Nuo Na!?” Asked Lin Feng.

“Quickly! First they are going to take control of the outer desert! When they’re done with that, they will try and infiltrate Tianya Haige before they begin their attack! Those wolves can transform into the shape of humans after all....!” Said Nuo Na in a low voice. Even though her voice was low, Meng Qing and Lin Feng clearly understood her meaning, leaving them slightly shocked.

“Nuo Na, you mean that Tianya Haige will block entry to everyone attempting to enter the city?”

At that moment, the fire wolves that were emerging in the desert could transform into humans, would the people of Tianya Haige foolishly accept people into the city before an attack? How would they know if the people they accepted were wolves or not?

“The people of Tianya Haige are extremely powerful. The people who do not belong to the city are thrown into the desert to be the first wave against the wolves. When the wolves attack, the first to be killed are always the tribes of the desert.” Whispered Nuo Na. “The people inside the city disdain the tribes that live in the desert. Now the wolves are emerging to attack, they will not let anyone into the city, even though we will all die.”

Lin Feng was surprised. Nuo Na was right, there was no way they

would ever let them into the city...

“Maybe I’m thinking too much.” Suddenly said Nuo Na while smiling and trying to console herself.

The three of them were still flying through the sky as they discussed. Lin Feng’s quickly retrieved some purity stones, he started to absorb the Qi from the purity stone to increase their speed.

After some time, Lin Feng looked at Meng Qing to his left and said: “Meng Qing, we need to find a safe place to land.”

At that moment, Lin Feng was well aware that while flying, he was burning his Qi much faster than his body could replenish it. His head had started to grow dizzy and his vision had started to blur. Meng Qing would probably be feeling the same.

“Alright.” Meng Qing slightly nodded and they immediately found a safe place for their group to land.

Lin Feng’s senses were growing dull, he then added: “We have to hurry. If we waste time, it will become more dangerous for us. We have to travel by foot the rest of the journey to Tianya Haige.”

Meng Qing and Nuo Na obviously wouldn’t argue. Even though it was dangerous to be on the ground, they had to keep moving. Lin Feng was at the front of the group, clearing a path for the two people behind him.

Even though running at top speed also required him to use pure Qi, it used a great deal less than flying through the sky. When flying they had to use Qi to directly oppose gravity, in comparison, running didn't require much pure Qi at all. It was much easier for the group to travel by land.

“Aaawwwooooo! The howls of the wolves filled the air in every direction. Lin Feng was confronted with two fire wolves that were directly in their path. Even though the fire was burning around their bodies, that fire wasn't comparable the wolf king. Their bodies were much smaller in comparison to the other wolves as well, they were probably only fire wolves at the Ling level.

“Get lost.” Shouted Lin Feng. While releasing a pure Qi which shot from Lin Feng's mouth with his words and crashed into the two fire wolves. They cried out painfully, as their bodies burst apart and transformed into flames which penetrated back into the ground.

“Those fire wolves were not beasts of flesh and blood, they were born from fire... what could cause fire to take the form of a beast?” Thought Lin Feng. He was visibly shocked, when he attacked those two wolves, their bodies became fire which then shot back into the ground, their bodies had completely disappeared.

“Next time, I should pay closer attention.” Thought Lin Feng. As they continued to run forward, Lin Feng could sense the powerful fire Qi of the wolves around him, he didn't try avoid the fire wolves and instead, he immediately ran to fight them.

“Xuan level fire wolves!”

Lin Feng sensed the Qi coming from the direction of the fire wolf, it was definitely a Xuan level fire wolf, when it came into vision, it had one tail.

Lin Feng, without the slightest degree of hesitation, released a terrifying deadly energy which made the fire wolf retreat. It could sense that the energy was extremely dangerous!

Lin Feng didn't stop there, he continued to shoot forward using the power of the wind. He immediately arrived next to the fire wolf, and his sword slashed down on the wolf. In the blink of an eye, Lin Feng killed the wolf.

A terrifying Qi burst into the air. Lin Feng stared at the body and noticed as it started to disperse. The body transformed into fire and smoke, however, Lin Feng saw something strange. Inside the flames, there was a beautiful red crystal, when the crystal touched the ground, it disappeared just like the flames.

“What was that? Was it something valuable?” Lin Feng, was greatly shocked. That crystal seemed like it contained the power of the fire wolf, it contained an immense fire Qi.

“If it really contained the fire Qi of the wolf....” Lin Feng's eyes lit up. He looked at Meng Qing and Nuo Na who were still closely following behind him and he dashed forwards. This time, he was directly searching for more fire wolves.

They soon encountered another Xuan level fire wolf with one tail, Lin Feng quickly killed the wolf. This time, Lin Feng was testing a theory, after killing the beast, his silhouette flickered and he immediately grabbed the red crystal that appeared inside the flames. Lin Feng's body was surrounded by raging flames which began to transform into a small black lotus.

Lin Feng slowly moved the red crystal closer to the black lotus. In a flash, the black lotus absorbed the crystal and the fire Qi inside.

Lin Feng had a huge smile on his face. The black lotus in his hand started to transform back into sun Qi which surrounded Lin Feng's body in the form of raging flames.

“Pure sun Qi... It worked just as I expected.” Thought Lin Feng with a delighted expression. His gamble had paid off, those red crystals were fire crystals and they were the core of the fire wolves, which contained all of their fire Qi. Besides, Lin Feng's grim fire black lotus was able to absorb and process every kind of fire. It was able to transform the fire Qi from the crystals into grim fire and then transform that grim fire back into sun Qi. This would allow Lin Feng's Cosmos-Burning Sun skill to grow more powerful.

Lin Feng wanted his Cosmos-Burning Sun skill to continuously advance, he wanted it to advance into a true sun skill, his sun Qi would also grow stronger as he advanced. It was a symbiotic relationship, as his sun Qi grew stronger, the skills would advance to higher levels and as the skill advanced the sun Qi grew stronger. The sun Qi and the Cosmos-Burning Sun skill benefitted as the other grew stronger.

Lin Feng continued walking forwards. He had an idea, he wanted to stay in the desert and kill more fire wolves and collect their crystals, he could use this as an opportunity to enhance his sun Qi.

But Lin Feng wouldn't do that with Meng Qing by his side, it was too dangerous, she didn't need to brave such a dangerous situation.

He kept moving forwards, while still paying attention to the wolves surrounding them. They made sure to avoid the more powerful fire wolves... And Lin Feng would kill the weaker ones with a single sword strike. As long as the wolves' hadn't reached a level three Xuan beast, they wouldn't have the ability to defend against Lin Feng's sword. Sometimes, they would encounter groups of fire wolves, but Lin Feng would kill them all in the blink of an eye, he was like a meteor shooting through the sky.

Lin Feng continued to absorb the crystals he gathered without hesitation.

After some time, Lin Feng had already absorbed several dozen fire crystals. He could clearly sense that his sun Qi was growing more intense and the flames grew more powerful. His sword skills which used sun Qi and his black lotus' power were advancing to higher levels. Lin Feng was impatient to increase his power.

Chapter 458: The Myriad of Black Lotuses

Lin Feng and his group were still running at full speed, leaving only a cloud of dust in their wake. In the distance, there was a gigantic gate entered their vision. They were almost at Tianya Haige.

“We are almost there.” Whispered Nuo Na. The journey had been extremely tiring yet enriching as well. Lin Feng’s battles had given her countless insights and advancements on her path of cultivation. The strongest cultivators that Nuo Na had ever encountered in the past were at the Ling Qi layer, including her father, but Lin Feng was fearlessly fighting against Xuan level fire wolves as they ran.

It was no longer the ferocious beasts that were killing humans, it was Lin Feng who was killing ferocious beasts. On top of that, Lin Feng would absorb the fire crystals that acted as their core after each battle, Nuo Na had never thought things like absorbing an opponent’s Qi were possible.

Nuo Na sighed. Strong cultivators had many abilities and were able to do whatever they wished. If she had been extremely strong, she could also fight against those fire wolves and receive benefits.

Unfortunately, the strongest cultivators were from the city of Tianya Haige. Only if the wolf king chose to attack the city, would they emerge to fight, otherwise, they would not take action. They would let the tribes of the desert be devoured by the fire wolves. That was the cruel reality of the world, people were only able to protect themselves, they weren’t able to protect everyone. They

were by no means saints and would not sacrifice themselves to save the desert tribes.

“Aawwooooo..... Aawwooooo.....” Wolves were howling from every direction which caused Lin Feng to frown and narrow his eyes. There was a cold light in his eyes.

“It’s a wolf pack.” Whispered Lin Feng. This pack of fire wolves had gathered near Tianya Haige, they were waiting to enter the city and slaughter the people, therefore they began gathering outside the city. They were all staring at the city, waiting for their army to gather, then they would begin their siege.

“Aawwooooo...” The unceasing howls of the wolves were painful to people’s ears. It seemed like they were calling out for all the wolves to gather. Every wolf was howling together. When the people heard the howls, a chill invaded their hearts. Those wolves were all howling at the sky, it was terrifying.

“A wolf pack!” Nuo Na’s face turned deathly pale. Tianya Haige was surrounded by wolves... This wolf pack would be more like an army, there were no words to describe her fear.

A wolf pack wasn’t the same as a few wolves, they would all work together and none of them feared death, just like the group from the Wolves of the Desert that fought against Lin Feng. Even if they knew that they would die by Lin Feng’s hands, they would still fearlessly lunge towards him as a pack.

The more wolves there were, the more terrifying the pack

became, as their numbers grew, so did their fearlessness. Besides, in each wolf pack, there was always a leader which was much stronger than the rest of the wolves.

As Lin Feng and the others approached Tianya Haige, they noticed that the desert became flat, but because it was flat, Lin Feng's group could clearly see the wolves that were gathering. A myriad of ominous eyes all looked hungrily towards their group.

But Lin Feng continued to run forward, he didn't stop even for an instance, he too was fearless, it was as if the wolves were invisible to him.

"Meng Qing, take Nuo Na to the city! I will open a path!" Said Lin Feng. Meng Qing slightly nodded, they couldn't afford to waste time.

"Die!" Shouted Lin Feng while releasing a terrifying deadly energy. Lin Feng charged forward with an incredible speed, he looked like he had gone berserk.

"Aaawwwooo....." When that wolf pack saw a human charging towards them, they couldn't help but grow even more ferocious. A countless amount of sharp claws made their way through the air as they slashed towards him.

Suddenly, Lin Feng slammed his feet down and jumped into the air, leaving a large crater where his feet had been.

Pure sun Qi was released as flames started to engulf his body. The sun was shining down onto his flaming figure as a dazzling light shone around him.

“Lacerate!” Shouted Lin Feng in a deep voice. Inside that dazzling light, Lin Feng’s figure had disappeared, only his sword was in sight, a scorching sword.

“GGGGRRRR!” The wolves started to growl aggressively towards the sky. Many of them even threw themselves towards Lin Feng. They wanted to kill Lin Feng but under the pressure that was released from his body, the wolves felt like they were going to be ripped to shreds. Lin Feng’s sword and energy had frightened a number of the wolves.

Lin Feng’s sword descended from the sky, it seemed like the entire sun had been condensed inside that sword which sliced through the wolves in its path. It seemed like the sun had fallen from the sky and was crashing down towards the wolves.

“Boom!”

“Awooooooooooooo.....” The howling from the wolves sounded like the wailing from ghosts. A myriad of wolves had been lacerated by Lin Feng’s sword and a crevice had been cut deep into the ground. The crevice was so wide and deep that a great number of the weaker wolves fell into the abyss.

“Let’s go!” Said Lin Feng in a low voice. Meng Qing reacted very quickly and ran forward, she jumped through the air like a graceful

goddess. Even in a situation where their lives were on the line, Meng Qing still had a graceful aura.

Lin Feng jumped through the air and appeared in front of Meng Qing. His sword condensed in his hand, and the wolves started to back away, which enabled Lin Feng to open a path to the city. Meng Qing dragged Nuo Na behind her as she ran from the wolves.

“Aaawwwooooooo.....!” Terrifying howls filled the air. The wolves wanted to chase them but Lin Feng quickly turned and stopped in the air with a dangerous light in his eyes. His eyes were ice-cold and emotionless as he glared at the wolf pack.

Lin Feng started to release his grim fire, in front of Lin Feng a black lotus was forming.

That black lotus was filled with powerful grim fire which was condensed into the form of a lotus, its power was terrifying.

Those wolves could sense the power fluctuations coming from the black lotus as it formed. They quickly stopped chasing Meng Qing and Nuo Na, they were all watching Lin Feng and at his black lotus.

Lin Feng was also looking at that wolf pack. Across the vast desert, he was able to see the flames coming from the gathered wolves, there were countless wolves gathered outside the city, each cluster had around a thousand wolves. Lin Feng's eyes had turned black and he slowly closed his eyes. He then released a number of surplus souls which merged with his black lotus.

It caused the black lotus grow much larger and more powerful with each soul. As the lotus grew, the powerful deadly energy started to run rampant and invade the atmosphere.

“Break!” Said Lin Feng. In a flash, the black lotus split apart and formed into a myriad of black lotuses. After the large black lotus split into the smaller lotuses, their power once again grew calm, if a single black lotus contained too much power, Lin Feng would have trouble controlling it. The lotuses then split again into small black lotuses.

The sky was filled with countless small black lotuses, the power of a single black lotus was more powerful than these wolves.

Lin Feng’s eyes were still closed. His complexion looked pale and his brow had formed into a frown, however, his face looked more determined than ever.

His lips trembled as Lin Feng started to speak.

“Annihilation!” Shouted Lin Feng. His terrifying deadly energy filled the air, it seemed like the black lotuses were an army unleashing their battle cry, they immediately charged towards the wolves.

The howls of the wolves were still unceasing. They threw themselves towards the black lotuses, some of them even tried to swallow a black lotus whole, but after swallowing them, a monstrous black fire would disintegrate their bodies. Very quickly,

the red sea of howling fire wolves had turned into a black sea filled with shrieks of agony.

Over a thousand fire wolves had been burnt to ashes, it seemed like the black flames wanted to burn the entire desert. Luckily, nobody noticed it, otherwise they would have been terrified.

Lin Feng was deathly pale and sweat was dripping from his brow. He looked completely exhausted.

Lin Feng gnashed his teeth, his senses were extremely acute to his surroundings.

“Show yourself!” Shouted Lin Feng evilly. Several black lotuses were floating around Lin Feng. Each of these lotuses contained more power than the smaller ones used a moment before.

“Go!” Shouted Lin Feng in a deep voice. The black lotuses condensed together and rushed through the air towards their target.

Chapter 459: Flames!

Lin Feng was still killing his way through the group of fire wolves while Meng Qing and Nuo Na were rushing towards Tianya Haige.

But at that moment, the gate was closed and showed no signs of movement. Besides, at the top of the gate, there were a great number of people. They were all from Tianya Haige. Since the wolves had emerged, the strongest cultivators of the city would gather at the city walls in preparation to defend against the wolves.

There were also a number of talented young people on the walls. They were all particularly excited to show everyone their capabilities, at the same time, it would serve as vital battle experience for them.

When they saw Meng Qing and Nuo Na beneath the gate, they all looked at them with cold and detached gazes. They didn't say a word, they just calmly watched the pair.

“Gentlemen, I am Nuo Na from the desert tribes, this is my friend, Meng Qing. I hope that you will allow us to enter the city.” Said Nuo Na to those people but they remained silent. They were still looking at them with the same cold and detached glares.

The atmosphere filled with an oppressive silence which made Nuo Na's face grow pale. It seemed like she had guessed right, entering the city was impossible.

“I beg you to let us into the city.” Said Nuo Na pitifully. She started to kowtow when she saw that they were unmoved. She had started begging them.

“The people from the tribes are all weak, how would you possibly make it through that sea of wolves to reach the city?” Said one of them in a cold tone. They didn’t believe that these two were human which made Nuo Na even more desperate.

“Gentlemen, please, you must believe us.” Said Nuo Na again, she was trying her best to convince them. Lin Feng was still fighting against the fire wolves, if they didn’t enter the city soon, they would be surrounded and killed by the wolves. No matter what, they had to enter the city.

“How could we believe such a thing?” Said someone in a mocking tone. Nuo Na turned her head and saw a young man leaning against a wall. In his hand, there was an arched saber. He was looking at Nuo Na and Meng Qing with an evil and ferocious gaze.

The two women looked very attractive, especially the one with the fine veil covering her face.

“Fire wolves can take the form of humans, but they are still beasts, you should take off all your clothes and show everybody that you are really human, that’s the only way for us to verify your humanity. Then we will open the gates for you.” Said the young man with an evil tone. In a flash, everybody started laughing.

“Sir Que Yue is right. Take off your clothes and we’ll be able to

verify your humanity. If you are able to meet our requirements, we will open the gates to the city.” Added someone else.

“Indeed, we’re all watching, hurry up and remove your clothes.” Jeered one person after the other which stupefied Nuo Na. Besides, Meng Qing had already started releasing her ice energy.

The people of Tianya Haige were all extremely strong cultivators, and the weak were always the prey of the strong. Even on the streets, a murder could happen at any time. If someone didn’t have the power to protect themselves, no matter if it was for a precious item or a love interest, they would lose their life because of it. Nuo Na was well aware of that.

Tianya Haige was a desert city ruled by strong cultivators from the desert, it was a city where the laws of the jungle reigned supreme. The city was savage and lawless, the streets were filled with robbery and death. Those who didn’t have a powerful background, those who didn’t have enough strength, would be forced out of the city. Only the strong could survive inside this city.

The cultivators on the walls were shocked when they sensed Meng Qing’s ice energy.

“Hmm... That woman seems good, she looks tasty. I want to verify her identity in my private chambers.” Said Sir Que Yue while standing up. As he spoke, everybody burst into laughter.

“Die!” A terrifying ice energy burst into the air. Meng Qing’s

silhouette flickered and she shot towards the wall, she threw herself towards Sir Que Yue.

When Nuo Na saw that Meng Qing was attacking the people from Tianya Haige, her face turned even paler, there was no longer any chance of them entering the city.

Nuo Na turned her head and saw a group of wolves in the distance. There were countless sand clouds filling the air, Nuo Na noticed a silhouette in one of the sand clouds, it was Lin Feng.

When Nuo Na saw Lin Feng, she started to regain her confidence, she had an absolute faith in Lin Feng.

“Huh?” The crowd suddenly noticed a powerful Qi moving towards them. They raised their heads and looked into the distance. Immediately, they saw Lin Feng who had a cloud of sand trailing behind him.

“BOOM!”

A sand cloud rose into the air as Lin Feng jumped into the air, shooting directly towards Sir Que Yue.

“Stop!” A figure shot into the air, that person was attempting to stop Lin Feng.

At that moment, a terrifying deadly energy filled the sky. It was astonishing.

The person who had just jumped into the air was confronted by the terrifying deadly energy, he quickly regretted his decision. He wished he had never gotten involved.

“Die!” The deadly energy whistled through the air, the person looked terrified and his eyes filled with endless regret. His body was enveloped by the deadly energy which made his heart leap from his chest. A powerful sword Qi rapidly shot through the air, the people on the walls were terrified, the sword was so fast that none of them felt they were able to stop it.

“Pssssshhh...” At that moment, the person’s body was sliced in two halves as blood rained down from the sky.

Who was that young man?! How brutal, how violent! He didn’t understand the meaning of mercy.

In Tianya Haige, there was no law, the weak could only suffer at the hands of the strong. Everybody in the city enjoyed picking on those weaker than themselves and the weakest of them could only suffer the abuse in silence. When Meng Qing and Nuo Na arrived, Nuo Na had begged which amused the people on the walls. They mocked them, and they disregarded them as weak. However, when Lin Feng arrived, he didn’t waste any words before ruthlessly killing, which left them speechless. Nobody was making jokes anymore, they were terrified.

This was the cruel law of the jungle where strength and ruthlessness were king.

“Boom!” A gigantic collision sound spread through the air. Meng Qing and Sir Que Yue’s power collided and they were both propelled backwards, however, Lin Feng immediately caught Meng Qing and placed her onto the ground.

“Are you alright?” Asked Lin Feng to Meng Qing. Meng Qing nodded, but she still looked ice-cold.

“Leave it to me.” Said Lin Feng indifferently. He turned his head and looked at the people on the walls. He rose into the air and released a terrifying deadly energy.

When the crowd saw Lin Feng’s eyes, they all felt a shiver run down their spine. Those eyes were so cold, these were the eyes of a killer.

It seemed like the girl they had just humiliated was his woman.

Lin Feng turned his head and looked towards Sir Que Yue which left him stupefied. He also stared at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng condensed a sword in his hand, the edges of the sword were engulfed by a terrifying black flame.

Lin Feng’s entire body was covered in terrifying black flames. His grim fire seemed like it was able to burn the world to ashes.

Sir Que Yue looked respectful when facing Lin Feng. He unsheathed his arched saber which diffused a desolate light, it looked like a crescent moon which could illuminate the earth.

Lin Feng charged forward without a word, his deadly energy would do the talking.

His energy was growing more powerful with each movement and his sword grew more dazzling. The crowd was hypnotized by the terrifying black flames which surrounded his body. As the sun shone upon Lin Feng's body, it surprisingly increased Lin Feng's power.

Lin Feng rushed forward, he had condensed all of his energy into grim fire, there were only the black flames remaining.

“BOOM!” Lin Feng's black flames grew wilder as they increased in power. Everybody's heart was on edge.

“What happened?!”

“He just broke through to the next layer!”

Everyone was speechless. Lin Feng's had turned all of his energy into grim fire which engulfed his body in flames, the sun that was shining on his body transformed into Qi which caused his flames to continuously grow stronger, but he unexpectedly used this to break through the barrier into the next Xuan Qi layer.

“How terrifying!”

“He broke through to the next cultivation layer while fighting!”

Lin Feng had to fight so many intense battles that he didn't have time to quietly cultivate to the next Xuan Qi layer. So he broke through in the middle of a fight, causing his strength to surge! The situation was becoming extremely dangerous for Sir Que Yue!

Chapter 460: Death On the City Walls!

When Sir Que Yue saw Lin Feng breaking through to the next cultivation layer, his heart felt heavy. Lin Feng was a terrifying individual. If he had known that Meng Qing and Nuo Na were accompanied by such a tyrannical young man, he wouldn't have acted so aggressively towards them. There was no going back for him. He had already made Lin Feng his enemy. He had no choice, if he didn't fight, Lin Feng would still kill him.

Lin Feng didn't feel anything strange after breaking through to the third Xuan Qi layer. He had gone through so many battles, all of those battles were fought with all of his strength. He had gained insights regarding Qi and the use of energy when he was reunited with his father. On top of that, he had also absorbed a large number of fire crystals, breaking through to the third Xuan Qi layer was only a matter of time, where the water overflows, a channel will form!

Lin Feng's Qi and soul had already been strengthened beyond the third Xuan Qi layer. At that moment, when he broke through to the third Xuan Qi layer, he didn't feel tired at all, his cultivation was already stable.

The black flames surrounding his body were becoming more and more dazzling. When the crowd on the walls of the city sensed his energy, they were even more terrified.

The scariest part was that Lin Feng's sword didn't only contain a scorching sun Qi, it also contained a terrifying, deadly Qi. That sword had the power to annihilate everything, wherever that

sword was directed, the only destruction would follow.

Lin Feng's energy was whistling through the air as it moved towards the top of the city gate. Many of the people that were near Sir Que Yue started to move away to avoid getting involved. They didn't dare get close to Lin Feng's sword, if that sword reached them, it would be the end of them.

Sir Que Yue looked serious and solemn. He was fixedly staring at Lin Feng; he was starting to feel the pressure. When facing a powerful cultivator, a single mistake would be fatal. Lin Feng was very powerful, so Sir Que Yue didn't dare to act carelessly, he knew he had to use his full strength.

Sir Que Yue's facial expression was calm but also desolate and dreary like a crescent moon. An arch-shaped saber spirit was released behind him.

Sabers were Sir Que Yue's specialty. He was extremely well known within the city. Every time he used his saber, people would tremble and run cold with fear.

However, at that moment, his dreary and desolate saber looked pale in comparison with Lin Feng's scorching sword, it was like comparing the moon to the sun; his saber looked insignificant in comparison.

"I, Que Yue, have been practicing saber cultivation for fifteen years, people at the same level wouldn't dream of attacking me, those who do inevitably die." Said Que Yue in an ice-cold tone. His

saber energy grew more violent and domineered with each word.

When Lin Feng heard him, his face still looked cold and expressionless.

Lin Feng took a step forward and slashed down with his sword. His terrifying, deadly energy crashed through the atmosphere towards Que Yue.

“My enemies who were at my cultivation level, they didn’t even know how they died.” Said Lin Feng indifferently. With his sword, Lin Feng could easily deal with people the same cultivation level as him, when he used his full strength, they would die in an instant.

Lin Feng’s words caused everyone to tremble. Que Yue said that people who dared to attack him died to his saber. He said that to destroy Lin Feng’s confidence and regain his own, but Lin Feng’s sentence had destroyed Que Yue’s confidence instead. Besides, Lin Feng had remained calm this entire time. His sword was able to kill people with a higher cultivation using only a single strike.

“You will be no exception.” Said Lin Feng in an ice-cold tone. The sky was filled with deadly energy which continued to grow stronger.

“Die.”

“Die, die, die....”

Lin Feng's single word "die" echoed through the atmosphere. His scorching sword was engulfed in black flames; it seemed like everything else in the world was lacking in comparison with Lin Feng's sword.

Sir Que Yue looked astonished. That sword was making him nervous; it was terrifying. He gnashed his teeth and brandished his saber. Que Yue, who had always been able to kill his opponents with ease, seemed powerless when confronting Lin Feng.

Everyone watched as Que Yue's saber Qi was consumed by Lin Feng's sword Qi. Sir Que Yue was shocked as he watched the sword descend. He regretted everything; he wanted to take everything back. His future was supposed to be filled with glory, but because he assailed Meng Qing with obscenities, nobody could save him.

A subtle sound filled the air as Lin Feng's sun sword descended and slashed Que Yue's body. His body was engulfed by black flames and disintegrated, not a single part of his body remained. Only a small amount of blood gushed into the air. This was the price for humiliating Meng Qing, which was the price for angering Lin Feng. Only deathly silence filled the air.

Lin Feng was terrifying. Just like he had said a moment before, Que Yue didn't even know how he died.

Even if Lin Feng hadn't broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer, his sword would still have been enough to kill Que Yue.

At that moment, Lin Feng coldly glanced at the crowd, which

made them shiver with fear. They didn't dare look Lin Feng in the eyes.

“Meng Qing, Nuo Na, who else was it?” Asked Lin Feng. Those who had dared to humiliate Meng Qing started shaking with fear. They were terrified.

Lin Feng was asking the girls to point out those who had humiliated them; he would kill them all.

“Him, her and him.” Said Nuo Na while pointing at three people. Those three had also humiliated them and jeered them. Of course, Nuo Na wouldn't hold back.

The people who Nuo Na had just pointed at were shaking, their hearts pounding violently. They turned their heads because they could feel Lin Feng's glaring eyes. At the same time, a terrifying, deadly energy rushed through the air towards them.

“Run!!!” They shouted loudly as they tried to escape. They immediately started running in the direction of the city, hoping to escape.

Escape?

Lin Feng remained detached. He was as swift as the wind when catching up to the closest one who was fleeing.

His sword descended. Immediately after, a horrible shriek spread

through the air. That sword had penetrated into his chest and destroyed his internal organs, his body then slowly collapsed to the ground.

“Hmph!” Lin Feng sighed. The two others had also tried to escape; Lin Feng released his purple spirit which immediately caught them with inconceivable speed.

“Crrr.. Crrr....

The two people were astonished. Purple Snakes had tightly constricted their bodies and trapped them. The purple snakes dragged them back towards Lin Feng where they met his sword, ending their lives.

One sword, two corpses, they were killed in a flash.

Lin Feng looked calm and serene. He had just killed three people without any mercy. He took a step and suddenly appeared atop the wall again; he said to Nuo Na: “Nuo Na, anyone else?”

Nuo Na glanced at them and shook her head. All the people who humiliated them and told them to take off their clothes were dead. Nuo Na wasn't going to have Lin Feng kill everybody; the main culprits were enough.

Lin Feng nodded and didn't say any more. In the distance, the wolves were still howling, and a terrifying fire Qi filled the air.

“The wolf pack has arrived!” Whispered Lin Feng. Immediately after, his silhouette flickered, and he landed next to Nuo Na. He helped Meng Qing carry Nuo Na as they flew onto the city ramparts.

Everybody had heard Lin Feng and started to gaze into the distance. They were astonished. That terrifying bestial fire Qi was quickly approaching. They had fire red eyes and were howling at the sky. Their fire wasn't like the one Lin Feng had just released. They were monstrous and bestial. Those fire wolves wanted to turn Tianya Haige into a bloodbath.

Nuo Na looked at the crowd and then looked to Lin Feng. Her heart was still racing. She had felt extremely scared this entire time. At first, she was scared that they wouldn't be able to enter the city, but at that moment she was scared of everything. She lived in a world where the strong devoured the weak, if anyone wanted to stop them from entering the city, Lin Feng would kill them. He had used his overwhelming power to barge into the city. Who would dare to block his path again?

Besides, Lin Feng had shown that he wasn't an emerged fire wolf, would a fire beast be a master of swords?

Whatever happened, strength would always be the deciding factor in the desert. If those people saw someone that was weak, even if they knew they weren't fire wolves, they would still take advantage and ridicule them. However, if someone was strong, just like Lin Feng, they didn't need to ask permission, if anyone tried to stop them from entering the city, they would immediately kill anyone who blocked the way.

If the weaker ones objected, it was the same as courting death. The stronger cultivators from the city wouldn't get involved, why would they want to create enmity with a powerful unknown cultivator?

Chapter 461: Fighting The Wolf Pack!

The fire wolves were growing nearer which started to draw more and more people's attention. They had already gotten so close, the whole pack was in view.

What seemed like an endless sea of fire wolves was madly charging across the desert. It looked like a blazing sea of fire spreading across the land. Not even a grain of sand would survive under such scorching heat. The ground was being burnt black, the wolf pack scorched the earth in their wake.

What amazed people even more was that the flames had caused smoke to rise from the scorched earth.

“How scary...” Thought the onlookers, their hearts were beating violently. That group of fire wolves was enough to shock everyone awake. A moment before, they were excited and felt high-spirited but now they had seen the wolves and they were realizing how terrifying the battle would be, this would really be a bloody battle.

That group of terrifying fire wolves destroyed everything in their path. The tribes who lived outside of the city were probably exterminated already. Nobody believed that anyone could survive against such a monstrous pack of wolves. If anything ran into this sea of wolves, they would die.

Many people were slightly shaking, they felt weak in the knees, they didn't feel like fighting against the wolves any longer, they were too scared.

Finally, the wolf pack arrived at the city walls and stopped. The people on the walls gazed into the distance and could only see an ocean of wolves. Every wolf was surrounded by flames and their tails were drifting in the wind. Everybody could feel the intense stares from the beasts outside the city walls, making them feel uneasy. At the same time, the temperature had increased drastically, the atmosphere had turned into an unbearable inferno.

At the front of the wolf pack, there was a fire wolf, its body was gigantic and it had intense flames surrounding its body. Besides, it had... Seven tails. Its seven tails were swinging in the wind. It looked majestic.

That fire wolf must be a level seven Xuan beast, it had seven tails. Its strength was the same as a cultivator of the seventh Xuan Qi layer, it's power was terrifying.

If a human being of the third or of the fourth Xuan Qi layer fought against it, it would be eaten with a single bite. Even the most superficial look at those terrifying eyes was enough to make somebody's heart pound.

“Beast!” Shouted someone in a deep voice as a tornado rose into the air. Everyone started to raise their heads and saw a silhouette in the sky.

That person was wearing black clothes and had long hair which fluttered in the wind. Even though the crowd was facing his back, they could still feel his powerful energy. If he dared to go against a

level seven Xuan beast, he was probably extremely powerful.

He wasn't the only one, whistling sounds filled the air as many people started to rush forward. Those people were all revealing their powerful Qi, they were all extraordinary cultivators. They all stood in a line, ready for battle.

“The wolves are extremely strong, this is the strongest attack in a thousand years, if we don't want them to invade Tianya Haige and exterminate all of us, we must work together!” Said the one in the black clothes which caused a surge of motivation. The strongest attack in a thousand years... It seemed like Tianya Haige was going to be soaked in blood.

Lin Feng frowned and gazed into the distance. There were thousands and thousands of wolves, he wasn't sure exactly how many. Besides, the number of wolves continued to increase. That wolf pack was growing larger by the second.

Lin Feng had arrived on the ramparts of Tianya Haige... He had rushed here with all of his power, but at that moment, they were surrounded and escape was impossible.

Trying to escape by flight would be impossible, especially if he came across an extremely powerful wolf, it would be the end of him.

After all, a level seven Xuan beast had already appeared, who could guarantee that there weren't more powerful wolves among the sea of wolves? Maybe there were some with eight or nine tails?

Or even Tian level wolves?

“Let’s watch how things progress and then decide.” Thought Lin Feng. Absorbing fire crystals enabled him to grow stronger, so this was a good opportunity for him to improve his strength.

“Die!” Shouted the one in black clothes in a dreadful voice. In a flash, he released a monstrous deadly energy and released his pure Qi.

“Boom!” The pure Qi from the one in black clothes attacked into the wolf pack slaughtering a large number of wolves in the blink of an eye. But, considering the number of wolves, it only a drop in the ocean.

The battle had begun and many people had rushed to attack at the same time. Pure Qi filled the air from all directions and shot towards the wolf pack. All of the people attacking were at the Xuan Qi layer, there wasn’t a single weak cultivator in the group. They were all slaughtering the wolves and tempering themselves in the heat of battle. Cultivating through potentially fatal situations was an excellent method to improve one’s battle potential and make advancements.

When those on the walls saw the people attacking, a sharp light filled their eyes. Everyone was fighting with all their power, they were fighting to stay alive, this was the only way for them to continue to live and continue growing stronger.

Many strong cultivators were already engaged in battle, besides,

inside the city, people were rushing over to join the battle. After all, there still weren't enough people to fight against the monstrous number of wolves.

“Meng Qing, stay here with Nuo Na and wait for me to come back.” Said Lin Feng to Meng Qing.

Meng Qing glanced at Lin Feng and nodded. Even though she didn't want him to fight against those wolves, she still understood that if Lin Feng wanted to become stronger, he would sometimes need to risk his life. The path of cultivation was filled with dangers. Meng Qing had agreed to stay with Lin Feng and accompany him no matter what the situation.

She wasn't going to prevent Lin Feng from getting stronger, she respected Lin Feng's choice. Lin Feng's goal was to become a stronger cultivator, she needed to follow and support him.

“If you need me, call out to me.” Said Lin Feng to Meng Qing who silently nodded. Immediately after, he jumped from the walls and landed in the centre of the wolf pack.

He released his powerful deadly energy and a condensed in his hands. In the blink of an eye, many wolves died underneath that sword. In the area surrounding Lin Feng, there was a large empty space.

He condensed his grim fire and an astonishing black lotus appeared. Lin Feng's black lotus was filled with a combination of sun Qi and deadly energy.

“Break!” Shouted Lin Feng in a deep voice. His black lotus then split into many small black lotuses. There were a few thousands lotus flowers which all contained a powerful deadly energy. The wolves wanted to attack Lin Feng but they were scared of the black lotus flowers.

Lin Feng closed his eyes and sat down cross-legged. He calmed his heart and allowed his surplus souls to emerge from his body which immediately merged with the black lotus flowers. When using his surplus soul’s technique, he could already release a monstrous amount of surplus souls. The surplus souls had the power to control the black lotuses.

Lin Feng was sitting down, he wasn’t fighting directly. His soul was focused entirely on controlling the black lotuses. Lin Feng had to use the entire power of his soul, otherwise he wouldn’t have the strength to control thousands of lotus flowers, he wouldn’t have the power.

However, Lin Feng was able to sit down and control the black lotuses to attack from a distance. The weakest wolves were easily exterminated under the onslaught. Besides, Lin Feng was able kill stronger wolves, while simultaneously controlling the black lotus flowers to consume the fire crystals dropped from the wolves. Thus, each of the black lotus flowers were growing more and more powerful.

Very quickly, the area around Lin Feng was cleared again. The fire wolves weren’t able to get close to him anymore, if they tried, they immediately died under the attack from the black lotus

flowers. Those black lotus flowers would penetrate into the wolves' bodies and absorb their fire crystals. Those black lotuses were the enemy of these fire wolves.

Many people had noticed Lin Feng's actions and were shocked. Lin Feng's method was actually quite suited to dealing with the fire wolves. He was sitting still and controlling thousands of black lotuses. How much of a burden would that be on his soul? In order to accomplish that, an extremely powerful soul was required.

Lin Feng didn't only draw the attention from the cultivators, the stronger wolves were also paying attention to what he was doing. A few of them started rushing towards him. Each of the wolves had four tails and some had five tails, they were all higher Xuan level fire wolves, they were terrifying. They all wanted to get rid of Lin Feng whom was a detestable thorn in their side.

Lin Feng abruptly opened his eyes and a black light started flashing through his eyes. Even though he had closed his eyes to control the black lotuses, he could distinctly perceive everything around him. Nothing would be able to distract him even though he had his eyes closed.

Many black lotuses rushed back to Lin Feng's side while emitting whistling sounds and they condensed together. Lin Feng was trying to block the wolves rushing towards him, but at that moment, a flag appeared in front of him. It was a gigantic flag that was filled with deadly energy. That flag rushed towards the wolves charging at Lin Feng and in a flash, they were consumed by that flag. It was a shocking sight.

“That’s not a flag... That’s a banner, an extremely powerful treasure.” Lin Feng was stupefied.

Chapter 462: The Memory Jade

He could still hear the wolves howling which made Lin Feng shiver. He gazed over and saw that those wolves were trapped inside the banner. Inside that banner, a group of ferocious wolves appeared, but the image was very blurry. They were struggling with all their might to escape, but no matter what, they were unable to escape.

“Annihilate.” Shouted the middle-aged man who was controlling the banner. In a flash, the wolves let out a sad shrill cry. Their bodies started to melt and formed into a pattern engraved into the banner.

The Qi of the banner grew much stronger after absorbing the wolves.

“It’s similar to my black lotus which can absorb the fire crystals from the wolves...” thought Lin Feng. He was surprised and stupefied to see a banner that could absorb ferocious beasts to grow stronger.

“Continue killing them, I will watch over you.” Said the man while smiling at Lin Feng. Lin Feng was stupefied, why would the man want to help him?

But since that person was willing, Lin Feng nodded and said: “Thank you, Sir!”

Then, Lin Feng closed his eyes again and continued controlling

the black lotuses with his soul, he was absorbing the fire crystals from each wolf he killed. Besides, when the extremely strong wolves tried to attack him, they were absorbed by the middle-aged man's banner.

The other strong cultivators were also fighting against the wolves. The most astonishing battle was between the man in a black cloak and the seven-tailed fire wolf. The cultivators and fire wolves were in a constant struggle. On the ground and in the air, swords and bestial flames were colliding. The seven-tailed wolf suddenly increased in size and was soon the size of a small hill. The fire from its seven tails also grew more terrifying. It was unimaginable.

All the other strong cultivators were engaged in a bloody battle against the fire wolves, not letting a single wolf enter the city.

“Aawwoooooo.....” After a while, the seven-tailed fire wolf howled furiously while looking to the sky. A great number of wolves suddenly stopped fighting then the seven-tailed wolf turned and started to run away. Its speed was inconceivable. In a flash, the crowd saw noticed that all of the powerful wolves had escaped.

Everyone was extremely surprised. The wolves had retreated and run away! The fire wolves still had much greater numbers than the humans defending the city, but surprisingly, they issued a retreat!

While looking at the scorched earth, it gave an unsettling feeling. What a terrifying wolf pack!

When the one with the black cloak noticed the retreat, his facial expression became ice-cold. He was staring at the seven-tailed fire wolf and frowning.

“This time, the battles will be much more terrifying and bloodier than we thought. That was just the first wave. The next wave will strike us much harder than the first.” Said the man with the black cloak indifferently as he left.

Such a monstrous wolf pack... That was only the first wave? It seemed like it was going to get tougher as time went on.

Lin Feng released his black lotuses, they transformed into sun Qi and then penetrated into his body. He opened his eyes which contained a trace of dazzling sunlight, he looked otherworldly.

“My friend, that was amazing, you’re terrific.” Said the man who had used the banner to Lin Feng while smiling.

“Your banner is also very strong.” Replied Lin Feng.

“My name is Li Shang. My banner is not bad, but it’s far from being as good as those lotus flowers. If I’m not mistaken, It seems that your attack requires a very strong soul to control multiple flowers, so your soul must be extremely strong.”

“I am Lin Feng.” Replied Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng...” Whispered Li Shang. He smiled and said: “Lin Feng,

do you know what the most important thing is for me, when using my banner?”

Lin Feng shook his head, he didn't know much about using those types of attacks.

“My banner is a spiritual banner, the most important thing is to have an extremely strong soul. You need to merge pieces of your soul into the banner making it a part of your body.” Said Li Shang, he was speaking slowly, he then continued: “You already have that black lotus which enables you to absorb the fire crystals, coupled with your powerful soul, you could easily create a fire banner. If you create a fire banner, you can imprison those beasts and absorb their fire crystals. Then you won't need to use so much soul power to control so many black lotuses.”

Lin Feng frowned and said: “Why are you telling me these things?”

“Frankly speaking, I rarely meet people who are an appropriate match with my banner skill. I want to help you create a fire banner, I want to see how powerful your banner will become.” Said Li Shang while looking overjoyed. He then added: “The banner is an amazing treasure, I look forward to making a banner with you and seeing how powerful it can become.”

Lin Feng looked perplexed and looked Li Shang directly in the eyes. Lin Feng learnt a principle in his previous life, in the world, nothing was ever free. Nobody gave anybody anything for free without expecting something in return. That banner was certainly extremely valuable, but Lin Feng's interlocutor surprisingly

wanted to teach him the skill and wanted to help him create a fire banner, Lin Feng didn't understand his motives.

But Lin Feng couldn't understand anything from looking into his interlocutor's eyes, he only saw excitement and impatience.

“If you think that I am trying to trick you, let me tell you something, even though you are strong, I am much stronger than you. Why would I need to trick you into anything?” Said Li Shang while smiling.

Lin Feng remained silent. Li Shang was right, he was much stronger than Lin Feng, but if Lin Feng used his full strength, he would be able to fight against him. Of course, that was providing that Li Shang was telling the truth and hadn't hidden his strength during the fight.

“A fire banner....” Whispered Lin Feng. He then said: “If you teach me how to create the banner, what do you want in exchange?”

“Nothing.” Said Li Shang while shaking his head.

“Alright, I accept.” Agreed Lin Feng while nodding.

“Alright, good, come with me.” Said Li Shang while smiling. He looked even more excited which made Lin Feng trust him even more. He also didn't want anything from Lin Feng. He just looked overjoyed and excited, like a child with a new toy.

But did such people really exist? Could a strong cultivator want to help someone just to satisfy his own curiosity?

Li Shang started walking towards the city centre. Lin Feng was following closely behind him, he waved at Meng Qing who immediately nodded and followed with Nuo Na.

Tianya Haige wasn't that different from a city of Xue Yue, the streets were wide and the buildings were high and lofty. Li Shang brought Lin Feng to a fortress before they came to a halt.

"Lin Feng, this is my residence. It's relatively calm, nobody will disturb us." Said Li Shang. It was indeed really different from the rest of the city, there weren't many people around. It was a calm and quiet location.

"Come." Said Li Shang while entering the fortress. There was a cold and evil Qi inside the fortress. It looked like a palace inside and was extremely well lit. There were cauldrons everywhere and a fire was burning under each of them.

Besides, in the main hall, there was a cold wind which caused Lin Feng's soul to shiver.

Lin Feng narrowed his eyes. Li Shang lived here? What a majestic place, the only problem was that strange cold wind.

"I practice a banner skill and my banner is a spiritual banner, it

requires a powerful soul to use. That's why the wind here affects the soul, it allows me to strengthen my soul, there's no need to worry about it." Explained Li Shang as if he had guessed what Lin Feng was thinking.

They then walked to the edge of the fortress. Inside the room, there was a gigantic praying mat made from woven cattail. In front of that mat, there was a large cauldron, the largest cauldron in the house.

"Lin Feng, that's how you create the banner, you need to use the power of your soul on this to learn how to create the banner." Said Li Shang while handing over a jade stone to Lin Feng.

Lin Feng took the jade and was surprised. It contained a peculiar Qi.

"It's a memory jade."

Lin Feng was stupefied. By putting his soul into it, he could absorb all the memories contained within. It was an extremely precious and valuable jade. Strong cultivators would be able to absorb the memories into their soul.

The memory jade was able to record extremely strong and powerful techniques, only extremely strong cultivators could record their memories onto a memory jade, weaker cultivators were unable to. Besides, the people who put their memories inside memory jades wouldn't waste their energy to put useless skills inside.

The instructions to create the banner were surprisingly inside the jade, as expected, it was an extremely valuable weapon. The price of that jade stone was also incredible. Surprisingly, Li Shang was handing treasure after treasure to Lin Feng without hesitation.

Lin Feng didn't understand Li Shang's motives. Was he only really just a curious type of person?

Lin Feng groaned and immediately put his soul into the jade and explored the memories inside. In a flash, Lin Feng felt like his soul was sucked into a whirlpool of consciousness, countless memories started to appear in his mind.

Chapter 463: Hostility

The banner wasn't a weapon like the others, it needed to merge with a person's soul. The strength of a cultivator's soul was one of the most essential aspects when creating the banner.

Only a cultivator with a powerful soul would be able to use a spiritual banner. If a cultivator didn't have a strong soul, the power of the banner would be limited. Besides, if the soul were too weak, it wouldn't have the power to merge with a banner.

Lin Feng digested the memories and looked at Li Shang: "In order to create a banner, I need an emptiness tree as a base."

"I have some emptiness trees." Said Li Shang calmly which stupefied Lin Feng.

Lin Feng had never seen an emptiness tree but according to the memories in the jade, the tree was able to form a separate space inside it. The emptiness trees needed to accumulate multiple age rings in order to form a separate space, only then would it be suitable for crafting. Besides, every part of the emptiness tree could be used to create all sorts of treasures related to space. It was an extremely precious tree... Yet Li Shang was calmly telling Lin Feng that he had them.

"Lin Feng, I have all the materials required to create your banner, don't worry. You just need to provide your soul; that's all. It's not difficult to learn. The hardest part is merging your soul into the banner." Said Li Shang. Lin Feng was surprised. He knew

how to use the surplus souls technique so creating a banner would be very appropriate for him. As he continued to inspect the memories, he started to feel very excited.

“I will try my hardest.” Said Lin Feng. Li Shang nodded and said: “Let’s not waste time. Let’s start creating your banner. What you need to decide on now is, do you want to create a fire banner or a different type of banner? With your powerful soul, you will be able to choose what best suits you; there will be no problem for you to merge with it.”

“I want to create a fire banner.” Said Lin Feng without hesitation. Li Shang nodded without commenting.

He slightly moved and a number of items appeared in front of Lin Feng. Amongst those things, there was a red tree, the tree was surrounded by a space Qi, it was an emptiness tree.

That emptiness tree was very small, about one meter high. However, Li Shang made a small movement and the tree suddenly started to grow several times larger. Very quickly, it had transformed into a huge red tree which reached the ceiling of the fortress.

“How mysterious.” Thought Lin Feng, he was stupefied. That emptiness tree was useful when creating space treasures or dimensions, even after being uprooted, it still contained such powerful space energy.

“Do you want to make it or should I?” Asked Li Shang to Lin Feng

who was staring at the gigantic emptiness tree.

“I will do it.”

Lin Feng moved and in a flash, a gigantic fire started burning all over his body. It was filled with a scorching hot sun Qi.

“Ignite.” Shouted Lin Feng in a deep voice. His Sun Qi moved through the air towards the emptiness tree. Immediately, it engulfed its roots, then climbed the trunk and spread across the branches until it reached the tree’s peak. Very quickly, the tree was ablaze with scorching hot sun flames.

However, there were no signs of a raging inferno from the tree, there were no huge flames, the flames were tiny, it seemed more like a small ember. Only the sound of the rampaging flames allowed Lin Feng know that the tree was burning.

That tree was ablaze and emitting a scorching heat, despite the lack of flames, it was very intriguing to witness.

As the tree was burning, Lin Feng released his powerful surplus souls which started to penetrate into the emptiness tree.

Li Shang was just observing Lin Feng as he was working on the banner. He was extremely surprised; Lin Feng was extremely skilled when controlling the intricate fire and the power of his soul, he was outstanding. He must have studied the art of fabricating weapons in the past; this couldn’t possibly be his first

time.

It would obviously be beneficial for Lin Feng to have fabricated weapons in the past when creating his banner...

Besides, fabricating a banner wasn't a difficult task. The hardest part was the merging of one's soul into the banner.

Time passed slowly, half a day soon passed by, but Lin Feng and Li Shang were still in the same place and hadn't moved the entire time.

Besides, apart from the wind blowing through the fortress, there was also a scorching hot Qi moving through the halls. The entire fortress was filled with an intense heat.

In the depths of the fortress, Lin Feng and Li Shang haven't moved an inch. At that moment, Lin Feng's eyes were closed and he intensely focused on his task. Besides, his face was starting to grow pale.

It was the most crucial moment in the fabrication of the banner. The emptiness tree in front of Lin Feng had already transformed into something which almost looked like the spiritual banner, but was still extremely large.

"Flames!" Shouted Lin Feng in a deep voice. In a flash, a terrifying sea of flames emerged from his body and rushed through the air. It immediately rushed towards the tree, the banner was

still in its embryonic form.

“Bzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzz.....” A buzzing sound spread in the air. The banner was surrounded by flames, but the flames didn’t look like they would burn the banner. Instead, it formed a small crack in the middle of the banner.

“Emptiness tree... That small crack is the separate space, it contains the power of fire and space, it’s so difficult to pierce into it.” Whispered Lin Feng. Immediately after, he moved, and his soul started to move towards the banner.

It seemed like there was an army of small souls twining around the fire and using it to penetrate into the small crack.

A subtle cracking sound filled the air, and it seemed like the separate space was going to fracture. The myriad of surplus souls and the sea of flames penetrated into the banner. There were no more flames around the banner at all, but the fire Qi it had started to emit was scorching hot. There were no flames, but the fire Qi was monstrous.

“Soul Sacrifice!” Shouted Lin Feng. His face instantly turned deathly pale. The banner started shaking and immediately after, it started to shrink. It was now the size of a regular banner, and it seemed like a gentle breeze might blow it away. However, the banner suddenly unleashed an incredible fire Qi in retaliation.

“Fusion!” Lin Feng gnashed his teeth as the flames continued to fill the air. The banner was circling through the air as if it was

caught in a hurricane.

“Done.” Lin Feng’s face was deathly pale, but he looked delighted. He had the feeling that he now had another arm. He could feel the banner as if it was part of his own body. It was the first time that Lin Feng had merged his soul with a weapon; it felt like he could move it as freely as he did his arms or legs.

Li Shang had given him the memory jade, and the instructions to create the banner.

Lin Feng stretched his arm and the banner shrunk to the size of his palm. It was miraculous.

“Emptiness trees are extremely mysterious.” Thought Lin Feng while putting his banner away. He turned to Li Shang and smiled.

“Lin Feng, you’re good at fabricating weapons. When facing the wolves, you will no longer need to exhaust so much energy. You only need to absorb them into your banner.”

Lin Feng nodded, but he felt a bit strange, why did Li Shang help him to such an extent?

“If it weren’t for you, I wouldn’t have managed to create this banner, thank you very much. If you need anything, just ask, and I will gladly return your kindness.”

Li Shang looked particularly excited and said: “Alright, can you

give me the method you used to give your soul such magic powers, then I will also take your ring with the Na stone, I want everything that is inside. I want all those things in exchange for the banner. It's because I helped you create the banner."

"Huh?" Lin Feng was astonished. Li Shang wanted the surplus soul's technique and everything that Lin Feng possessed in exchange for the banner?! Even though the banner weapon was valuable, Lin Feng's surplus souls technique was much more valuable!

It seemed like Li Shang knew that Lin Feng was practicing a soul technique.

"Are you not asking for too much?" Asked Lin Feng without losing his temper, he remained calm.

Li Shang shook his head and said in an indifferent tone: "I'm not a greedy person. I didn't absorb your soul; that's what a greedy person would do. Besides, I gave you all the materials and instructions to create your banner, I've been extremely nice."

Lin Feng just sat there and said nothing while looking at Li Shang.

Li Shang was also silently looking at Lin Feng with a cold look.

"Boom!" A monstrous deadly energy filled the air, and Lin Feng's silhouette suddenly rose into the air.

Lin Feng raised his hand, and a sword started condensed which illuminated the entire room. It then moved straight towards Li Shang.

“Hmph.” Li Shang groaned coldly. He raised his hand and an evil wind emerged from the palm of his hand. It contained a powerful evil energy. It seemed like a million ghosts were trapped inside his palm.

A rumbling sound spread through the air as the powers collided. Lin Feng wasted no time and was already flying through the air towards the exit. In a flash, he had disappeared from sight.

Li Shang’s cold expression suddenly changed into that of a large grin and he looked like he had gone insane with excitement. He rushed towards the exit while flying on the evil wind.

Chapter 464: Insane Laughter!

Lin Feng came out of the fortress and glanced around, he immediately noticed Meng Qing and Nuo Na.

“Meng Qing, we are leaving. Let’s go!” Shouted Lin Feng which stupefied Meng Qing. Immediately after, Meng Qing glanced to Nuo Na then flew into the air following behind Lin Feng.

A hurricane of cold air rushed out from the fortress. Li Shang looked even more excited than before and he was watching Lin Feng with a huge grin on his face. His wind swirled around his body and rushed through the air, carrying him towards Lin Feng.

On the ground, Nuo Na was astonished, she was fixedly staring at the silhouettes disappearing on the horizon.

Immediately after, Nuo Na’s face turned red, she felt both hopeless and desperate. She understood Lin Feng’s intentions, he only called out for Meng Qing to leave with him which meant he wasn’t going to take Nuo Na with him. Lin Feng was leaving her behind, because she was too weak and would only be a burden. If Lin Feng and Meng Qing had to take Nuo Na with them, they would have no chance of escaping. They had the choice of staying to fight Li Shang or leaving her behind, they chose to leave her.

“I hope we meet again!” Said Nuo Na who was profoundly surprised. She hadn’t thought that they would be separated so suddenly. Her father was dead, her tribe had been annihilated and Lin Feng was now abandoning her, it seemed like she was all alone.

But immediately, she smiled. Even though there were tears in her eyes, her smile was resplendent.

Even if she ended up alone, she lucky to be alive!

In the sky, the three silhouettes were rushing through the city. Lin Feng and Meng Qing were flying in the front. They were clearly trying to escape. However, Li Shang was following behind them while maintaining the same distance, neither catching them and not falling behind.

Lin Feng's facial expression was cold. He released his deadly energy, but he was very clear on how strong Li Shang was. With his banner, he was easily able to handle Xuan beasts of the fourth and fifth Xuan level. It was becoming more obvious that cultivators at fifth Xuan Qi layer wouldn't stand a chance of resisting Li Shang. If Lin Feng fought against him, he would need to be cautious as he was no longer sure if he could win.

“How fast! His speed is incredible.” Thought Lin Feng whose expression was still ice-cold. At that moment, he was using his full strength to escape with Meng Qing, but it seemed like it was impossible to escape Li Shang and on top of that, Li Shang was only casually flying through the air, he wasn't even using his full power.

“Lin Feng, I just want to learn your soul technique and to see if there's anything useful in your ring. I have already said, I am a nice person and won't kill you! Why are you being like this?” Said

Li Shang, he was still smiling and continued to mention that he wasn't going to kill them, as if this was his way of being friendly.

Lin Feng ignored him and continued to fly forwards. Very quickly, their group could be seen flying over the city gate. If they left the city, they would encounter the countless fire wolves. The desert around Tianya Haige was probably filled with countless powerful fire wolves.

Lin Feng stopped, it seemed like he was done running away. He landed on the ramparts of the city and looked at Li Shang with a cold stare.

Li Shang stopped in mid-air when he saw that Lin Feng had stopped running away. He was looking at Lin Feng with a big grin, but his expression had grown slightly tense. He seemed extremely carefree and imposing as he stood in the air.

“Li Shang, I asked you if you wanted anything in exchange and you said no, now you are going back on your word.” Said Lin Feng. His body was surrounded by a shocking deadly energy.

He took a step forwards and his sword whistled through the air. Lin Feng slashed his sword towards Li Shang with all his power.

“Wait!? You want to fight me?” Said Li Shang looking confused. He gave a small wave of his hand which formed a hurricane of pure Qi. The hurricane then dashed forward and collided with Lin Feng's sword energy. Lin Feng's sword energy immediately vanished and his deadly energy was blown away.

Lin Feng narrowed his eyes. As expected, Li Shang hadn't revealed his true strength. He had blocked Lin Feng's sword attack in such a relaxed and carefree way. His pure Qi contained unbelievable power, there was no longer any doubting his strength, he was much stronger than a cultivator at the peak of the fifth Xuan Qi Layer, he might still be even stronger than that!

Lin Feng didn't continue to talk. His pure Qi filled the air and his deadly energy was once again released into the air. Li Shang frowned and his face looked surprised. Lin Feng's deadly energy was extremely powerful, unfortunately, it seemed like nothing when facing against Li Shang.

A black sword condensed in the air, that black sword was filled with an incredible deadly energy.

"Ah, interesting." Said Li Shang with a grin. He released some more pure Qi which grew stronger and stronger. His entire body was surrounded by a hurricane which seemed like it had the power to tear the sky apart.

"Die!" Shouted Lin Feng furiously while releasing a monstrous deadly energy which crashed towards Li Shang like a tidal wave. However, Li Shang was still calm and carefree. His hurricane tore through the wave of deadly energy and then collided with Lin Feng's sword.

A rumbling sound spread through the air then suddenly the pure Qi hurricane seemed to be angered as the power drastically

increased. Lin Feng continued to release an endless amount of deadly energy towards the hurricane.

However, it couldn't be stopped!

“BOOM!”

“BOOM! BOOM!”

“BOOM! BOOM! BOOM!”

A huge burst of power crashed through the air destroying everything in its path. Li Shang's entire body had been surrounded by a black ocean which was Lin Feng's deadly energy and Li Shang's clothes were dishevelled. The atmosphere had returned to normal, but Li Shang's face was now expressionless, he still looked calm and carefree, but also cold.

At that moment, Lin Feng and Meng Qing's silhouettes were gone. When Lin Feng sensed Li Shang's pure Qi suddenly surge in strength, he realized that he was never a match for Li Shang, Li Shang was stronger than Lin Feng had ever imagined. Therefore, while Li Shang was distracted by the deadly energy, Meng Qing and Lin Feng immediately fled at full speed. They entered the desert filled with wolves and were gambling that Li Shang wouldn't dare to follow them.

When Li Shang saw them leaving, he started to grin again. He immediately rushed through the air and appeared at the same

distance behind Lin Feng and Meng Qing as before, then continued to follow from behind. He didn't even hesitate before entering the desert which was overrun with wolves, some even had seven tails, some might have more.

“Huh?” Lin Feng was stupefied. He was still chasing them! They were now in the wolves territory, but he continued to chase them without a second thought!

Lin Feng and Meng Qing's facial expressions had changed. They were flying higher and higher into the sky. They were trying their best to avoid the fire wolves, they didn't dare to slow down and actually seemed to increase their speed.

Since Li Shang was still following behind them, there was only one place to run. They had to back to the place where they first arrived, that was the only way for them to leave the desert and escape from Li Shang.

Li Shang obviously couldn't know what Lin Feng was thinking. So he was still following behind them in a relaxed manner, he continued to maintain the same distance. He still wasn't using his full strength to chase them. It almost seemed like he was playing with them.

“Lin Feng, is this really necessary? I only want a few things, I don't want to see you run to your death!” Said Li Shang calmly as he followed behind Lin Feng which made Lin Feng pull a long face. Li Shang was never interested in seeing Lin Feng's banner, it seemed like he only wanted to play around.

The ground was scorching hot and emitting an extreme heat, certain parts of the ground would burst into flame, but there were no fire wolves to be seen. Lin Feng was surprised, did those fire wolves really come from the depths of the planet?

But Lin Feng didn't have time to think about anything else, all he wanted was to escape from Li Shang. Even though Li Shang wasn't chasing them with all his power and looked like he was playing around, who could tell when he would grow bored and kill them?

Of course, if Lin Feng was pushed too far then he wouldn't care about the consequences and would unleash the evil swords.

They continued to fly through the air for a while and Lin Feng was exhausted. He made a slight movement and the banner appeared under their feet and started to grow. The huge banner flew through the air while carrying Lin Feng and Meng Qing. Flying on the banner required Lin Feng to use less energy, he started to remove some purity stones from his and continuously absorbed them to recover his power.

Li Shang looked even more excited when he watched this. He was still following Lin Feng in a calm and relaxed way. His speed was neither slow nor fast. No matter how fast Lin Feng tried to escape, the distance between them remained the same the entire time.

“We're almost there.”

After a long period of time, they could finally see the plateau

which meant they had almost arrived. If they were able to make it back, they would be able to safely leave the desert.

Lin Feng was more concerned about Li Shang who had been flying this entire time, he was afraid that Li Shang might suddenly catch them and there was nothing they could do to stop him.

But Lin Feng's fears didn't become a reality. They soon landed on the ground and arrived back to the place which transported them there. Li Shang was still following them, but maintained his distance. He was still flying leisurely in the air as he smiled while looking towards Lin Feng and Meng Qing: "You're not going to continue running away?"

"Running away?"

A smirk appeared on Lin Feng's face. He grabbed Meng Qing's hand as he added,

"Cya."

When he finished, Lin Feng and Meng Qing vanished from sight, and Li Shang was shocked to see them escape his senses.

When Li Shang saw that Lin Feng and Meng Qing were gone, he was shocked but immediately after, his grin grew wider and he looked even more excited.

Li Shang slowly raised his head towards the sky and leant back,

closed his eyes and took a long deep breath, he looked like he was savouring this moment.

Immediately after, he opened his eyes and a spectacular light could be seen in his eyes.

“HA, AHA HA, AHA HA HA HA, AHA HA HA HA HA HA HA HA HA HA HA HA!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

Li Shang had burst into an endless fit of laughter, an insane laughter!

Chapter 465: The Cursed World

“HAHAHAHA.....” Li Shang laughter grew more and more hysterical. He was releasing a terrifyingly powerful Qi which shook the heavens, if Lin Feng was able to see this scene, he would know that they would never have escaped from Li Shang if he didn’t allow it. Li Shan’s power could bring Lin Feng to his knees, unable to move or breathe in Li Shang’s presence.

The ground as far as the eye could see was shaking because of Li Shang’s hysterical laughter. His Qi was flowing in all directions, it tore through the sky and ripped apart the earth. Shortly after, the ground burst open forming a large valley beneath his feet, shortly after, Li Shang’s silhouette rose into the air. His black cloak was violently fluttering inside the hurricane.

“Ka, kacha!” The valley was being forced open by a powerful force which seemed to be shifting the entire earth, an extremely powerful fire energy was rising from beneath the valley. Soon, the valley was filled with bright red flames.

It was magma!

The terrifying magma started to overflow from the valley and spread across the desert. The entire desert seemed like it had vanished, only flames from the magma remained where the sand used to be. Besides, the magma continued to rise into the air, it shot into the sky like an erupting volcano. It was terrifying!

Li Shang finally stopped laughing and looked towards the

terrifying magma as it rose into the sky. He looked happy and carefree.

“Li Shang!” Shouted a husky voice from inside the magma. Then, a pair of eyes suddenly opened on the surface of the magma. As the magma rose into the air, it slowly started to take the form of a gigantic beast, more precisely a fire wolf. It was a gigantic fire wolf!

“Fire King, what brings you out?” Said Li Shang while looking at the terrifying fire wolf as if he was greeting an old friend.

“Li Shang, what’s wrong with you? Why are you laughing so loudly? What could possibly make you so happy?” Asked the Fire King. Its voice caused the atmosphere to tremble.

“Didn’t you see it? You probably knew about that exit a long time ago!” Said Li Shang.

“I know of it, but that exit will not work for you. So why are you laughing here like a fool?!” Said Fire King indifferently... He had lived here since ancient times, how could he not know about the exit to Xue Yue?

“Well, I gave him an extremely precious gift to take outside with him!” Said Li Shang while looking at the sky and taking a deep breath. Immediately after, the clouds in the sky started to swirl and a huge hurricane formed around Li Shang.

“BOOOOOOM!” Li Shang unleashed a terrifying energy from his fist which crashed through the air causing a thunderous boom.

“BOOOOM! BOOOOM! BOOOOM!” Li Shang continued to violently attack the same area, trying to force the door to appear for him.

“This bloody world is a cursed world, I, Li Shang, will find a way to leave!”

The earth was violently shaking and the heavens seemed like they would collapse at any moment.

“Being powerful is a burden! The more you know about this world, the more it drives you insane. If you’re like other people, you will never understand what kind of world this is... But, you have already found out the truth of the world we live in... But I can tell you that what prevents us from leaving is not a seal, and this world is not cursed. This is a normal world just like any other!” Sighed the fire king. Its voice had grown ancient and weary. He was much older than Li Shang, the gap in age was tremendous. It was born at the very centre of the world. Over the years it eventually formed its own intelligence. It had a vast and broad knowledge which spanned over millennia. The fire wolf was well aware of the limits of this world, they were unable to break the boundary of that world and escape their cage, but there were paths to the outside which allowed people to enter. Therefore, the wolf knew that Li Shang’s dream of leaving would remain just that.

“What about you? What are your plans?” Asked Li Shang towards the Fire King.

“All I want to do now is attack Tianya Haige and slowly gain control over this world. If I manage to conquer the world, I would have no reason to leave it behind.” Said Fire King slowly.

“I wish you success and I hope you’ll be able to achieve your dream in the future.” Said Li Shang while smiling. His body was then consumed by light and he immediately disappeared from sight with incredible speed. The Fire King was just looking at Li Shang’s figure in the distance, then slowly moved back into the magma. Very quickly, the desert returned to its original state as if nothing had occurred.

.....

After having escaped from the desert, Meng Qing and Lin Feng appeared in front of the ancient tree. They felt refreshed breathing in the cool air of the Lovesick Forest. They felt like it had been a lifetime since they had felt such refreshing air.

Lin Feng and Meng Qing looked at each other and smiled. They had gone through a very mysterious and mystical experience. They seemed to teleport to a mysterious region which was vastly different from their own.

Lin Feng turned around, his eyes were alight while looking towards the illusion surrounding the tree.

Suddenly, Lin Feng released a very sharp Qi and his hand pierced through the air. A slicing sound emerged and a tree fell, blocking

the entrance to the illusion. Lin Feng continued attacking until the entrance was completely sealed shut.

“Little Feng, what’s going on?!” When Yue Meng He heard the loud noises, her silhouette flickered and she appeared in front of Lin Feng, four women had accompanied her. She was surprised, why had Lin Feng sealed the entrance to the illusion?

“Mother, we can never go to that place again.” Said Lin Feng while looking at Yue Meng He. Lin Feng looked strange, he felt like they should never go back to that region. It was a dangerous place filled with evil and death. The fire wolves had an army powerful enough to conquer the land, who knew whether they would succeed or not?

Yue Meng He remained silent for a few seconds and replied: “Alright, we won’t go there again.”

Lin Feng smiled and started walking with Yue Meng He. He asked: “Mother, has anything particular happened the past days in Xue Yue?”

“Nothing important, some people from the Dragon Mountain Empire have arrived in Xue Yue. They probably came to discuss the Great Competition of Xue Yu.” Said Yue Meng He while frowning, and then continued: “Besides, those people from Dragon Mountain have also brought along some people from the country of Tian Feng. Tian Feng is just like Xue Yue, it’s a country under the jurisdiction of the Dragon Mountain Empire.”

“The Great Competition of Xue Yu!” Whispered Lin Feng. Last time, the national competition of Xue Yue had abruptly stopped due to corruption and tampering. Lin Feng was wondering how the people of Dragon Mountain Empire would select their cultivators.

“Little Feng, do you want to participate in the Great Competition of Xue Yu?” Asked Yue Meng He.

“The most outstanding disciples of the thirteen countries of Xue Yu will engage in battles which will allow them to grow stronger, why wouldn’t I want to?” Lin Feng’s eyes were filled with excitement. He couldn’t stay in Xue Yue forever, he had to leave at some point. Xue Yue was only the start of his adventure.

Yue Meng He remained silent. Actually, she had contradictory thoughts to Lin Feng. On one hand she was hoping that Lin Feng wouldn’t want to leave Xue Yue, but on the other hand she was also hoping that Lin Feng would be to explore the world and be a free spirit. If the empire thought that Lin Feng was outstanding, nobody in Xue Yue would dare to harm him. She was even hoping that Lin Feng would, one day, be able to take revenge for all the grievances of the past. After all, she wanted to get her revenge too but she wasn’t powerful enough. Lin Hai and Yue Meng He had suffered a terrible fate, they were forced into hiding, they didn’t have enough power to truly be together, they were forced into secrecy.

But... She had only one son, Lin Feng. If Lin Feng went and participated in the Great Competition of Xue Yu, it would be a very difficult challenge for him. Yue Meng He didn’t want Lin Feng to carry such a heavy burden by himself. She didn’t want Lin Feng to

eventually crumble under the pressure. She was scared that he would eventually lose his life because of past grievances.

Yue Meng He and Lin Hai would normally share a similar opinion on most matters. They both wanted Lin Feng to live a normal and ordinary life, if he didn't, they at least wanted him to be safe.

But since Lin Feng had already entered the world of cultivators, he couldn't stop walking the dangerous path, it was impossible.

Lin Feng had to keep moving forwards, step by step, until the day he stood at the very top.

“Little Feng, no matter what, whether you want to go or not, you have to remember to remember how important your life is. You have to keep living, that is the only thing me and your father wishes for.” Said Yue Meng He while staring at Lin Feng.

“Don't worry, it's not easy to kill me.” Said Lin Feng while smiling which stupefied Yue Meng He.

Lin Hai was still in front of the tree with the cabins, he was still carving into trees. He was absolutely still and seemed like he wasn't part of this world, as if he had forgotten everything.

Lin Feng kept walking and didn't go and disturb his father. He also knew about his father's seal. It seemed like Lin Hai was trying to increase his strength and vitality, he was trying to break through the seal that was placed on him.

Having his power sealed and part of him locked away, Lin Hai didn't feel that he was truly living his life, even if he didn't say it, Lin Feng understood how much his father had suffered to protect him.

He was shunned and eventually expelled from the clan of his own flesh and blood, he wasn't able to step up and protect his son from danger and when he was inside the Imperial City, he was forced to hide away, unable to freely be with his own wife... He was unable to take his revenge and was constantly hiding in fear from the imperial clan. Lin Hai had a great burden on his shoulders. Even if he was always smiling, his smile was only to hide the suffering in his heart.

Chapter 466: Resurrection of the Yun Hai Sect!

“Mother, I am leaving for a while.” Said Lin Feng who didn’t want to disturb Lin Hai, Yue Meng He smiled and nodded in reply. In the Imperial City, everybody was now aware that Lin Feng was her son, so it was unlikely that anyone would attack Lin Feng. His enemies would have to think twice before trying anything. Besides, Lin Feng’s personal strength was also extraordinary so Yue Meng He wasn’t too worried about Lin Feng’s safety.

The depths of the Lovesick Forest was a restricted area, nobody was able to enter that area without permission, but Lin Feng could enter freely.

Lin Feng and Meng Qing left the Lovesick Forest and headed to the Celestial Academy. When the students of the academy saw Lin Feng and Meng Qing, they all looked at them with respectful gazes, the students worshiped them.

At the national competition, everyone had seen how powerful Lin Feng was, including a large amount of people from the academy, and even those who hadn’t witnessed it with their own eyes, had heard about what had happened.

“As expected, they are destined soul mates.” Thought many people when they saw Lin Feng and Meng Qing. Lin Feng looked elegant and imposing, Meng Qing looked pure and holy like a celestial being, they were a perfect match, just like a string of pearl and jade.

The students of the Celestial Academy all stopped what they were doing when they noticed Meng Qing and Lin Feng, they started to follow them, which made Lin Feng smile wryly, he wasn't used to people worshipping him.

He went to the military students' quarters and encountered Mister Chi and Mister Huo. Lan Jiao, Jing Yun and Yi Xue were also there when Lin Feng arrived. Besides, they had already befriended the two strange old men. What bothered Lin Feng was that the two old men were relaxing and playing chess, Jing Yun and Yi Xue were preparing tea for them and Lan Jiao was next to the old men watching them play with a worshipping gaze. Lin Feng was shocked speechless.

“Mister Huo, I am intelligent and a fast learner, please teach me alchemy!!” Said Lan Jiao to the old man, but Mister Huo ignored her and continued playing chess.

“Mister Huo, Mister Chi, you really know how to enjoy life.” Said Lin Feng while smiling and walking over to the old men.

“You and your goddess were able to take a break and have a tranquil and carefree lifestyle, why wouldn't you allow these two old men to enjoy some relaxation?” Said Mister Chi while laughing wholeheartedly.

Lin Feng looked very different than in the past. When they decided to follow Lin Feng, he was still very weak and still had the air of youth. But, they had seen the battles of Xiangjiang Lake. The

two old men knew that Lin Feng had already surpassed their power.

Besides, he had surpassed them in such a short period of time that the two old men couldn't even believe their eyes, it was like a dream.

They had initially thought that Lin Feng would surpass them after a few years but in fact, he had needed less than a year and he was already much stronger than them. He could easily kill cultivators of the third and fourth Xuan Qi layer like they were insects. Not to mention that Lin Feng's background was also incredible.

“Haha!!” Laughed Mister Huo and then said while looking at Lin Feng: “Don't listen to Mister Chi! If you need anything, just give us an order.”

Lin Feng was surprised but he quickly returned to normal again. Mister Huo was extremely kind, he was the most understanding of Lin Feng.

“Mister Huo, what ‘orders’ are you talking about? Back then, you decided to follow me, a little nobody, I will always remember that.” Said Lin Feng while shaking his head and smiling.

Mister Huo and Mister Chi nodded and said: “If we hadn't understood you back then and had no relationship with you, we wouldn't have followed you.”

“Indeed, Lin Feng, why do you need to talk that way and sound sentimental, you’re so womanly!” Said Mister Chi.

“Haha, yes.” Lin Feng nodded. He then continued: “Mister Huo, I need you to go back to Yangzhou City and then bring a troop to the Yun Hai Mountain Chain. I want you to encircle the mountain chain for seven days.”

Jing Yun shivered and her eyes started to twinkle. Bring people to the Yun Hai Mountain Chain...? Encircle it for seven days?

What did Lin Feng want to do?

“Besides, I also want to ask you, Mister Chi, to take a troop to the Hao Yue Sect and exterminate them.” Said Lin Feng which made Jing Yun shiver again. Chu Zhan Peng and his father Chu Qing were dead, the Hao Yue Sect was at its weakest and most vulnerable state.

Lin Feng wanted to keep his promise and resurrect the Yun Hai Sect. Those who participated in the extermination of the Yun Hai Sect needed to die.

The time had come to get revenge for the Yun Hai Sect.

“No problem.”

“No problem here either.”

The two old men replied and nodded. They then immediately stood up.

“Lin Feng, it is said that the former territory of the Yun Hai Sect has been invaded by those who helped destroy it. Besides, the Yun Hai Mountain Chain is also inhabited by a number of new sects. It is because of the Black Wind Mountain, it is a great location for sects to train and cultivate. The location gives many advantages to those sects.” Said Jing Yun to Lin Feng, as she explained the situation.

Lin Feng slightly nodded. He understood why the Yun Hai Mountain Chain was a good location for a sect.

“Surround it for seven days. Nobody should even think about taking a single step inside the territory. People who are residing in the mountain chain will have seven days to evacuate, if they are not gone by seven days, kill them all. Mister Chi, after destroying the Hao Yue Sect, have some people bring the spoils of war back to Yangzhou City, then move the troops towards the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, wait for me at the half way point and I will meet you there.” Said Lin Feng coldly.

There were no laws in the world of cultivation except for the law of the jungle. In The past, Duan Tian Lang had influenced the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, the Hao Yue Sect and the Wan Shou Sect to join hands and destroy the Yun Hai Sect, three years had passed since that bloodbath and a debt of blood had to be paid with blood.

“I know what to do.” Said Mister Huo while nodding. “Let’s not waste time, Lin Feng, Mister Chi and I will leave immediately.”

“Alright.” Said Lin Feng while nodding. Mister Chi and Mister Huo then immediately left without wasting a single moment.

Jing Yun looked at Lin Feng and her eyes were bright. She had known Lin Feng for a long time and she had seen him accomplish so many great things.

Jing Yun could still remember how Lin Feng was back then when he had only broken through to the sixth Qi layer. He was just an ordinary disciple of the Yun Hai Sect and was considered very weak. Then, he suddenly started to dazzle everyone like a meteor flashing across the sky. He had fought his way through many life and death battles, and step by step, he made progress on his cultivation. Now, he considered as an extremely powerful cultivator and he easily had the power to destroy a sect.

Lin Feng was already stronger than Nan Gong Ling was in the past. Maybe he really could resurrect the former glory of the Yun Hai Sect.

He was a young man, only eighteen years old, yet so elegant and prestigious. He had become the most talented disciple of the Yun Hai Sect and his glory was unmatched. If he was unable to resurrect the Yun Hai Sect, then no one could return it to Xue Yue.

Jing Yun had overheard conversations in the past regarding the Yun Hai Sect and Nan Gong Ling. People would say that if the Yun

Hai Sect hadn't been annihilated, then it would have flourished once again. Two years before, the Yun Hai Sect was at its weakest, it was a period of decline for the sect which was why they couldn't defend themselves from attack. In the end, Lin Feng survived and inherited the Yun Hai Sect, its resurrection was in his hands.

Lin Feng had made a promise and these were things that he needed to do.

"Lin Feng." Shouted Lan Jiao at that moment. Lin Feng turned his head and looked towards her. She looked like she was laden with grief and her face was contorted.

"Lin Feng, I'm leaving." Said Lan Jiao which surprised Lin Feng, but he immediately regained his composure. Lan Jiao was neither his friend nor his enemy. He had accepted to take her with him because the Dream Pavilion had been exterminated. Lan Jiao wanted to keep on living so she had had to follow Lin Feng. A long time had passed since those events and Lan Jiao wanted to live her own life.

When she saw Lin Feng remained silent, she continued: "The people from the Cosmic Pavilion are already in Xue Yue, they are in the Imperial City."

"The Cosmic Pavilion!" Lin Feng was stupefied. The Dream Pavilion was a subgroup of the Cosmic Pavilion which was an influential power in the Dragon Mountain Empire. They were extremely powerful, more than those small spheres of influence in Xue Yue. Surprisingly, they had come to Xue Yue.

“Lan Jiao, even though you know everything about what happened in Celestial River, you shouldn’t tell them about it, the second prince Duan Wu Ya shouldn’t be offended at any cost. While they are in Xue Yue, the Cosmic Pavilion does not have the power to harm him.” Warned Lin Feng. Lin Feng and Duan Wu Ya often had contact. Lin Feng still didn’t understand why Duan Wu Ya always acted so friendly towards him, it was unfathomable. Lin Feng really didn’t understand Duan Wu Ya. In Celestial River, Duan Wu Ya had even dared attack an evil ectoplasm king.

If Lan Jiao wanted to use this opportunity to attack Duan Wu Ya in Xue Yue, she would be killed and Duan Wu Ya would emerge unharmed.

“I know.” Replied Lan Jiao while nodding. “What happened in Celestial River will not be mentioned, I will pretend to know nothing about it.”

“Alright then.” Replied Lin Feng while nodding. Lan Jiao was still one of his acquaintances and Lin Feng hoped that nothing bad would happen to her.

“Is there anything you want to tell me?” Asked Lan Jiao while looking towards Lin Feng in a warm and friendly way.

After remaining silent for a few seconds, Lin Feng said: “Take good care of yourself.”

“I will.” Said Lan Jiao while smiling. Immediately after, she

turned around and left. She didn't take anything with her, she simply left with empty hands.

Chapter 467: Banquet in the Imperial Palace

After Lan Jiao left, Meng Qing looked at Lin Feng and said: “She doesn’t want to leave, you should ask her to stay.”

Lin Feng smiled wryly and shook his head.

“Jing Yun, do you want to go back to Yangzhou City and then go back to Yun Hai Sect with the others?” Asked Lin Feng towards Jing Yun.

“I will go to the Yun Hai Sect first and I will wait for Mister Chi and Mister Huo there.” Replied Jing Yun while smiling. She was also a member of the Yun Hai Sect. Even though she used to be a simple ordinary disciple, the Yun Hai Sect was a beautiful memory from her youth. She had always been sad after its destruction. Being able to see the Yun Hai Sect’s revival was a great thing for her.

“It’s another possibility indeed. Alright then, Yi Xue, you can come with me to the Lovesick Forest.” These days, they didn’t need to stay inside the Celestial Academy, there was nothing for them to gain there.

“What about Duan Feng?” Asked Jing Yun.

“He should stay here and practice cultivation. I think the Celestial Academy is more than happy to nurture him.” Replied Lin Feng with a faint smile. A thousand ties linked Duan Feng to the Imperial Clan, besides, he had extremely high natural abilities

and a very pure heart. The best thing for him was to practice cultivation in a peaceful and calm location. Lin Feng wasn't willing to have too much contact with Duan Feng, he didn't want to influence his cultivation.

“That's good too.” Nodded Jing Yun. Jing Yun and Yi Xue then started cleaning and tidying their residence before leaving the palace with Lin Feng.

At the academy, everybody was still staring at Lin Feng which made him smile wryly.

Lin Feng suddenly noticed a familiar face before he left the ground of the academy... Nan Shan.

“Jing Yun, go to the Yun Hai Sect alone, but be careful. Meng Qing, take Yi Xue with you and go to the Lovesick Forest.” Said Lin Feng. When Lin Feng saw Nan Shan, he knew that something had come up.

“Son of Yue Meng He.”

As expected, Nan Shan was smiling and run towards Lin Feng, so fast that it seemed like he was going to attack him.

“Call me Lin Feng, ok?” Said Lin Feng while smiling. “Son of Yue Meng He” sounded too unusual for Lin Feng.

“Son of Yue Meng He.... I will call you Young Master instead.”

Said Nan Shan while shaking his head and smiling. “Young master, everybody has seen how strong you were at the national competition. You killed Chu Zhan Peng and Chu Qing. Now, everybody knows that you could become a high-official but for that you first have to pass the test. If there was no test, you would already be a high-official.”

“The term high-official means nothing to me.” Said Lin Feng while shaking his head. He didn’t care about the high-officials. He knew how vast and boundless the continent was and there were many strong cultivators lurking in the shadows. Being a high-official wouldn’t influence his true goal.

“But even if it is meaningless to you, it is also a way to prove your strength.” Said Nan Shan while smiling wryly. Many people dreamt of becoming a high-official, in their eyes, the eight high-officials were the most amazing cultivators of the country. However, Nan Shan could see that Lin Feng didn’t care about that at all.

Lin Feng only attached importance to the high-officials’ strength, but didn’t care for the fame.

“Let’s talk about something else, did the second prince send you to talk to me?” Asked Lin Feng. He didn’t feel like talking about the high-officials anymore.

Each time Nan Shan appeared, it had something to do with Duan Wu Ya, this time was no exception.

“Indeed.” Nodded Nan Shan and said: “Lin Feng, His Highness the second prince has been waiting for you for a very long time.”

“What do you mean?” Asked Lin Feng.

“Young Master, after the national competition at Xiangjiang Lake, some people from the Dragon Mountain Empire arrived to select who was going to participate in the Great Competition of Xue Yu. They also brought the outstanding cultivators from Tian Feng with them. This way, the outstanding cultivators of Xue Yue will be able to measure their strength against the cultivators of Tian Feng. Xue Yue has organized a banquet for everyone to celebrate the occasion. Some of the most outstanding cultivators of Xue Yue were invited but because you were unreachable, the banquet was postponed. The people from Dragon Mountain and Tian Feng have already started complaining.” Said Nan Shan while smiling wryly. He then continued; “I’ve been waiting for you every day, all day, I searched the Lovesick Forest but I never saw you. Today I heard that you were here and I immediately rushed here to inform you. The second prince wants the banquet to happen tonight. I hope that you can understand why we are in a hurry and accept the invitation to the banquet.”

Members from the Dragon Mountain Empire had come and Xue Yue was the official host of that banquet. Organizing a banquet was an obligation. However, because of Lin Feng, Duan Wu Ya had asked to postpone the banquet which shocked Lin Feng. Besides, he also realized that Nan Shan had become much politer to him, that meant that Duan Wu Ya attached even more importance to Lin Feng.

Nan Shan represented the second prince, Lin Feng understood that much.

“Nan Shan, tell the second prince that I will be there.” Said Lin Feng while smiling. Nan Shan agreed and said: “Thank you very much young master. I will inform him right away.”

“Alright.” Nodded Lin Feng. Nan Shan then bowed in front of Lin Feng and left. Lin Feng was looking at Nan Shan’s back as he left and looked perplexed. A sharp light was twinkling in his eyes. Nan Shan’s behaviour had changed, he was being extremely polite and courteous. Besides, Nan Shan represented the second prince Duan Wu Ya which meant that Duan Wu Ya also respected Lin Feng, it meant that Duan Wu Ya thought that Lin Feng was important.

“Everything has changed because of my mother!” Suddenly thought Lin Feng. It was a flash of enlightenment. He suddenly understood the mysterious actions of other people which he didn’t understand before. Duan Wu Ya was good to him because he had always known that Lin Feng was Yue Meng He’s son. Back in the Lovesick Forest, Duan Wu Ya hadn’t intervened in Yu Tian Xing and Lin Feng’s fight and seemed to side with Lin Feng. Yu Qiu’s cultivation was then crippled by Lin Feng’s mother for attempting to kill Lin Feng. Duan Wu Ya’s people always supported Lin Feng in his actions.

It seemed like all those events had been planned by Duan Wu Ya. Everything went according to plan because Lin Feng was Yue Meng He’s son. That was also why the Yu Clan didn’t dare to openly retaliate against Lin Feng.

In Celestial River, Duan Wu Ya had stolen the heavenly dragon cauldron from everybody. He had astonished everyone with his power and was the victor of a huge battle. He was the only one who had the right to obtain the ancient cauldron. Duan Wu Ya was monstrously powerful, his strength was incredible but his temperament and methods were just as incredible.

Even though Duan Wu Ya was good to Lin Feng because he had other motives, he also wanted to help Lin Feng, he never planned to harm Lin Feng and would only benefit him.

“Back in Celestial River, someone stole the ancient cauldron from Duan Wu Ya and gave it to me... but I don’t know who that person was.” Lin Feng thought. That person with the powerful sword aura wasn’t his mother, but they must be related.

“When I see my mother again, I will ask her.”

Lin Feng didn’t know many strong cultivators, he only knew Yan Yu Ping Sheng, but he didn’t know who returned the cauldron to him. Why did that person help him? Besides, the ancient cauldron was extremely valuable, why did they give it to Lin Feng? Why didn’t he keep it for himself? It was probably one of his parents’ friends, everything started to make sense.

Lin Feng raised his head and looked at the sky. Immediately after, he said to Meng Qing and the others: “You can leave now, I am going to the Imperial Palace.”

“Be careful.” Said Meng Qing. Lin Feng smiled and nodded. This

time, at the banquet, Lin Feng would meet the people from the Dragon Mountain Empire. Besides, all the cultivators from Tian Feng would also be extremely strong, there were no weak cultivators involved. They would need to compare the strength of all the outstanding disciples.

Besides, a conflict between cultivators during the banquet was inevitable. Tian Feng and Xue Yue were countries under the jurisdiction of the Dragon Mountain Empire, they probably wouldn't be on good terms with the other party.

But those minor conflicts wouldn't be a problem. Nobody would want any accidents to happen during the banquet. The Dragon Mountain Empire also didn't want anything regrettable to happen to the participants before the Great Competition of Xue Yu, during the fighter selection process. Conflicts were unavoidable and no matter who won the battles, no battle was permitted to end in the death of a selected talent, as it might weaken the Dragon Mountain Empire's chances at victory.

The Great Competition of Xue Yu wasn't only about a single empire. In Xue Yu, there were three empires with other countries under their jurisdiction that were competing. The Great Competition of Xue Yu was the biggest event of the region. All three of the empires wanted their participants to dazzle everyone else.

The confrontations of all the outstanding disciples were actually closely related to the countries' respective national affairs. Young cultivators were the future of their countries. If the young cultivators were strong, then their country would prosper.

Meng Qing and the others nodded and left. Meng Qing brought Yi Xue to the Lovesick Forest and Jing Yun left for the Yun Hai Sect. Jing Yun didn't count as a strong cultivator, but in the lands outside of the Imperial City, she would be considered very powerful.

Lin Feng's silhouette then flickered and he rushed straight towards the Imperial Palace.

Chapter 468: Keep Watch for Me!

Lin Feng hadn't asked Nan Shan where in the palace the banquet would be held, he only knew the time it started. He arrived in the vast and boundless Imperial Palace, but Lin Feng asked nobody for directions. Instead, he continued to fly above the palace. Under him, there were many pavilions, lakes, mountains and rivers.

Lin Feng then saw a part of the Imperial Palace where he had already been in the past, it was a forest in a valley. When Lin Feng saw that valley, he immediately landed.

A group of women in white clothes appeared next to him but when they saw that it was Lin Feng, they dropped their guard and returned to their positions. They had obviously recognized Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng, are you here to see her highness the princess?” asked one of the maids. Lin Feng immediately nodded.

“Please wait for a moment. I will inform her highness.” Said the maid. Immediately after, she went into the depths of the forest while Lin Feng waited outside. He looked at the valley, it was still a very magnificent landscape. It was so beautiful, graceful and elegant, just like Duan Xin Ye.

After a short moment, Lin Feng saw a woman running towards him. She had a magnificent and resplendent smile on her face.

“Lin Feng!” Said Duan Xin Ye, she was very happy and excited to

see Lin Feng.

When the maids saw the princess, who was usually so calm and introverted, smile in such a resplendent way, they were stupefied and looked knowingly at Lin Feng. What magical powers did that young man have? The princess was bewitched by him.

Lin Feng, when he saw Duan Xin Ye's magnificent smile, he smiled radiantly. Duan Xin Ye's smile was so pure that it allowed people to forget about their troubles.

Lin Feng walked towards Duan Xin Ye, stretched out his hand and fixed Duan Xin Ye's hair that was messily covering her face. He then smiled and said: "I was going to come in and see you, there was no need for you to run all the way here."

Duan Xin Ye's lips shook, she smiled and shook her head while saying: "It's not the same."

"What's not the same?" Asked Lin Feng who was confused.

"If you come to see me, it means that you want to see me, if I come out to see you, it means that I also want to see you, it's obviously not the same." Said Duan Xin Ye with a pure smile on her face. She then grabbed Lin Feng's arm and brought him inside the valley.

When they passed in front of the maids, the maids saw Duan Xin Ye holding Lin Feng's arm and were astonished, they all looked at

each other and smiled knowingly.

The princess was in love.

In the valley, there were many cliffs which were decorated with portraits. Those portraits were lifelike and all of the same person.

“Lin Feng, look at my paintings, haven’t I progressed a lot?” Asked Duan Xin Ye to Lin Feng while pointing at the portraits she had painted. There were small portraits of Lin Feng, large portraits of Lin Feng, there were portraits of Lin Feng everywhere!

He smiled wryly and shook his head while saying: “I look much better in your paintings than I do in reality. Xin Ye, why do you waste your time painting me?”

“When you’re not here with me, I can look at all the paintings around me and see you.” Said Duan Xin Ye in a gentle and soft tone which made a warm feeling invade Lin Feng’s heart. However, he also felt remorseful and uneasy, he almost never came to see Duan Xin Ye, his visits could be counted on one hand.

“Wait until you get married, at that moment, when you look around and only see me, you will get sick of my face.” Joked Lin Feng.

“Well, when are we getting married?” Suddenly asked Duan Xin Ye while looking into Lin Feng’s eyes in a meaningful way. She looked impatient.

Lin Feng was shocked and smiled wryly. He was speechless and didn't know what to say.

"I'm just kidding." Said Duan Xin Ye while smiling. She then turned her head and didn't look at Lin Feng any longer. She then added: "You and Meng Qing can get married, the most important thing is that you keep me around, that's enough for me." Said Duan Xin Ye while smiling but her smile was hiding her sadness. However, she wasn't going to cry, she was already clear about Lin Feng's feelings after their last discussion. The most important thing was that Lin Feng didn't abandon her, that was enough. If she lost her social status, it didn't matter. She just wanted to remain with Lin Feng.

Actually, Duan Xin Ye's thoughts were simple. She loved him and wanted to be with him, it was as simple as that.

Lin Feng grabbed Duan Xin Ye's hand and held it firmly which made Duan Xin Ye smile in an even more magnificent way.

"Xin Ye, tonight, the second prince invited me to a banquet. Some people from the Dragon Mountain Empire and Tian Feng will be there. Shall we go together?" Said Lin Feng suddenly which stupefied Duan Xin Ye. She looked at Lin Feng and said: "Really??"

"Do you think that I would try and fool you?" Asked Lin Feng while making a grimace and then laughing.

"Thank you, Lin Feng." Said Duan Xin Ye's whose face turned a

bit red. Suddenly, some tears appeared in the corner of her eyes and she felt very warm in her heart.

“Xin Ye, what are you doing? Come on!” Said Lin Feng while wiping off her tears. He felt powerless.

“I’m so happy!” Said Duan Xin Ye using her sleeves to wipe off her tears, she looked free and unrestrained at that moment. She was really happy. If Lin Feng wanted to go to the banquet with her, she would go, not as the crown princess, but as Lin Feng’s woman.

Besides, that banquet would be exceptional. There would be all the noble aristocrats of the country. Lin Feng would thus show to everyone that Duan Xin Ye was under his protection, that was the only reason, but Duan Xin Ye agreed anyway.

“You have done so much for me, everything I do now won’t be enough.” Sighed Lin Feng. Having Duan Xin Ye side with him before was a bit difficult. Duan Xin Ye was a princess and she was revered by everyone. Back then, Lin Feng, apart from his title of marquis and officer, he didn’t have much prestige. He didn’t have enough power to be accepted in the past either. Many people who were courting Duan Xin Ye in the past were much stronger and had powerful backers.

Of course, the situation had now changed. Lin Feng was Yue Meng He’s son and everyone knew about it. She had told everybody that Lin Feng was her son at Xiangjiang Lake. Everybody knew about Lin Feng’s background in Xue Yue, so Lin Feng had what it took to be in an intimate relationship with Duan Xin Ye.

When Duan Xin Ye heard Lin Feng, she smiled even more. She then said: “I’m going for a bath. Wait here for me.”

“Alright.” Nodded Lin Feng. At that moment, they had already arrived inside Duan Xin Ye’s residence. At the edge of Duan Xin Ye’s bedroom, there was a stone door and behind it, there were hot springs. Only extremely wealthy and noble people would have such a luxurious thing as part of their residence, but Duan Xin Ye was a princess so it wasn’t surprising at all.

“Lin Feng, keep watch for me.” Said Duan Xin Ye in a sweet voice. She then opened the stone door and went through, she immediately started to bathe in the hot springs. Lin Feng could see the hot steam float in the air and hear the sound of water, he could also smell the pleasant fragrance filling the room.

Lin Feng suddenly felt uneasy, Duan Xin Ye was having a bath and she hadn’t shut the door, didn’t she trust Lin Feng a little bit too much?

“Xin Ye, are you not scared that I would peep at you?” Said Lin Feng. Even though he had a strong willpower and determination, he found the situation enchanting. Lin Feng was lost in wild and fanciful thoughts.

“It’s not as if you have never seen my body before.” Replied Duan Xin Ye while laughing which astonished Lin Feng. He remembered that time at the Zi Government in Mo Yue which made him feel even more strange.

After a short time, which felt like eternity for Lin Feng, Duan Xin Ye finishing bathing and came out. Her smile was resplendent and her fragrance was pleasant. She looked at Lin Feng with a seductive glance.

Lin Feng smiled wryly and looked at Duan Xin Ye, she was beautiful, graceful and elegant. Her face was beautiful and pure. After her bath, her skin was beautiful and smooth, she looked enchanting and her fragrance was alluring.

“At least you won’t lose face with me next to you.” Said Duan Xin Ye while smiling which stupefied Lin Feng. She was a princess, how could she be afraid of him losing face?

“Xin Ye, I will feel like everyone is watching me if I am next to you.” Said Lin Feng while smiling and shaking his head.

“Hmph.” Duan Xin Ye grabbed Lin Feng’s arm, her pleasant fragrance immediately invaded Lin Feng’s nose which made his nose slightly itchy.

“Lin Feng, let’s go.” Said Duan Xin Ye gently.

“Go?” Lin Feng smiled wryly and pointed at the sky. He said: “Look, is it the night yet? The banquet hasn’t even started yet.”

Duan Xin Ye saw that the evening sun had just started to set, the sky was still quite bright. Duan Xin Ye just smiled. She was excited

and didn't realise the banquet hadn't started yet.

Chapter 469: Beauty Under the Moonlight

On Duan Wu Mountain, there is a scenic palace with a beautiful waterfall. It was usually very calm but at that moment there were various sounds coming from the palace.

It was already night outside and the Imperial Palace was brightly lit. However, the palace on Duan Wu Mountain didn't have any lanterns lit. There was only the light of the moon to illuminate the beautiful scene. The moonlight glistened on the waterfall, and the stones of the mountain radiated a pale glow. Duan Wu Mountain was beautifully lit by the moonlight. It looked beautiful.

Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye arrived together. When they arrived at the foot of the mountain, they saw two guards in silver armour. Seeing guards here was something very rare but because of the banquet, Duan Wu Ya had guards prepared to ensure that they weren't disturbed.

When they saw Duan Xin Ye with Lin Feng, they didn't stop to check their identities before entering. However, the guards were glaring at Lin Feng.

Even though everybody knew Lin Feng's name in the Imperial City, only those who had seen Lin Feng, for example at Xiangjiang Lake, could recognize him. The guards of the Imperial Palace weren't able to go to Xiangjiang Lake, therefore, they couldn't recognize Lin Feng. When they saw a young man who was being close with Duan Xin Ye, they were surprised, envious and jealous.

The princess was extremely beautiful, many men dreamed of courting her. However, surprisingly, those guards had never seen this young man who was with her at that moment, which meant that he wasn't a noble from the Imperial Palace. Being that close to the princess was probably his good luck.

While going on up the mountain, Lin Feng sensed that the guards were glaring at him. He smiled wryly and said: "Xin Ye, all those wealthy and noble young men of the Imperial Palace are going to be angry at me tonight... Don't you think?"

"You've got so many enemies already, a few more doesn't really matter." Said Duan Xin Ye while smiling in a tender way. Lin Feng had offended a great deal of large powers in Xue Yue, the Yu Clan, the Wan Shou Sect, etc. They were all extremely powerful and influential groups within Xue Yue. If those people couldn't attack Lin Feng anymore, these nobles couldn't even dream of it. Therefore, offending more people wasn't a problem for Lin Feng, his situation wouldn't change.

Lin Feng understood what Duan Xin Ye meant. He couldn't help but smile wryly over and over again. He had, indeed, offended a number of people but it was always him being provoked. Lin Feng was only following his path on becoming a strong cultivator and they became the thorns and thistles in his way. If a strong cultivator couldn't continue walking down the path of cultivation because of a few thorns and thistles, he would die. The only way to move forwards was to cut through everything in his path. In other words, it was necessary for Lin Feng to encounter difficulties and overcome all the obstacles in his way.

“For you, I would have to do this much.” Said Lin Feng while smiling which stupefied Duan Xin Ye. The moonlight was shining upon her beautiful face which made her look like a goddess.

On Duan Wu Mountain, there was a huge cultivation field created for battles between cultivators. Under the moonlight, the field reflected the stars to be shown beneath their feet, so while standing on it, people would feel like heroes standing amongst the stars.

On that field, there was a pavilion from which one could observe the battles. At that moment, there were many people inside the pavilion. There were many people sitting around the pavilion and there were fine liquors and delicacies in front of them.

But it seemed like they were still waiting for people to arrive as there were still a few open seats. Nobody had tasted the food or the alcohol, instead they were unceasingly talking.

Duan Wu Ya wasn't sitting on the main seat which was higher than the others, instead he was sitting on a seat next to the main one, and his seat was slightly lower. He was sitting amongst a group of people from Xue Yue, who sat in a position even lower than him.

Opposite of Duan Wu Ya and the other people from Xue Yue, at the very front, were some people who looked introverted and had no energy emerging from their bodies, however, Duan Wu Ya didn't seem to neglect them.

Opposite Duan Wu Ya, it was the prince of Tian Feng, Feng Chen. Besides, the other people who were emitting to energy were members of the seven envoys of Tian Feng.

The seven envoys of Tian Feng were the strongest young cultivators of Tian Feng, just like the eight high-officials of Xue Yue, but in Tian Feng, there was only seven. Strangely, there was only six of them present.

On Duan Wu Ya's left, there were large seats, the three people who sat on them looked indifferent. They had a noble aura surrounding them. They were the three from the Dragon Mountain Empire. Two of them were ambassadors for the empire and one of them was an elder of the Cosmic Pavilion, the ambassadors had invited him to join them in coming to Xue Yue.

Besides all of the well-known figures, there were some other people who looked extraordinary as well. They were the high-ranking officials from the court of Xue Yue, opposite them were the powerful guards of the ambassadors of the Dragon Mountain Empire. There was also some cultivators from the Cosmic Pavilion.

Everybody in the pavilion had an extraordinary social status.

But what surprised people was that there was a free seat next to Duan Wu Ya. Nobody was sitting there, which meant there was an incredible person who had still not arrived.

“Wu Ya, Your Highness, please forgive me for my curiosity but... the one who made you postpone the banquet, isn't it the one who

hasn't arrived yet?" Asked Feng Chen in a calm voice. Actually, the tone of his voice showed that he was reproaching Duan Wu Ya for postponing the banquet.

"Please accept my most sincere apologies, this person is extremely important in Xue Yue. Besides, he might participate in the Great Competition of Xue Yu. I am convinced that the ambassadors from Dragon Mountain can understand my position, sorry for the inconvenience." Said Duan Wu Ya while slightly bowing in front of the ambassadors. He was extremely polite and courteous. They were the ones who would select the fighters for the Great Competition, he had to be polite to them. After all, the Great Competition wasn't only about Xue Yue, it was also about the Dragon Mountain Empire.

"Well, the ambassadors and the seniors of the Cosmic Pavilion, like me, must be very curious to know who that person is? You postponed the banquet because of him and even now he's late!" Said Feng Chen in a low voice while sounding annoyed.

"I am curious too. Is it the first of the eight high-officials, the crown prince Duan Wu Dao? But if it was him, you wouldn't be sitting there." Said Feng Chen mockingly.

Feng Chen was the second strongest envoy of Tian Feng. He had heard about Duan Wu Dao a long time ago and knew that Duan Wu Dao was the strongest of the eight high-officials. The strongest from the seven envoys of Tian Feng hadn't come this time.

When Duan Wu Ya heard this, he said in a calm and indifferent way: "The first of the seven envoys of Tian Feng hasn't come, so

my brother obviously wouldn't bother to come either."

Duan Wu Ya stupefied the envoys of Tian Feng. He was quite aggressive! His simple sentence meant that Duan Wu Dao wasn't going to bother himself for Feng Chen.

"I have heard that the princess of Xue Yue, Duan Xin Ye Her Highness, is extremely beautiful like a goddess. Besides, she is old enough to marry but still doesn't have a husband. Look at us, envoys of Tian Feng, any of us will happily accept her." Said the seventh envoy which made many wealthy and noble young men from Xue Yue grow angry. The people from Tian Feng wanted to humiliate their princess!

"My sister already has someone in her heart, if there is an opportunity, I will introduce him to you." Said Duan Wu Ya while remaining calm.

At that moment, the sound steps filled the atmosphere. Duan Wu Ya and the others were all extremely strong cultivators, they could all hear the footsteps approaching, as they looked to see who was approaching.

"Brother, who wants to see me?" Said a gentle voice at that moment. Immediately after, a young woman appeared. She looked graceful and elegant, there was nothing covering her face so everybody could see her beauty, they were astonished. They hadn't thought that the princess of Xue Yue would be so beautiful.

But they also felt upset, because there was a young man by her

side, and he looked extremely close to her, they were even holding hands.

“Lin Feng!”

When the people of Xue Yue saw Lin Feng, they were shocked. Lin Feng had come with the princess, besides, it seemed like they were very close.

Immediately after, they saw Duan Xin Ye hug Lin Feng closer to her. Then they moved towards the pavilion together. Everybody was astonished.

Duan Xin Ye had surprisingly come with Lin Feng and it seemed like they were lovers!

Since when were Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye together!? Wasn't there a pure and holy woman, who looked like a celestial being, by Lin Feng's side already?

Many people looked upset when they saw Lin Feng. He had too much luck with women! All the women around him were gorgeous. Meng Qing looked like a celestial being, pure and holy, and Duan Xin Ye looked like a goddess under the moonlight.

Chapter 470: Toast!

Was that seat next to Duan Wu Ya reserved for that young man who had come with Duan Xin Ye?

At that moment, Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye were slowly walking towards the pavilion. Lin Feng smiled at Duan Wu Ya and said: “Sorry for making you wait.”

Duan Wu Ya looked surprised, he hadn’t thought that Lin Feng would come with Duan Xin Ye. He was, of course, happy to see it.

“We didn’t wait for too long, hurry up and sit.” Said Duan Wu Ya while pointing at the seat next to him. He was talking to Lin Feng in an extremely polite manner which stupefied all the people from Xue Yue.

That seat wasn’t for Duan Xin Ye, it was for Lin Feng! Duan Wu Ya was postponing the banquet because of... Lin Feng?

“Xin Ye, why are you not greeting your brother? And why didn’t you tell me that you were coming? In that case, you can sit with Lin Feng on his lap.” Said Duan Wu Ya while smiling. Many people were extremely upset and looking at Lin Feng with jealousy. It seemed like Duan Wu Ya accepted Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye’s relationship.

Actually, at Xiangjiang Lake, things changed once everyone knew of Lin Feng’s status. Those wealthy and noble people who had always despised Lin Feng, thinking of him as an insect, used to

think that he had no right to sit with them but things quickly changed. Duan Wu Ya had prepared a better seat for him than the ones he had prepared for any of them. Besides, the beautiful princess would sit on his lap, if they weren't jealous of Lin Feng, it would be strange!

Lin Feng didn't feel proud or arrogant at all though. He walked to the seat Duan Wu Ya had shown him and sat down with Duan Xin Ye. Everybody felt even more envious and jealous when they saw his actions.

The people from Dragon Mountain and Tian Feng looked at Lin Feng in a strange way. The banquet had been postponed because of him.

Behind the envoys of Tian Feng, there was a person who continued staring at Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye. They were looking at Lin Feng in a strange way. Lin Feng.....

As if Duan Xin Ye had felt something, she looked at that person and saw it was a woman, she was beautiful and looked alluring. She was stupefied and suddenly waved at her.

That woman was the one who had left Lin Feng, Lan Jiao. When Lan Jiao saw Duan Xin Ye's smile, she was shocked and forced a smile. Immediately after, she glared at Lin Feng. No wonder Lin Feng was never interested in her, apart from Meng Qing, there was another beautiful woman by his side, besides, she was a princess.

Lin Feng also glanced at the crowd. The three most important

people seemed to be two middle-aged men and a young man. All of them looked introvert and unfathomable. Besides, in front of him, there were seven people. Feng Chen and the other envoys of Tian Feng. All of them were glowing with power and strength. Dangerous lights were twinkling in their eyes when they looked at Lin Feng.

The six envoys from Tian Feng were all very strong and undoubtedly talented. Amongst all of that group, Lan Jiao was the weakest.

Besides, there was Yue Tian Ming, Wu Qing, two people from the Yu Clan, Yu Qin and Yu Jian, there was also the high-official Luo Xue who all sat below Lin Feng. The other high-officials were Duan Wu Dao, Duan Wu Ya and Chu Zhan Peng who was now dead. Those eight were the high-officials of Xue Yue. Yu Qin was the fifth high-official, Yu Jian was the eighth, Luo Xia was the seventh and since Chu Zhan Peng had died, the sixth position was unoccupied.

Under the officials, there was Yun Fei Yang as well. Even though he had always been unknown, he had shown his strength against She Qiong. If Yun Fei Yang fought against Luo Xue, Luo Xue would definitely lose.

The powerful cultivators were the protagonists of the banquet so they had been attributed the best seats.

Besides, there were also some wealthy and noble people from Xue Yue, for example Duan Tian Lang.

“Now that we’re all here, let’s begin our banquet. Ladies and Gentlemen, let us toast the two lordships from Dragon Mountain have come here, they travelled over thousands of miles to reach Xue Yue.” Said Duan Wu Ya in an extremely polite way while raising a glass of alcohol. Everybody raised their glasses one after the other and looked at the people from Dragon Mountain. Whether it was people from Xue Yue or Tian Feng, none of them were willing to offend people from one of the three empires.

“Our second glass is dedicated to an eminent person joining us from Tian Feng.” Said Duan Wu Ya while raising another glass before downing it. He was clearly talking about Feng Chen.

“Duan Wu Ya, dear prince, you are too polite!” Said Feng Chen while smiling and downed his glass as well.

“Even though the crown prince, the highest of the eight high-officials of Xue Yue, isn’t here today, it is still an honour for us to meet such incredible geniuses. This glass is for them!” Said Feng Chen. Feng Chen was a prince as well, he understood that he needed to be courteous and polite to Duan Wu Ya in return. Duan Wu Ya had raised a glass to him so he had to return the gesture.

“The first of the seven envoys of Tian Feng isn’t here either, but he is probably practicing his cultivation and getting ready for the Great Competition of Xue Yu, my brother is the same. On the day of the Great Competition, my brother will be present.” Replied Duan Wu Ya.

The first of the seven envoys of Tian Feng and the first of the eight high-officials of Xue Yue would definitely participate in the

Great Competition of Xue Yu, they didn't have to be selected, they already stood at the top of their respective country.

If the two most outstanding disciples of those two countries didn't participate, who would?

“What is Duan Wu Dao's current cultivation level?” Asked someone at that moment. It was a young man sitting on one of the important seats. Everybody looked at Duan Wu Ya when they heard him, they all wanted to know how strong Duan Wu Dao had grown.

Duan Wu Ya looked at that young man, it was a young man from the Dragon Mountain Empire, he had come with the ambassadors which meant that that young man was probably extraordinarily strong. He had probably come to Xue Yue, just like those from Tian Feng, to measure his strength against the other potential candidates for the competition.

“I'm not sure what my brother's cultivation level is. Of course, he is much stronger than me.” Replied Duan Wu Ya in a courteous tone.

“Well, can you estimate his strength? Approximately?” Asked the person again. He seemed very interested in Duan Wu Dao.

In fact, in the Dragon Mountain Empire, many people had already heard of Duan Wu Dao's name because Duan Wu Dao had already visited in the past and had fought against cultivators from the Dragon Mountain Empire. Each time, he won.

But seeing Duan Wu Dao was very difficult, only those who had the strength to fight against him could meet with him.

“I would say..... Seventh Xuan Qi layer or possibly above.” Said Duan Wu Ya while smiling which made the person frown. Seventh Xuan Qi layer?

Everybody was sighing with amazement. Seventh Xuan Qi layer... That was already amazing. Duan Wu Dao’s strength was, as expected, terrifying.

But when people thought of what had happened at Xiangjiang Lake, they slightly shook. Duan Wu Dao had attacked the Luo Xia Sect and none of them were able to avoid his attack. He had easily killed people who angered him. He was as rumoured, extremely aggressive and would not show mercy.

“The first envoy of Tian Feng has also broken through to the seventh Xuan Qi layer.” Said someone from Tian Feng at that moment as if he was trying to prove something.

“I believe you, this is nothing surprising!” Said Duan Wu Ya while laughing.

“Why try to compare people who are not here today. Duan Wu Ya, you should introduce the person sitting next to you, the one we’ve waited so long for. Is he the second strongest cultivator of Xue Yue after Duan Wu Dao?”

The envoys of Tian Feng were looking at Lin Feng in an aggressive way. They were all nobles and had been forced to wait for Lin Feng for such a long time. On top of that, the beautiful woman was lying in Lin Feng's arms, they were jealous. Therefore, they couldn't help but provoke him and see what he was made of.

“Alright, since you're interested, I will introduce him.” Said Duan Wu Ya while smiling and laughing. “He is my sister's lover.”

Duan Wu Ya had said it without hesitation making Duan Xin Ye's face turn red. She lowered her head and hid her smile. She was so beautiful that everybody was fascinated by her beauty. People were even more jealous of Lin Feng when they saw her reaction.

“You've probably all heard of the four outstanding cultivators which shook the entire country of Xue Yue eighteen years ago, right?” Asked Duan Wu Ya to the crowd.

The people from Dragon Mountain slightly nodded and said: “Back then, Ren Hou, His Highness and the three others weren't only famous in Xue Yue. In the Dragon Mountain Empire, they were extremely famous for their fighting prowess, especially His Highness. Such geniuses only appear once every hundred years. Some of our incredibly outstanding geniuses from Dragon Mountain are still inferior to them.”

Lin Feng was calmly listening to them. Duan Ren Hou was surprisingly considered a powerful cultivator in Dragon Mountain as well. His strength was probably incredible!

Chapter 471: Life at Stake!

“Of course, the three other outstanding cultivators, Yue Meng He, Zhuge Wu Qing and the other whose name is unknown, were all outstanding. Those four people all were very rare talents.” Said the ambassador which made people from Xue Yue grow proud, after all, those four geniuses were from Xue Yue, just like them.

At that moment, Xue Yue seemed much better than Tian Feng to the people of the empire.

“Ambassador, you know so much about my country! You’re incredible!” Said Duan Wu Ya making a polite remark.

“No, I don’t.” Said the ambassador while shaking his head. “Such geniuses are known everywhere. Once someone has shown their strength in the Great Competition of Xue Yu, they quickly become famous in the entire region of Xue Yu, and even in other regions of the world as everybody spreads their stories.”

Many people’s eyes were shining, they were eager to become famous.

“Could it be that Lin Feng has something to do with those four outstanding cultivators?” Asked the ambassador while smiling and looking at Lin Feng.

Duan Ren Hou was a member of the Imperial Clan, he could only be related to Duan Wu Ya and Duan Wu Dao, but not to Lin Feng. However, Duan Wu Ya had mentioned those people while

introducing Lin Feng. It was easy to guess a few implications from this. Lin Feng must be related to one of the three other outstanding cultivators.

Duan Wu Ya smiled and said: “Lin Feng is the son of two of those outstanding cultivators: Yue Meng He and the one who was unnamed, Lin Hai.”

“What?” The ambassador was astonished. Two of those four outstanding cultivators had had a son together? He didn’t know this story.

“No wonder, in that case, the proverb should be “like parent, like son”. Lin Feng’s parents are geniuses so he is probably a genius too.”

“He has the strength of the third Xuan Qi layer, approximately, so what? He’s a weakling.” Said someone on the side of the people from Tian Feng. Everybody in the pavilion looked at the person.

“You’re sure he has only broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer?” Asked the seventh envoy of Tian Feng. He could determine other cultivators’ strength and he thought that Lin Feng’s cultivation level was too low. Tian Feng brought this person for a reason.

“His cultivation level is no higher than the third Xuan Qi layer.” That person was sure.

“Hehe, I thought that he was a genius, but everybody only gives him face because of his parents. He even made us wait for so long... How shameless. It seems like his parents haven’t educated him properly.” Said the seventh envoy when he heard that Lin Feng had really only broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer. He was surprised, but immediately became rude and arrogant. He was making fun of Lin Feng. It was a rare opportunity and he seized it to humiliate Xue Yue.

“Even though I’ve only broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer, I can easily kill idiots like you.” Said Lin Feng while putting his glass on the table. His voice was cold and detached. When everyone heard Lin Feng’s voice, it was as if time had stopped.

When the crowd heard him, they were stupefied. People from Xue Yue knew how aggressive Lin Feng was and this was no exception. Back when Lin Feng had the strength of the second Xuan Qi layer, he could easily kill people of the fourth Xuan Qi layer, now that he had broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer, what did a seventh envoy mean to him?

But on the side of the people of Tian Feng, everybody was glaring at him with looks of disdain. Third Xuan Qi layer, nothing more... And he dared act so arrogant. The seventh envoy from Tian Feng had broken through to the fourth Xuan Qi layer.

“Since you want to argue, let’s fight.” Said the seventh envoy from Tian Feng in an ice-cold tone while releasing some ice Qi. Lin Feng dared say that killing him would be easy, he had to prove his words.

“The banquet has just started, keep calm and don’t get too impatient. Let’s first eat and drink, listen to some music and dance. Battles can wait. Let’s enjoy this fine moment and the beautiful scene, battling right now would just spoil the atmosphere.” Said Duan Wu Ya while smiling. He was just delaying the battles but not preventing Lin Feng from fighting. He knew that it would be easy for Lin Feng to defeat the seventh envoy. If they first argued and then fought, the defeat would be even more painful for the seventh envoy.

“Wu Ya is right. Let’s enjoy this moment. How come no beautiful dancers have come out for us?” Said the elder of the Cosmic Pavilion. He seemed to be in a very joyful mood.

Duan Wu Ya raised his hand and clicked his fingers. In the distance, some dancers appeared and started to move towards them. First, they were going to eat, drink and enjoy watching the performance. All the dancers looked extremely graceful under the moonlight, their movements were like an illusion.

The women dancers were all incredibly beautiful.

There was one who was playing the zither who was particularly beautiful. She had long and graceful fingers, her fingertips were floating across the strings, just like water.

“Duan Wu Ya knows how to organize a banquet!” Said some people at that moment. Everything looked so pure and relaxing. The moon, the beautiful dancers and the fantastic music, everything was phenomenal. The tension which had appeared a moment before seemed to drift away.

“The one playing the zither is so beautiful. Unfortunately, she isn’t as beautiful as Xin Ye and she also can’t play the zither like her.” Said Duan Tian Lang which stupefied many people: “The princess can also play the zither? Really?”

“In Xue Yue, Duan Xin Ye is one of the best zither players.” Said Duan Tian Lang while smiling which surprised all the people from Tian Feng.

“She’s extremely beautiful, if she could play the zither or dance for me, the moonlight would be pale in comparison with her.” Said the fifth envoy of Tian Feng while looking provocatively at Duan Xin Ye. He looked excited and ignored Lin Feng who was with her.

Duan Xin Ye was stupefied and said nothing. Then Lin Feng coldly glanced at that person and said: “Are people from Tian Feng all so ignorant and rude?!”

Duan Xin Ye was a princess and he wanted her to dance for him, how ignorant!

“The people of the Dragon Mountain Empire and the Cosmic Pavilion are here, the princess dancing for them should be an honour for Xue Yue, there is nothing bad about it.” Said the fifth envoy of Tian Feng. He was using the people of the empire and the Cosmic Pavilion as an excuse.

“I see that you have a sword with you, you should get up and perform a sword-dance, it would be your honour that the people of

the empire and the Cosmic Pavilion watch you!”

“My sword is not for dancing.” Said the fifth envoy in an ice-cold tone.

“The princess is not someone who you can have dance, even if she does dance, it won’t ever be for you. You don’t even know the height of the heavens and the depths of the earth, you don’t even know your status.” Said Lin Feng. The music and the show continued but people didn’t feel relaxed anymore.

“Hehe.” That person laughed and said: “I have practiced sword cultivation to incredible heights, this is the first time someone has asked me to perform a sword-dance, especially a little cultivator who is only at the third Xuan Qi layer. You are just a frog in a well.”

“It is also the first time that I see someone entering the Imperial Palace of Xue Yue and telling the princess to dance. The people from Tian Feng must be exempt from basic courtesy!” Said someone with a smile yet not a smile on his face. It was Yue Tian Ming, who was sitting just beneath Lin Feng.

“Exempt or not, I am sick of wasting words. After the show, I, the fifth envoy of Tian Feng, will see how strong the eight high-officials of Xue Yue are.”

“Who do you think you are to have the authority to talk that way? If someone can talk that way to me, it should be him.” Said Yue Tian Ming while pointing at Feng Chen, the second envoy of

Tian Feng. Yue Tian Ming's eyes looked extremely sharp which made the fifth envoy's facial expression change drastically. That person was extremely strong!

“Don't be impatient.” Said Feng Chen in a cold and detached tone: “Lin Feng said he could kill the seventh envoy easily, let them fight first.”

“Hmph!” Yue Tian Ming smiled in an ice-cold way. They were convinced that that seventh envoy could kill Lin Feng.

“Indeed, Lin Feng said he could kill me easily. Later I will definitely fight against him. By the way, let's put something up as a stake.” Said the seventh envoy.

“What do you want to put at stake?” Asked Lin Feng coldly.

“If you lose, I get to dance with the princess. If I lose, I will perform a sword-dance.” Said the seventh envoy slowly while staring at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng didn't reply for a second and took a sip from his glass. He then put his glass down and said: “What gives you the right to get the princess involved? And do you think that anyone actually wants to see such a shameful sword-dance?”

“Besides, when I bet with someone, I wager with my own belongings, getting the princess get involved is rude and humiliating.” Said Lin Feng in an ice-cold tone. Even if he was sure

to win, he wouldn't put the princess at stake, if he lost and let the princess dance with that guy, what kind of person would he be? And what kind of person would people think the princess is?

“If you want to bet something, put your life at stake!” Said Lin Feng while releasing some deadly energy!

Chapter 472: Drops of Blood!

“If you want to bet something, put your life at stake!” Said Lin Feng. His words were like thunder and made everyone’s hearts pound. They were all staring at Lin Feng. That guy was extremely aggressive; he wanted to have a battle to the death with the seventh envoy of Tian Feng.

The seventh envoy took himself too seriously and thought too highly of himself. What gave him the right to think that he could use the princess as a stake in a bet? He didn’t respect Duan Xin Ye and had humiliated her by proposing it. Lin Feng wanted to kill him.

On the side of Xue Yue, everyone seemed like they wanted to laugh with joy. Even though some of them didn’t like Lin Feng, the seventh envoy had humiliated Xue Yue and their princess. They were rooting for Lin Feng.

The seventh envoy was strong, but he was as strong as She Qiong. That wasn’t bad at all, but Lin Feng, when he had the strength of the second Xuan Qi layer could already kill She Qiong and now he had broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer. Killing that seventh envoy was not a problem for him. If he killed that seventh envoy, it would humiliate everyone from Tian Feng who spoke so arrogantly.

Tian Feng’s people coldly glared at Lin Feng. He surprisingly wanted to have a battle to the death.

The seventh envoy's face looked particularly glum. Even though Lin Feng had only broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer, he was sitting next to Duan Wu Ya which meant that he thought highly of Lin Feng. The seventh envoy understood a principle, when strong cultivators challenged somebody to the death; it meant that they were sure they would win.

“I have broken through to the fourth Xuan Qi layer; I am much stronger than a normal cultivator of the fourth Xuan Qi layer. He has broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer and is sure of his victory, but in reality he can probably only fight against ordinary cultivators of the fourth Xuan Qi layer. I don't believe that he can defeat me.” Thought the seventh envoy. Dangerous lights were twinkling in his eyes. Lin Feng wanted a battle to the death, so he would gladly accept!

The seventh envoy looked at Feng Chen and the ambassadors from the Dragon Mountain Empire, and then said; “Seniors, I have come with you to Xue Yue, we have come here to battle and learn from each other. That person is pushing me too far, he wants to fight a battle to the death against me. Since that is the case, I have to accept.”

“I have no objection.” Said Feng Chen indifferently. He looked at Duan Wu Ya who was remaining silent which meant that he was tacitly agreeing, thus, Feng Chen couldn't refuse. It would have meant that he didn't think the seventh envoy could win against Lin Feng.

The ambassador from the empire looked at Lin Feng and Feng Chen and said indifferently: “The purpose of the banquet was to

find young and outstanding cultivators, the goal wasn't to have battles to the death or see anyone injured. However, cultivators will have conflicts and will wager on battles. If they wager their own lives, nothing can be done. Some cultivators don't fear death."

When people heard the ambassador's remarks, they understood that he was agreeing. The winner would live, the loser would die.

The people of the empire had first gone to Tian Feng; they selected those young and outstanding cultivators and brought them to Xue Yue. They wanted to see who, between the outstanding juniors of Tian Feng and Xue Yue, were the strongest. For the Great Competition of Xue Yue, they wanted to have the most outstanding cultivators of Xue Yue. The purpose of the battles was to eliminate the weakest by process of elimination, if the weaker ones in the group died, it didn't matter too much. At least, the ambassador didn't think it mattered much. Weak cultivators had no value, if they died, it didn't matter to him.

Everybody was well aware of his thoughts but nobody dared to say anything.

"Alright." Said the seventh envoy while nodding solemnly and staring at Lin Feng. He then said coldly: "I accept your challenge!"

Immediately after, the atmosphere was invaded by an oppressive silence.

Because the atmosphere had become too oppressive, the beautiful

girl playing the zither had grown nervous and a string on her instrument broke, bringing the music to an abrupt stop.

When the zither stopped, the dancers also stopped dancing. They were all starting to tremble from fear, they didn't know what to do.

“Go back, it's alright.” Said Duan Wu Ya indifferently. At that moment, nobody felt like listening to music anymore.

The graceful dancers left, just like mist floating in the air.

The seventh envoy looked at Lin Feng, his eyes were cruel.

“Your Excellency wants a battle to the death, I accept!”

The seventh envoy stood up, his silhouette flickered and he appeared on the vast cultivation field. He was extremely fast.

“Come.” Said the seventh envoy while staring at Lin Feng.

People from Tian Feng were also all staring at Lin Feng and the fifth envoy said: “You proposed a battle to death and the seventh envoy is already waiting, but you are still sitting, what do you mean by this? Could it be that you were just talking big? Could it be that you are nothing more than a coward?”

Lin Feng glanced at the fifth envoy, he slowly stood up and

immediately left the pavilion.

“Boom!” He took a step and a strong wind rushed straight towards the seventh envoy.

“Huh?” The seventh envoy frowned and then said while smiling coldly: “As expected, you’ve broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer, but your Qi is much stronger than that of a normal cultivator of the third Xuan Qi layer. However, the third Xuan Qi layer is still only the third Xuan Qi layer. You cannot compete with me, you are doomed.”

The seventh envoy suddenly released a monstrous Qi. He had the strength of the fourth Xuan Qi layer and looked proud of himself.

However, Lin Feng looked calm and detached. He took another step and released a powerful energy which condensed with his Qi.

After releasing that energy, Lin Feng’s Qi became much more terrifying. Only people at the peak of the third Xuan Qi layer could release such Qi!

“Lin Feng really is talented.” Some people from Tian Feng noticed. Lin Feng was very young and the seventh envoy was a few years older than him. However, Lin Feng could already release power similar to the peak the third Xuan Qi layer.

They only saw Lin Feng walk slowly and then an explosion emerged, as the energy burst out towards every direction. The

entire atmosphere seemed like it was invaded by Lin Feng's Qi. It was omnipresent and could penetrate into everything.

Many people from Tian Feng frowned. How was this possible? Lin Feng had only broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer but in three steps, he had released a Qi which could rival a cultivator of the fourth Xuan Qi layer. How scary!

"Energy attack...?" Thought many people suddenly. The omnipresent force and Qi in the air formed into an energy attack, the energy in the air had many different forms.

No wonder Lin Feng was so confident. He had broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer but with his powerful Qi and force, he could easily compete with cultivators of the fourth Xuan Qi layer, however, it still wasn't enough to fight against the seventh envoy.

"It seems like we all underestimated you, but it's not enough to compete with me." Said the seventh envoy while smiling coldly. He took a step forwards and released a sharp energy which rushed towards Lin Feng. It contained an explosive wind which crashed through the air.

The seventh envoy was attacking!

"It's not enough? Alright, I will add some more then!" Replied Lin Feng. He raised his head and started releasing even more sword energy.

His sword energy was extremely sharp and profound, while a dangerous and deadly energy surrounded him.

“BOOM!” The atmosphere started shaking. Lin Feng took another step and everyone’s hearts were racing.

What strong sword energy! What a strong deadly energy!

Lin Feng took another step and suddenly released what seemed like an endless ocean of deadly energy. The people from Tian Feng were shocked and their souls were shaking.

Lin Feng had condensed the energy into a deadly sword which rushed towards the seventh envoy. There was nothing but deadly energy and sword energy surrounding him.

The seventh envoy formed a hurricane around himself, but his wind energy seemed slightly weaker than before. Those terrifying sword and deadly energies were slowly tearing away at his wind energy.

Suddenly, the seventh envoy was terrified. Lin Feng was way too frightening. His deadly sword was definitely going to lacerate the hurricane and kill him.

“I can’t keep moving forwards.” Thought the seventh envoy as he stopped, then he immediately started to retreat.

However, the sword had already reached its target, it was

dazzling.

“Oh no...” Many people from Tian Feng suddenly stood up. They were shocked. They only saw Lin Feng’s sword streak through the sky and the hurricane start to fade, then they noticed the seventh envoy again.

“There are drops of blood!”

There was blood dripping from the seventh envoy’s body, it was dripping onto the ground. The red blood was glistening under the moonlight.

“Since you wished to battle to the death, I granted your wish.” Said Lin Feng whose voice resonated through the atmosphere around Duan Wu Ya’s residence. Lin Feng had already turned around and was heading back, the seventh envoy was behind him and his body was slowly collapsing. He was dead!

Chapter 473: Fight?!

The seventh envoy had died.

Lin Feng had killed him with a single attack.

Even though the people from Xue Yue had anticipated it, they were still astonished.

Lin Feng's strength was, as expected, terrifying. He was able to kill a cultivator of the fourth Xuan Qi layer in one attack, besides, they all understood that Lin Feng hadn't used his full strength.

The people from Tian Feng were absolutely astonished. They fixedly stared at Lin Feng and at the corpse on the ground.

The seventh envoy from Tian Feng was still a young man and was extremely strong, he had arrived in Xue Yue for a banquet, to enjoy food and alcohol, but he lost his life instead. He hadn't even made it to the Great Competition and was already dead... He was killed by someone from Xue Yue.

Xue Yue and Tian Feng were countries under the jurisdiction of the Dragon Mountain Empire, so they were eternal rivals. A short time before, both sides had been very aggressive towards the other. They both believed that their countries fighter would win. However, Lin Feng killed him with one attack which was like pouring a bucket of cold water to the people from Tian Feng. They were all pulling a long face.

Lin Feng had surprisingly killed him, without a shred of mercy.

“Xue Yue is indeed a good country with extremely strong junior cultivators. However, my country, Tian Feng, came to Xue Yue with nothing but politeness and courtesy, yet surprisingly, you dare to kill one of our fighters. I hope that you can explain yourself.” Said the fifth envoy in an ice-cold tone while staring at Lin Feng.

“Eeehhh...” The people from Xue Yue were gobsmacked. A moment before, they had accepted the terms of battle and now that the seventh envoy was dead, they wanted an explanation? Ridiculous!

“You’re just shameless trash, you deserve no face at all!” Said Lin Feng towards the fifth envoy. Then, he joked: “Could it be that the geniuses of Tian Feng can’t accept defeat and are just a bunch of sore losers?”

“Of course, I am indeed sorry, it must have been very difficult for a country like Tian Feng to raise the seventh envoy, killing him so quickly was inappropriate.” Joked Lin Feng again while laughing which shocked the people from Tian Feng. Lin Feng was saying that it was difficult for Tian Feng to raise the seventh envoy, but it was extremely easy to kill him, he was mocking their strength.

“Maybe, but he was an exception.” Said the fifth envoy, refusing to lose out. He obviously wasn’t going to admit that the seventh envoy was in the wrong and overestimated his own power.

“If he was an exception, you are free to prove me wrong. Same rules, a battle to the death, put your life as the stake if you are so confident.” Said Lin Feng while looking at the fifth envoy. He was calmly challenging the envoy.

In Xue Yue, the eight high-officials were comparable with the seven envoys of Tian Feng. It was a national ranking for both countries. Lin Feng was assuming that the fifth envoy of Tian Feng, even though he was probably extremely strong, he wouldn't be stronger than Duan Wu Ya. He was probably at the same strength as the fifth or sixth high-official of Xue Yue, which meant that he would only be as strong as Yu Qin or Chu Zhan Peng, whom he had killed.

Chu Zhan Peng's strength was already clear to Lin Feng. Concerning Yu Qin, Lin Feng didn't know exactly how strong he was, but he wasn't scared of him.

Lin Feng was challenging the fifth envoy because he made impertinent remarks, but also because he wanted to measure his own strength and push himself forward. Battles to the death were extremely beneficial for him. Challenging the fifth envoy would force Lin Feng to use all of his strength. If he lost, he would die, such battles forced out his hidden potential.

No one knew what to say. Lin Feng had just killed the seventh envoy and was surprisingly challenging the fifth one... And on top of that, he was asking them to wager their lives. How aggressive!

Those who were sitting on the main seats were also watching Lin Feng, they all had radiant smiles, that young man was very interesting!

Duan Wu Ya thought highly of Lin Feng, and Lin Feng had also obtained the princess' heart. Lin Feng was surrounded by incredible personage and was also the son of two of the most amazing cultivators of Xue Yue, Yue Meng He and Lin Hai. His parents had rare talents, their son wouldn't differ much from them. His strength was clear to everyone.

Besides, Lin Feng's fighting style surprised the people from Tian Feng.

They were able to determine that Lin Feng was really at the third Xuan Qi layer, but during the battle, with each step, his energy grew stronger and more powerful, borrowing energy from the atmosphere. Lin Feng had a deep understanding of energy and forces, which clearly showed in his previous attack.

He released sword Qi which invaded the entire atmosphere, it didn't condense into a sword, instead it took the shape of a sword without condensing, as if the energy was a formless sword.

Lin Feng had taken force and energy from the atmosphere and condensed it into his own energy, he released a powerful deadly energy and a powerful sword Qi which he used to form an energy attack. That energy attack rushed through the air and killed the seventh envoy with ease.

Lin Feng's strength wasn't clear, it was unexplainable and unfathomable. Some people have even suspected that he had broken through to a mysterious cultivation dimension, the earth fusion dimension. It would explain how he would have been able to release a power equivalent to the fourth Xuan Qi layer, while still being at the third Xuan Qi layer,

Another battle to the death... Lin Feng was challenging the fifth envoy while looking calm and unperturbed. Could Lin Feng be so fearless if he wasn't sure of his victory?

They couldn't see through Lin Feng.

The biggest problem was, how would the fifth envoy escape from the position he put himself in.

The fifth envoy was at the peak of the fourth Xuan Qi layer, he was much stronger than the seventh envoy, but he still only had the strength of the fourth Xuan Qi layer. Lin Feng had easily been able to kill the seventh envoy, would he be able to kill the fifth without a problem as well?

"If you like battles to the death so much, I will have one with you!" Said the third envoy at that moment which made people from Xue Yue sneer at him. He was being ridiculous.

"Are you guys going to battle against him one after the other?" Said Yue Tian Ming. "Do you think that we, cultivators from Xue Yue, will sit here quietly?"

“If you want to fight him one after the other, we will also fight, we can ask the ambassadors to organize the battles for us.”

When people from Tian Feng heard Yue Tian Ming, they remained silent. Yue Tian Ming also thought that those people were being extremely rude. The third envoy wanted to fight against a cultivator of the third Xuan Qi layer, that wasn't a fair challenge.

“The cultivators from Tian Feng are just shameless bastards. I haven't seen a single outstanding cultivator on their side, but they are experts at flapping their mouths. They're just a bunch of cowards with big mouths. HA! These envoys dare to regard themselves as infallible...”

Lin Feng slowly moved back to his seat. Everyone saw Duan Xin Ye look towards him in a soft and gentle way while raising her glass in his direction.

Lin Feng had refused to get her involved and use her as a wager. Because the seventh envoy had dared to ask such a thing, Lin Feng killed him. Duan Xin Ye was moved by the sentiment.

Lin Feng attached a great deal of importance to such things, proving that he cared for her which made Duan Xin Ye happy.

Of course, because Lin Feng had just killed the seventh envoy, the banquet wasn't as lively as it once was. Everybody had abruptly stopped their conversations and silence invaded the air. Everyone in the pavilion had different expressions on their faces, they were

all thinking different things, but nobody said a word.

Chapter 474: Sword Intent!

“Everybody, why the long faces! Being able to sit and drink together is rare. Let’s make new friends and be merry!” Said one of the ambassadors while smiling when he saw that the atmosphere was tense.

“I forgot to tell everyone my name, my name is Ruo Lan Shan.” Said the ambassador while raising his glass and then continued: “Being able to meet the eminent people from your two countries is an honour for me! Cheers!”

Ruo Lan Shan raised his glass and everybody, out of respect, did the same.

“On my left is an elder of the Cosmic Pavilion, his name is Yao Tian Shu, the one to my right is an outstanding young cultivator from the empire, his name is Jian Chen. You should speak with them and exchange your thoughts and ideas about cultivation.”

Yao Tian Shu and Jian Chen slightly nodded at the people in the pavilion.

“Alright, Wu Ya, you should bring the zither players and dancers back. It’s good to enjoy the arts.” Said Ruo Lan Shan while smiling. Duan Wu Ya slightly nodded and waved at some servants in the distance. A short moment after, another group of dancers arrived with another woman to play the zither.

Unfortunately, many people didn’t feel like enjoying the show.

At that moment, every person from Xue Yue and Tian Feng looked tense.

Yun Fei Yang grabbed his glass and walked towards where Lin Feng was seated. He then raised his glass in front of Lin Feng without saying anything, he just continued smiling.

“Last time, I forgot to say thanks. Let’s drink together.” Said Lin Feng respectfully. He then immediately downed his glass. Yun Fei Yang smiled and did the same.

“It’s nothing, don’t mention it. You have offended quite a lot of people and must have things to do so I won’t waste your time.” Said Yun Fei Yang while laughing and then went back to his seat.

Yun Fei Yang had just started walking away when Feng Chen arrived by Lin Feng’s side, he passed by Yun Fei Yang but didn’t say a word.

“Today, I am able to see a genius whose talent is extremely rare. You killed my seventh envoy, congratulations.” Said Feng Chen while smiling towards Lin Feng. He was saying nice things but in reality, his words were empty. He wasn’t showing his real face, he was actually furious on the inside. He was very good at hiding his emotions which made Lin Feng sigh with exasperation. People who were born into nobility with a silver spoon in their mouths were extremely exhausting to understand.

Feng Chen actually wanted to kill Lin Feng, but he hid it behind a gentle smile, which made Lin Feng look at him with new eyes.

“The seventh envoy was foul, his mouth only spewed shit. That kind of person is a humiliation for you and your country, fortunately, I killed him so your country doesn’t need to worry about him losing your face.” Said Lin Feng while smiling as if he had done him a favour by killing the seventh envoy.

“Oh, we should be grateful to you then?” Said the third and fifth envoys while walking towards him. Their voices were cold. Besides, they released a faintly discernible deadly energy which pricked at the skin.

When Lin Feng sensed the energies against his body, he smiled coldly and also released some deadly energy which pierced back towards them.

“Kacha, Kacha!”.

The glasses of the third and fifth envoys broke in their hands and the alcohol splashed all over them. They slightly closed their eyes when their glasses broke, as alcohol splashed over their faces.

They were shocked and remained motionless, like statues. At the same time, they stretched their hands up and wiped the alcohol from their faces and then glared at Lin Feng.

“Drink! Why be so serious? The glasses couldn’t handle our immense power.” Said the third envoy. The crowd looked at them, it seemed like their glasses were broken because they gripped with too much power. However, they released an oppressive energy

which targeted Lin Feng and he counterattacked, which was why the glasses broke, they were actually surprised Lin Feng targeted their glasses.

“Lin Feng doesn’t even intend on being polite.” They thought.

Lin Feng had immediately shattered their glasses and made them lose face, they were covered in alcohol, like a drunkard. He was too aggressive. The third and fifth envoys hadn’t thought Lin Feng would be so aggressive.

Of course, they had provoked Lin Feng first. Lin Feng wasn’t being arrogant, he was only responding to their provocation. He wasn’t going to let such detestable people bully him. Those two had secretly released their energy which attacked him, which was clear provocation. Besides, his counter was brilliant!

“The alcohol is quite strong...” Said the third envoy while licking his lips. His voice was husky. His face revealed a furious expression, he couldn’t hide his emotions well. Lin Feng had thoroughly humiliated him.

The fifth envoy was fixedly staring at Lin Feng while releasing his Qi.

“Haha” Duan Tian Lang walked over to Lin Feng, the third and the fifth envoy, and raised his glass. He then said while smiling: “Don’t be offended. The seventh and fifth envoys have been offended by Lin Feng killing the seventh, but Lin Feng cares about the princess, he needed to defend her honour. I hope that you can

understand.”

“Besides, Lin Feng killed the seventh envoy because his actions were rude and he humiliated the princess. If someone stronger than Lin Feng humiliated the princess, he would act the same way and attack them, that’s his temperament.”

When Lin Feng heard Duan Tian Lang speaking as if they were friends, he looked at him in an ice-cold way.

“Since when are we friends?” Said Lin Feng indifferently. He then added: “Get lost!”

No one knew what to do, Lin Feng was not being courteous at all!

Duan Tian Lang didn’t seem to care. His son was killed by Lin Feng, so losing face didn’t matter to him anymore. He had only one goal left; to kill Lin Feng at any cost.

“What a vicious and sly person.” Thought Lin Feng. He was fixedly staring at Duan Tian Lang.

Duan Tian Lang was just smiling naturally as if there was no enmity between them as he moved away. However, he had already said what he wanted and the third and fifth envoys had perfectly understood his meaning.

Everything would come back to the princess.

If someone offended the princess, even if that person was much stronger than Lin Feng, Lin Feng would fight them.

The third and fifth envoys smiled and moved back to their seats. Feng Chen then moved over to Duan Tian Lang and they started talking like they were old friends, which was extremely strange.

At that moment, another two people were walking towards Lin Feng which surprised him. One of them was Lan Jiao, the other one was surprisingly Jian Chen, the young man from the Dragon Mountain Empire.

“You first.” Said Jian Chen to Lan Jiao politely.

Lan Jiao was lacking in manners so she just moved in front of him without a word. She then raised her glass and said to Lin Feng: “You’re quite fast, one on the left, one on the right, you kiss one, you embrace the other.”

Lin Feng was stupefied and then smiled wryly. Why was she saying such things?

Jian Chen was stupefied as well. It seemed like Lan Jiao and Lin Feng knew each other. Besides, her words were a bit strange.

Lin Feng had two people by his side... That meant that apart from apart Duan Xin Ye, he had another woman? In that case, Lin Feng was probably very lucky with women. Besides, when Duan

Xin Ye heard those words, she didn't look surprised.

Lin Feng and Lan Jiao raised their glasses together but Lan Jiao didn't drink, she smiled and said: "That toast was not for you."

She then looked at Duan Xin Ye, nodded and said: "Princess, Your Highness, that guy is very lucky to have your heart."

"I am the one who's lucky." Replied Duan Xin Ye in a soft and gentle tone. She then toasted with Lan Jiao and took a sip from the glass. She saw that Lan Jiao looked a bit strange, she looked jealous.

Lan Jiao nodded at Duan Xin Ye and looked at Lin Feng again: "I wish you the best."

Then, she turned and went back to her seat. After Lan Jiao left, Jian Chen sat down next to Lin Feng. He then said: "You're also a sword cultivator?"

"No I'm not. I don't have a sword spirit and I don't practice sword cultivation, I only know a bit about swords, that's all." Said Lin Feng modestly.

Jian Chen shook his head and said: "Your sword skills already contain sword intent... If you are not a sword cultivator, then who is?"

"Intent?" Lin Feng was surprised. Even though he had already

heard about sword intent, he didn't really know what that meant.

“Indeed, sword intent means that a sword seems to have a life of its own.” Said Jian Chen while nodding. He was very interested in Lin Feng. Lin Feng had only broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer but already had sword intent. It was clear to him that by relying on sword intent, Lin Feng could easily compete with cultivators of the fifth Xuan Qi layer.

Chapter 475: The Realm of Perception

Sword intent means that the sword had a life of its own... Thought Lin Feng as if he had just discovered something unfathomable. The sword fusion couldn't be the last step on the path of sword cultivation. He had only broken through to the Xuan Qi layer, he was far from reaching the peak of any cultivation path.

Perhaps sword fusion was only the beginning.

Jian Chen was from the Dragon Mountain Empire, he obviously knew more than Lin Feng. Him knowing much more about advanced cultivation than Lin Feng wasn't very surprising.

"You say that I already have sword intent. What does that mean?" Asked Lin Feng while looking at Jian Chen. At that moment, he sounded modest and humble, he was focusing intently as he asked.

"There are many types of sword intent, there are many ways to practice sword cultivation. Everyone understands swords in different ways, that gives birth to different types of swords. Extremely strong sword cultivators can use different types of sword intent. The deadly sword that you just used contained a powerful deadly energy, that deadly energy is actually sword intent because it contains the will of the sword and its determination to kill."

Jian Chen was sitting with Lin Feng as he explained, he was very interested in Lin Feng. In the Dragon Mountain Empire, there

were many geniuses but Lin Feng already had such a high cultivation level at such a young age. He could already use sword intent, besides, he didn't even know he was using it.

Lin Feng's natural abilities weren't what surprised Jian Chen the most. Actually, Jian Chen had already seen many people as young as Lin Feng who had broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer or higher, but Lin Feng's power of understanding was awe inspiring.

Many people stayed ignorant their entire lifetime and never grasped sword intent. Some people only understood sword intent after having broken through to the Tian Qi layer!

"Determination to kill..." Lin Feng was stupefied. He had heard Yan Yu Ping Sheng say something similar in the past, when he was playing the zither and teaching Lin Feng about deadly energy. Besides, the black sword from the celestial book had merged with the deadly energy. Originally, that was what gave birth to the sword intent.

It seems like I can use two types of sword intent. Thought Lin Feng. When he was at Mount Sword, he had used his Cosmos-Burning Sun skill and had used the power of the sun. He had a breakthrough and understood the three sword attacks at a much deeper level: the scorching sword, the sword of the rising sun and the sword of the setting sun.

Could it be that the evil swords entered my body because of my understanding of sword intent...? Suddenly thought Lin Feng. The seal on the evil swords had broken and the evil swords entered into his body. The number of people who used to practice there was

numerous but the evil swords had chosen him. Perhaps it was related to the sword intent Jian Chen was talking about.

“To what kind of dimension does sword intent belong in?” Asked Lin Feng, he was curious.

“Hehe.” Jian Chen laughed and slightly shook his head. He then said: “You are very curious. Even though you can use sword intent now, it is also the weakest type of sword intent. That is only the first layer of the dimension.”

“Is sword intent divided into different levels?” Asked Lin Feng stupefied. He was getting more and more curious.

“Of course. Sword intent is divided into nine levels. Those who have reached the first level of the dimension can slaughter people of the same layer of cultivation. They can also fight against cultivators of higher cultivation layers than themselves. Besides, if you had reached the second level of the sword intent dimension, you would be able to kill people on a higher cultivation level than you who have also reached the first level of intent. Those who have reached the ninth level don’t even need a sword, they can kill people with a thought. That level means that a cultivator doesn’t need to use a sword anymore and have become selfless.” Said Jian Chen slowly. Lin Feng had discovered a whole new world of cultivation. Those who had reached the ninth level of the sword intent didn’t even need a sword to kill people... How terrifying. Their swords really had a life of their own.

It was the first time that Lin Feng heard such things. Before, he was only trying to understand swords to increase his strength.

“Then, you’re probably wondering what happens after your sword intent reaches level nine.” Said Jian Chen while smiling, he then smiled even more and said: “There is the realm of perception. Those who understand the realm of perception can cut apart mountains and rivers. If they get angry, they can destroy an entire city using their sword and create a bloodbath wherever they please. Those who can do that are mainly people of the Zun Qi layer...”

“Realm of Perception.....” Lin Feng was astonished: “So after sword intent, there is the realm of perception?”

“Not only on the path of sword cultivation, every cultivation path will lead to a different type of perception realm. In the case of swords, no matter if it’s you or me, we are both extremely far from understanding the realm of perception.” Said Jian Chen slowly. Before understanding the realm of perception, people need to first understand the earth fusion dimension. Not just understand a little, they needed to fully comprehend the earth fusion dimension and then surpass it. That requires a monstrous strength, only that could give birth to the realm of perception. Cultivators strong enough to reach that level are usually of the Zun Qi layer.

Zun Qi layer cultivators were monstrously strong... Jian Chen couldn’t even dare to imagine how strong they were in comparison.

A Zun Qi layer cultivator could control a small empire. In the thirteen countries of Xue Yu, they were overlords, they could kill an army of ten thousand by simply raising their hand.

“Realm of perception... Zun Qi layer cultivators...” Thought Lin Feng. He then remembered back to the restricted area of the Zi Government. The extremely strong cultivator there was of the Zun Qi layer, so he must have been on that level.

Lin Feng knew that he was extremely far from reaching that level.

Apart from being able to annihilate an entire city, those cultivators could also transform their blood into a blood spirit and pass it onto their next generations. Provided that the descendants continued to have children, the blood spirit would never be lost and would carry from generation to generation.

In Xue Yue, if the Duan Clan and the Yue Clan had a blood spirit, it was because a Zun cultivator had created a blood spirit for them, which was also why they held so much power in Xue Yue.

It was because a cultivator of the Zun Qi layer passed down his blood spirit to his descendants, nothing more. If there had been a cultivator of the Zun Qi layer alive in Xue Yue, he would be able to reign over it as an overlord.

Even the crown prince of Xue Yue wouldn't want to offend such a powerful cultivator.

“I need to understand my own realm of perception...” Thought Lin Feng. Immediately after he smiled at Jian Chen and said: “Thank you so much for imparting me with your wisdom.”

“Don’t mention it, it’s nothing. I think that you will come to understand those things in the future even without my help.” Said Jian Chen while smiling, and he then continued: “Come, let’s toast to sword intent and to your future! I can’t wait to meet you again at the Great Competition of Xue Yu.”

Jian Chen and Lin Feng downed their glasses and smiled at each other.

Lin Feng was holding his glass with two hands as a sign of respect towards Jian Chen. Jian Chen was much stronger than all those envoys from Tian Feng, but he didn’t have any arrogance. He looked calm and relaxed, he had a calm and prideful aura. Extremely strong and talented cultivators usually weren’t extremely arrogant and obnoxious, but most of them were stubborn with an unyielding personality.

After drinking with Lin Feng, Jian Chen went back to his seat. Lin Feng slowly turned his head and looked at the people from Tian Feng. They were all staring at him with unfriendly glares. Lin Feng felt uneasy being stared at by all of them.

“What a bunch of pesky flies.” Said Lin Feng which stupefied them. They were all looking at him in an ice-cold way. That guy was too arrogant, he was looking down on all of them.

“Duan Xin Ye’s beauty is unparalleled. In Tian Feng, we rarely see such beautiful women. Besides we heard that she can play the zither and can dance, we want to hear her play the zither and have

her dance. That would be such a great show, our trip to Xue Yue would be worth it if we could see her.” Said the third envoy with a smile yet not a smile on his face. He sounded like he was joking, yet he repeated the same mistake of the seventh envoy, making other people grow tense.

He was doing exactly as Duan Tian Lang said. He wanted to force Lin Feng into a fight without having to directly challenge him. He only needed to make jokes about the princess and Lin Feng would immediately fight for her, even if he was much stronger than Lin Feng.

“The third envoy is right, it was such a long and difficult trip to come to Xue Yue, if we don’t see the princess dance for us, it would be such a pity. Wu Ya and Xin Ye, don’t let us down.” Said the fifth envoy who really felt like laughing, he was about to burst into a fit of laughter. Besides, Feng Chen was also smiling while sipping his alcohol, as if he was watching a great show.

He was still thinking about the fact that his seventh envoy had been killed, he wanted to avenge him.

When Duan Xin Ye heard the jokes, she pulled a long face and glanced at Lin Feng.

At that moment, Lin Feng’s face looked ice-cold and he slowly put his glass onto the table.

“Kacha!” Lin Feng slowly released a deadly energy into the air.

“Do you think that’s funny...?” Said Lin Feng in a deep voice. He then raised his head and looked towards the envoys. His facial expression was dark and ruthless.

Chapter 476: Humiliating Each and Every Single One!

Lin Feng slowly stood up and started walking, however, he didn't go in the envoys' direction, which surprised all the people from Xue Yue.

What was Lin Feng doing? Everyone was looking at Lin Feng and wondering what he was doing.

But very quickly, they understood because Lin Feng arrived in front of Duan Tian Lang. He then stopped and looked down at Duan Tian Lang.

Duan Tian Lang slightly raised his head and stared at Lin Feng coldly.

“Duan Tian Lang? Haha.” Joked Lin Feng. He then raised his foot.

Immediately after, a cracking sound spread through the air. Lin Feng smashed Duan Tian Lang's glass and redwood table under his foot.

Everybody was stunned.

Lin Feng was extremely aggressive! With his foot, he was showing just how much respect he had for Duan Tian Lang.

Duan Tian Lang was fixedly staring at Lin Feng in an ice-cold way. He wanted to say something but the words wouldn't come out. After Duan Han had been killed by Lin Feng, Duan Tian Lang cultivated with all his might, he progressed but he found out that even though he had made a breakthrough, Lin Feng had greatly surpassed him.

He couldn't compete with Lin Feng anymore.

In the past, he used to bully Lin Feng. He went to the Yun Hai Sect and used the Chi Xie army to destroy it. He was imposing and domineering! He was incredible!

Back then, Duan Tian Lang used to think that Lin Feng was a nobody, a tiny little insect. Even though he had a high level of talent, Duan Tian Lang still despised him.

Duan Tian Lang had exterminated the Yun Hai Sect and bullied Lin Feng.

After that, in Mo Yue, Duan Tian Lang plotted against Lin Feng and made false charges against him. He had also collaborated with the enemy and had them kidnap the princess and hundreds of thousands of troops had died because of him. Then he blamed Liu Cang Lan for it and had him sentenced to death.

Back then, Duan Tian Lang was still toying with Lin Feng.

However, at that moment, Lin Feng was standing in front of Duan Tian Lang and had crushed his table along with Duan Tian Lang's food and drink.

Perhaps only now, did Duan Tian Lang realize that Lin Feng wasn't the same person he could bully.

At that moment, Lin Feng was already standing in front of him in a majestic and domineering way. He didn't need to think about the consequences anymore, he could just step all over Duan Tian Lang's dignity, just like he did to the table.

Duan Tian Lang?

When Duan Tian Lang thought about Lin Feng's previous words, he realized that Lin Feng had announced that he didn't fear him anymore.

There wasn't a difference in status between them. Lin Feng was Yue Meng He's son, he had the blood spirit of the Yue Clan and was a dual spirit holder... Duan Tian Lang also had a blood spirit but compared to others his wasn't powerful enough, besides his social status wasn't any higher than that of Lin Feng's. On top of that, Duan Wu Ya was on Lin Feng's side and Duan Tian Lang had past enmities with Duan Wu Ya after collaborating with Mo Yue.

Everybody was calmly and silently watching the scene. This was between Lin Feng and Duan Tian Lang.

Even though some people hated Lin Feng, they didn't dare say a word. Lin Feng wasn't afraid of their backing anymore. Maybe if they said the wrong thing and angered Lin Feng, he would just kill them.

“What do you want?” Asked Duan Tian Lang finally opening his mouth and breaking the oppressive silence. However, the atmosphere was still cold and oppressive as everyone watched on.

“What do I want?” Said Lin Feng while smiling coldly. “Duan Tian Lang, you perfectly know how much I hate you, either you live, or I live, I refuse to share the same sky as you.”

“But today, the second prince made great efforts to organize this banquet, if I didn't come and make trouble for you, it's not because I don't dare, it's only for the sake of the second prince. But you, you are ridiculous. I was allowing you to keep your life, yet you provoke me, you revealed your evil intentions and tried to get the princess involved. Duan Tian Lang, do you think that you are smart? Because I don't, I think that you're as stupid as a pig.”

Lin Feng's words were the same as if he had slapped Duan Tian Lang directly across the face. Duan Tian Lang's petty tricks made him look like a stupid pig.

Duan Tian Lang's face turned purple, his heart felt painful but he didn't refute Lin Feng's words.

In the world of cultivation, the strong could speak and the weak would listen. In the past, he had a higher social status than Lin

Feng and was also stronger, therefore, he could humiliate him. Now, Lin Feng had a higher social status than him and was also stronger. Therefore, Lin Feng could stand there and openly insult him.

“Duan Tian Lang, in my eyes, you are a dead man walking, your fate is sealed. It’s more ridiculous to me that you would dare to provoke me.” Said Lin Feng in a cold tone. “Today, after the banquet, I will be coming for you.”

When Lin Feng finished talking, he turned around and left, leaving Duan Tian Lang stupefied. Lin Feng announced that he was going to come for him.

Lin Feng had also said that after the banquet, he would come for him, was he planning to openly kill him?

Duan Tian Lang suddenly felt terrified. Lin Feng wanted to kill him and he wasn’t afraid of announcing it. It was clear to Duan Tian Lang how much enmity they shared. He had destroyed Lin Feng’s sect and repeatedly attacked him. If Lin Feng said he refused to share the same sky as Duan Tian Lang, it didn’t mean that Lin Feng would die, instead it meant the death of Duan Tian Lang. Only one of them could remain alive under the shared sky.

When Duan Tian Lang thought about it, he suddenly felt like he was at his wits’ end. He had thought about the millions of plots he would use to kill Lin Feng, but now he was realizing that Lin Feng could kill him at any moment.

Could he escape?

Trying to secretly escape from the banquet wouldn't work. If Duan Tian Lang escaped, he would be able to live on but would Lin Feng let him go so easily? He would find him sooner or later.

Duan Tian Lang's mind was spinning. He was suddenly regretting that he took action, he regretted that he created enmity between himself and Lin Feng. He was regretting the fact that he influenced people to humiliate the princess.

However, Lin Feng didn't go straight to the envoys, he went straight to Duan Tian Lang who incited them.

Lin Feng didn't know what Duan Tian Lang was thinking at that moment and he didn't care. Now, he was facing the envoys from Tian Feng, who considered themselves as extraordinary.

He walked to the sixth envoy and stopped in front of him. He had already killed the seventh envoy so the weakest of the seven envoys was now the sixth.

"I, Lin Feng, am not one of the eight high-officials, I am not famous across the world. I can't compete with you, the envoys from Tian Feng, you are all incredibly strong and amazing. However, you humiliated the princess, so I, Lin Feng, must fight."

Lin Feng was standing in front of the sixth envoy and speaking slowly. He then continued: "I, Lin Feng from Xue Yue, challenge

you to a battle to the death. Only when one of us dies, will the battle come to an end.”

Lin Feng was making himself seem like a nobody and challenging the sixth envoy to battle.

That move stupefied everyone, they were all staring at Lin Feng.

That guy....

The sixth envoy was also looking at Lin Feng but remained silent, he was irresolute. He was stronger than the seventh envoy but only by a little. Lin Feng was able to kill the seventh envoy in one attack, so he wouldn't fare any better against him.

If he fought, he would probably die.

“Sixth envoy, Your Excellency, do you accept my challenge or not?” Asked Lin Feng when he saw that the sixth envoy remaining silent. Lin Feng, however, was smiling coldly.

The sixth envoy pulled a long face and immediately replied: “I am not interested.”

When Lin Feng heard the sixth envoy's answer, he laughed in an evil way and said something in a low voice, yet it was distinct enough for everybody to hear.

“The seventh envoy was a piece of trash and the sixth envoy is a coward. Two of the seven envoys have already shown their true colours.”

When the people from Tian Feng heard Lin Feng, they all pulled a long face and glared at Lin Feng.

But Lin Feng didn't need them to glare at him. He immediately walked to the next one, the fifth envoy.

“Fifth envoy!” Said Lin Feng while smiling coldly. “I, Lin Feng from Xue Yue, challenge the fifth envoy, Your Excellency, to a battle to the death.”

Lin Feng's voice was the same, he sounded humble when challenging the envoy to battle.

Lin Feng had challenged the sixth envoy but he had refused, so he immediately challenged the fifth envoy.

All the people from Tian Feng were pulling long faces. Lin Feng wanted to humiliate each and every single one of them, he wanted to destroy the reputation of the seven envoys from Tian Feng.

If the fifth refused, would Lin Feng challenge the fourth?

Chapter 477: The Confrontation

The fifth envoy was stupefied, he began to stare fixedly at Lin Feng. It was the second time that Lin Feng was challenging him to a battle to the death.

Would he fight... Or not?

The fifth envoy was shaking. He had refused to fight the first time and had already lost a great deal of face. Lin Feng was challenging him again, could he refuse a second time? Especially now that the sixth envoy refused.

If he refused again, that would be a huge blow, not only to his reputation, but also to the other envoys and their reputation.

They would all be considered as cowards and weaklings, but the most important detail was that Lin Feng had only broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer.

If someone of a higher cultivation had challenged them and they refused, it would be very normal, but Lin Feng's cultivation level was lower than theirs, he was challenging them and they were refusing, so when the rumour spread, they would seem like cowards and weaklings.

“If you're scared to fight, just say so.” Said Lin Feng when he saw that the fifth envoy wasn't replying. It didn't matter either way to him.

“You must have a death wish.” Said the fifth envoy while looking at the fourth envoy to his side. Lin Feng was challenging them one after the other, so his opponents were also getting stronger as he continued, they thought that Lin Feng was definitely going to die if he continued his challenges.

“I refuse.” Said the fifth envoy finally which made Lin Feng smile radiantly.

“You refuse to fight, so stop talking shit. You were so puffed up with pride a moment ago but now you’re running away like a coward. Anyway, you’re just another example of the trash amongst the seventh envoys.”

Lin Feng profoundly despised them after their actions. Then he continued and walked down the line to the fourth envoy.

“I, Lin Feng, can see that today each and every single one of the seventh envoys enjoys talking about their dignity and grandeur, as if the seven envoys are all incredibly amazing, but in the end its filled with weaklings and cowards.”

“I, Lin Feng from Xue Yue, challenge you, the fourth envoy, to a battle to the death.” Said Lin Feng. This was his third challenge.

Everybody remained silent. There was only Lin Feng’s voice resonating through the air. Lin Feng was challenging the fourth envoy this time, would he fight or would he back down?

If the fourth envoy didn't fight, only the second and third envoy would remain.

Everybody was staring at the fourth envoy.

"It seems like he's going to fight this time."

Many people's eyes were excited, Lin Feng was already challenging the fourth envoy, there was no reason for him to refuse.

"He won't fight." Said a clear voice at that moment but the fourth envoy wasn't the one who spoke, it was Prince Feng Chen.

Feng Chen had taken the initiative to prevent the fourth envoy from accepting the challenge.

When the fourth envoy heard Feng Chen's words, he immediately refused.

Lin Feng didn't say anything. He didn't need to say anything, his actions spoke louder than words. The fourth envoy had just refused, he was humiliating himself and the seven envoys.

None of the envoys dared to fight.

Lin Feng then calmly walked to the third envoy, he looked as

calm and serene as before, he then said coldly: “I, Lin Feng from Xue Yue, challenge you to battle to the death.”

“Wheeeewww.....” Everybody was absolutely astonished and they all involuntarily sucked in a deep breath. Lin Feng was surprisingly challenging the third envoy from Tian Feng, how aggressive and domineering!

The third envoy was ranked third but Lin Feng wasn't scared at all, he was challenging him.

All the people from Tian Feng were stupefied. Lin Feng was being way too aggressive. He was going to get himself killed.

The third envoy had already broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer, they didn't believe that Lin Feng, who was of the third Xuan Qi layer, could fight against somebody whose level was higher by two layers.

Lin Feng was courting death.

The third envoy remained silent and stood up, he then looked at Lin Feng coldly and said: “I accept your challenge.” When he finished talking, he released a deadly energy which rushed towards Lin Feng.

“After all those cowards, there's finally someone who accepts.” Said Lin Feng while smiling indifferently. Lin Feng's silhouette flickered and he appeared on the cultivation field outside of the

pavilion, basking in the moonlight as his clothes fluttered in the cold wind.

The third envoy looked over then charged towards the cultivation field, facing Lin Feng. They were both staring at each other.

The wind was howling through the air and both fighters' clothes were fluttering. The scariest part was that that wind seemed to contain sword energy.

The third envoy, just like Lin Feng, used swords.

“I will tell you something, if they refused to fight against you, it's not because they are weak or cowards, it's because they wanted you to die spectacularly under my sword.” Said the third envoy. He had a sword on his back, which he immediately unsheathed. It released a cold energy and then started dancing on the wind.

His sword was dazzling, it looked like it was dancing with the wind, it was magnificent.

However, when Lin Feng saw that magnificent sword, he smiled in an evil way.

“Wind.” His silhouette flickered and he moved like the wind. His speed was miraculous, it was as if he was a fierce gale in the atmosphere. There was no whistling sound, no sound at all, nothing.

Lin Feng's body seemed to be weightless, he looked like he was drifting on the wind, just like a falling leaf, except his speed was incredible. In a flash, he arrived in front of the third envoy.

Lin Feng slightly rose his hand and a single finger pierced towards the third envoy. A whistling sword energy emerged from his finger and it diffused a terrifying sword energy. The sword Qi was extremely sharp.

“Huh?” The third envoy was stupefied, Lin Feng's speed was out of this world. In a flash, he had immediately appeared in front of him.

That finger was filled with a sharp and powerful sword energy. Even though it wasn't monstrously powerful, if it reached the third envoy's chest, it was more than enough to kill him.

“Retreat.” The third envoy immediately moved back. His sword wasn't dancing anymore, it had stopped in midair.

“Pssshhh.....” A subtle sound spread in the air. Lin Feng's finger reached the third envoy and pierced his clothes and left a bloody mark across his chest. He was only struck by the fingertip from the finger attack and it almost killed him.

The third envoy moved his sword back, he was fixedly staring at Lin Feng. How dangerous... He had been careless for less than a second and had been injured by Lin Feng.

“Swords aren’t used to create spectacles.” Joked Lin Feng which stupefied the third envoy. He was surprisingly humiliating his ability to use a sword, saying that it wasn’t used to create a performance!

“I will show you the depths of my sword skills.” Said the third envoy. His sword created a silver flash in the air.

“Star Sword!” Shouted the third envoy in a deep voice. Multiple lights appeared, they looked like stars in the night, that attack looked magnificent.

Lin Feng released a terrifying deadly energy then bombarded the atmosphere with it, the ground and the air started to shake under the pressure. The deadly energy was crashing through the air, it was terrifying.

Sword intent, that deadly sword energy was filled with sword intent.

The crowd was watching the battle. The third envoy was using his star sword which transformed into a constellation of stars, it was dazzling and resplendent. However, Lin Feng’s attack was the total opposite, there was only a terrifying deadly energy.

Lin Feng’s cultivation wasn’t as high as that of the third envoy but his deadly energy made his Qi and force much more powerful. Deadly Qi was rolling all around him and merging with his deadly force.

“Boom!” The third envoy’s sword arrived in front of Lin Feng, but all the stars in the third envoy’s attack started to explode and were devoured by the deadly energy.

Lin Feng took a step forward and another explosion spread through the air. His black deadly energy swallowed the stars until only blackness remained.

Then, Lin Feng’s deadly energy formed into a black sword. Lin Feng’s attacks were becoming more and more terrifying.

“Infinite Constellation!” Shouted the third envoy. His sword streaked across the sky. What seemed like a rain of silver asteroids started to fall from the sky.

“Boom!” Lin Feng dashed forward, his black energy was crashing against the silver lights, annihilating everything in his path.

“Lacerate!” Shouted Lin Feng furiously. His black sword collided with the asteroids of the third envoy’s attack as a storm of deadly energy invaded the atmosphere.

“Nine-Star Annihilation!” Shouted the third envoy. Nine stars formed and shot forward in rapid succession. It was dazzling, the lights illuminated everything. They seemed like they held the destructive power of a supernova.

“Lacerate!” in Feng’s black sword shone again. A rumbling sound

spread through the air and a strong wind filled with deadly energy rushed forward. The third envoy continued to close in on Lin Feng with each attack. He had to kill Lin Feng, but the force of his nine-star annihilation was growing weaker and weaker.

However, at that moment, in the middle of the black deadly energy, Lin Feng slowly raised his left hand, revealing a black lotus. It looked calm and tranquil.

That black lotus followed Lin Feng's movements and moved towards the third envoy. The monstrous deadly energy created a storm as the lotus drifted through the air.

Chapter 478: Terrified!

Lin Feng's black lotus contained a monstrous deadly energy. Nothing could remain in that deadly energy storm, it was annihilating everything.

The nine stars got swallowed by the black lotus and there was no light to be seen. The third envoy was astonished. He suddenly looked terrified. That black lotus was terrifying, it could swallow and destroy anything.

Lin Feng would condense the majority of his pure sun Qi and grim fire to make the black lotus, but after having been to the desert on the other side of the world, he absorbed a lot of crystals from the fire wolves crystals making his sun Qi stronger. When condensing it with his grim fire, his black lotus had become even more terrifying. Therefore, Lin Feng didn't need to use much of his pure Qi reserves anymore. He still had Qi left, but it was already more than enough to defeat the third envoy.

"Retreat!" The third envoy didn't feel like fighting anymore. His magnificent nine-star annihilation had been destroyed by Lin Feng's black lotus so he had no choice but to dodge.

But even though his nine-star annihilation had been destroyed, its force was still pressing forwards with the momentum of his attack, making it difficult for him to retreat.

"Position of the stars, change!" Shouted the third envoy furiously. His sword started diffusing a strange starlight. His speed

was incredible but he wasn't using his sword to attack, instead he was using it to dodge and retreat.

But could he escape? Lin Feng smiled coldly.

“Wind!” In a flash, he drifted on the wind and rushed forwards.

The stars were still floating in the air but Lin Feng had already arrived. His deadly energy enveloped the third envoy's body so the third envoy hastily brandished his sword. However, it wasn't enough to block the deadly energy. In a flash, his sword was swallowed and it disappeared into the blackness. Lin Feng's eyes grew dark, the third envoy lowered his head and Lin Feng's black lotus was already in front of him, it arrived at his chest. He was terrified and desperate.

A subtle sound emerged and the third envoy was astonished when he looked at his chest. Lin Feng's black lotus had just penetrated directly into his chest..

The third envoy raised his head and looked to Lin Feng, he was desperate. He could only see Lin Feng's ice-cold, black eyes.

Was he going to die?

When the third envoy thought about dying, he felt even more hopeless and started shaking. Immediately after, he saw Lin Feng moving back. The distance between them was growing larger, Lin Feng's black deadly energy had already enveloped his entire body

and black flames were consuming his insides.

“Aaahhhhh.....” A shriek filled the air as the black flames engulfed the third envoy and in a flash, the third envoy disappeared from existence.

The crowd all had their eyes fixed on this scene. The people from Xue Yue had seen that black lotus before, but it was much more powerful than the last time they witnessed it.

The people from Tian Feng were all stunned. That deadly black lotus was unstoppable and immediately burned the third envoy to death.

Lin Feng was too terrifying.

Lin Feng turned around, glanced at the people from Tian Feng and then immediately started to slowly walk towards them.

“Step. Step. Step.” The sound of Lin Feng’s footsteps thundered through the silence. Everybody was fixedly staring at Lin Feng. Was he going to continue with his challenges?

Lin Feng walked towards the second envoy and stopped. Everybody was dumbstruck. Lin Feng was going to challenge the second envoy? He was ranked second strongest amongst the envoys from Tian Feng.

“So far, five weaklings and cowards, the only envoy left is you.”

Said Lin Feng indifferently which made people's hearts race faster. Lin Feng really wanted to challenge the second envoy to a battle to the death. He was incredible, his actions were extremely aggressive.

He had challenged every single envoy from the seventh to the second. He had either humiliated them or immediately killed them. He hadn't skipped a single one. Lin Feng was challenging six people, one after the other.

The second envoy was fixedly staring at Lin Feng with a cold glare. He then slowly stood up.

"Alright, that's enough. That's too many battles for today. If you continue fighting, it will damage the existing friendship between Xue Yue and Tian Feng." Said Ruo Lan Shan which stupefied everybody. He was being a hypocrite. Lin Feng had already fought and killed people from Tian Feng, but he was only stepping in at that moment.

After all, the second envoy and Lin Feng were both extremely strong and talented, if one of them died, it would be a shame. Ruo Lan Shan didn't want them to fight to the death, so he had to stop them.

"Lin Feng, that's enough, please go back to your seat." Said Ruo Lan Shan while slightly nodding. Lin Feng glanced at the second envoy coldly. He didn't insist and said something in return.

"As expected, the seven envoys are as amazing as I thought!"

Joked Lin Feng making those people from Tian Feng pull a long face. Lin Feng had humiliated them over and over again.

A moment before, if they were able to kill Lin Feng, they could have regained some of their prestige and reputation. Therefore, when Feng Chen prevented the fourth envoy from fighting, his purpose was to have the stronger envoys fight against Lin Feng, he had hoped that the third envoy would be enough to kill him.

Unfortunately, the third envoy was unable to kill Lin Feng, instead Lin Feng had killed him. At that moment, Lin Feng had gone back to his seat and two people from Tian Feng were dead while the rest of them would be mocked as cowards and weaklings because they didn't fight.

Those six envoys had come to Xue Yue thinking highly of themselves, thinking that they would become famous all across Xue Yue but in the end, they were humiliated. None of them dared to speak another word.

“Mister Ruo, we have already had enough fun tonight, let us end things here.” Said Feng Chen at that moment to Ruo Lan Shan while slightly bowing.

Ruo Lan Shan glanced at Feng Chen. He obviously knew that Feng Chen and the others were not in the mood to continue the banquet, they had been humiliated.

“Prince Wu Ya, what do you think?” Asked Ruo Lan Shan to Duan Wu Ya.

“Feng Chen and the others are probably exhausted. I will have some people prepare their rooms in my palace, as well as your room Mister Ruo.” Said Duan Wu Ya. He perfectly understood why they didn’t want to stay.

“Wu Ya, Your Highness, just prepare a room for Ruo Lan Shan and the others, my people and I still haven’t visited the Imperial City of Xue Yue, so we don’t plan to stay in the palace. We will go for a walk around the city.” Said Feng Chen refusing Duan Wu Ya’s offer. Even though he still had a magnificent smile on his face, everybody knew he was furious. The people from Tian Feng couldn’t continue to act friendly with those from Xue Yue.

The seven envoys were the most outstanding young cultivators of Tian Feng but during that night, each and every single one of them had been humiliated. They couldn’t be friends anymore.

“It’s alright as well. Go and visit the Imperial City, it’s a beautiful city.” Said Duan Wu Ya while smiling winsomely. His smile looked like that of a great winner which made people from Tian Feng feel uncomfortable.

“Alright. Everybody can disperse.” Said Duan Wu Ya while standing up and moving over to Ruo Lan Shan. He then said: “Mister Ruo, I’ll bring you to the palace.”

“Alright.” Replied Ruo Lan Shan while slightly nodding as he left with Duan Wu Ya. Rao Tian Shu and Jian Chen also followed behind them. While leaving, Ruo Lan Shan and Jian Chen glanced

over at Lin Feng.

“Let’s go.” Said Feng Chen and then immediately jumped up in the air. His people left with him without saying another word.

“Xin Ye, let me bring you back to your residence.” Said Lin Feng to Duan Xin Ye who smiled and nodded. She then jumped onto Lin Feng’s back as Lin Feng flew into the air.

After Lin Feng left, somebody was still glaring at his back in an ice-cold way. It was Duan Tian Lang.

But Duan Tian Lang only glared at Lin Feng, nothing more. He didn’t talk to anybody and silently departed from the palace.

In the middle of the night, Duan Tian Lang was flying through the sky at full speed, but he had the feeling that someone was watching him.

“But Lin Feng is with the princess....” Thought Duan Tian Lang trying to reassure himself. Lin Feng had said, during the banquet, that he would come for him after the banquet to settle accounts. Duan Tian Lang felt nervous since that moment... And now, he had the feeling that someone was watching.

But when he turned his head, there was no one around.

Chapter 479: Pressure

Duan Tian Lang's eyes were cautious. He turned around, condensed some pure Qi as he slowed down to a stop as he cautiously observed his surroundings and then moved higher into the sky.

But he still had the impression that somebody was watching him, it felt like he was being stalked by a ferocious beast. He felt extremely uncomfortable.

He frowned and continued to fly away at full speed. After a short time, he abruptly turned around. He spotted a fiery red silhouette which disappeared in a flash.

"I have spotted you already, come out." Said Duan Tian Lang. Even though he was a red silhouette, he didn't really know if he had spotted his pursuer.

A silhouette then slowly appeared from the darkness of the night and rose into the air. Duan Tian Lang was stupefied and blankly stared at that red silhouette.

No wonder that he had had the feeling a ferocious beast was stalking him, it really was a ferocious beast. Besides, it looked extremely aggressive and brutal.

It was covered with bright red flames and had spikes covering its body. It was flying in the air with two gigantic red wings. That ferocious beast looked terrifying, it looked sanguinary and brutal.

A single glance at that beast was enough to frighten a normal person to death.

“It’s a..... Winged Tiger....” Thought Duan Tian Lang. He read about that beast in ancient books. That beast looked like a winged tiger, an ancient ferocious beast.

“Lin Feng!” Duan Tian Lang had come to a realization. When he saw that winged tiger, he obviously guessed that Lin Feng had sent it. Duan Tian Lang had learnt that Lin Feng had a winged tiger when he had killed the people from the Wan Shou Sect.

Lin Feng had surprisingly sent his winged tiger to chase him.

Duan Tian Lang looked behind the winged tiger, but saw nothing, there was nobody else.

Besides, Lin Feng had definitely left with the princess a moment before. That couldn’t have been faked. Lin Feng purposely sent the winged tiger to follow him. It seemed like Lin Feng was determined to kill Duan Tian Lang.

Duan Tian Lang was a bit surprised, he then abruptly started moving as he flew away at his fastest speed.

“Wsssssss....” A whistling sound suddenly spread through the air. Immediately after, Duan Tian Lang heard the winged tiger emit a roar. He was stupefied, he turned around, and his heart started to race.

Lin Feng, Lin Feng had caught up with him.

Duan Tian Lang stopped and said: "What... what do you want?"

Lin Feng said nothing, he just stared at him coldly. From Lin Feng's deep and mysterious expression, Duan Tian Lang had no idea what he was thinking.

The wind was gently blowing across their bodies, Duan Tian Lang felt a slight chill run down his spine, that wind was ice-cold and his heart felt like it was about to stop.

Lin Feng's silence was extremely oppressive. Lin Feng wasn't attacking and Duan Tian Lang didn't know what Lin Feng was going to do, he was just staring at him, nothing more.

Finally, Duan Tian Lang couldn't bear the pressure anymore, groaned coldly and started to leave.

After he started to fly away, there was no sound at all behind him and he could no longer feel Lin Feng's gaze.

Duan Tian Lang was extremely fast, after having flown across a huge distance, he stopped again and looked behind him. He was astonished by what he saw.

Lin Feng and the winged tiger were right behind him. At that

moment, Lin Feng sat atop his winged tiger. He was calmly gazing into the distance, but wasn't even looking at Duan Tian Lang, which was probably why Duan Tian Lang couldn't feel Lin Feng's gaze.

“What a terrifying speed.” The winged tiger had been following him silently, there hadn't been a single sound so Duan Tian Lang hadn't even sensed that they were still behind him. That winged tiger was extremely fast and had no difficulty following behind him.

Of course, ferocious beasts with wings were much faster than cultivators who had to use pure Qi to fly. Besides, the winged tiger was an ancient ferocious beast with gigantic wings which was why it was extremely quick when flying through the air.

“I can't escape...?” Thought Duan Tian Lang. The winged tiger was following closely behind him. He couldn't escape if he tried. Besides, Lin Feng was extremely strong. Would the incredible and majestic Duan Tian Lang die by Lin Feng's hands? Would he die in the hands of someone who used to be a nobody to him?

“What do you want to do?” Asked Duan Tian Lang. Lin Feng wasn't attacking him and was only staring into the distance. The pressure in Duan Tian Lang's heart was unbearable.

Lin Feng remained silent as before, the silence was terrifying. He only turned to look at him. Duan Tian Lang was feeling less and less comfortable, and grew more and more scared.

The ancient ferocious beast and Lin Feng were both staring at him, which created a suffocating pressure.

“I need to go.” Duan Tian Lang flew away at full speed. His pure Qi was whistling through the air as he flew. His speed was incredible.

Duan Tian Lang only wanted to escape from Lin Feng and that damned beast.

Under them, the landscape was changing, they had eventually left the Imperial Palace and continued flying until they were flying over the Imperial City. Duan Tian Lang wasn't looking at anything, he was just running away with all his power.

Finally, after what felt like a long time for Duan Tian Lang, he moved towards the top of a large building.

They had arrived at the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.

The wind was still blowing and Duan Tian Lang rushed towards a tower. He then stopped once he reached the top of the tower. That tower was a holy place for the students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, it was a cultivation tower.

Many people, when they saw the person who was flying through the air, were excited, it was their principal, Duan Tian Lang.

Except, it looked like their principal was trying to escape from

something.

A short moment after, two silhouettes appeared in the sky. The students were shocked, it was a cultivator riding atop a ferocious beast.

That cultivator was a young man, his clothes gently fluttered in the wind, he looked calm and handsome. The ferocious beast looked extremely dangerous, cruel and sanguinary. It was impossible to say to what category that beast belonged.

“What’s going on?” The student were shocked and gazed at the young man and his beast. It was very strange, it seemed like they were chasing the principal.

“It’s Lin Feng! That’s Lin Feng!” Some of the people who had gone to Xiangjiang Lake recognized Lin Feng at first glance.

Lin Feng and his terrifying ferocious beast were chasing their principal, Duan Tian Lang.

Duan Tian Lang fixedly stared at Lin Feng and his ferocious beast when he said: “If you don’t want to fight, why do you keep following me?! What do you want to do?”

The crowd noticed that Duan Tian Lang looked flustered and exasperated. Besides, his voice was trembling and he looked terrified.

Lin Feng replied indifferently: “Why are you so scared of me? Are you scared that I will kill you? In the past, you strutted around like you were majestic and domineering, where has the noble Duan Tian Lang gone?” Lin Feng’s words painfully pierced through Duan Tian Lang’s eardrums and stunned him. Duan Tian Lang’s social status and strength were only jokes to Lin Feng. He was mocking Duan Tian Lang.

At that moment, the crowd understood that Lin Feng was chasing their principal Duan Tian Lang. Besides, their strong and powerful principal was terrified, he was afraid of Lin Feng.

It really looked like a big joke. Their principal was scared of a disciple of the Celestial Academy. However, it was actually always that way, the disciples would always surpass their masters with time, in the academies or sects, this was often the case. Lin Feng had become much stronger than most of the patriarchs and elders from most sects, and even many teachers at other academies. Lin Feng had the power to despise and mock their principal.

Duan Tian Lang remained silent. No words would come out. He didn’t look majestic and domineering anymore.

Those who had sufficient strength could act in a domineering manner, and that was the only case when they had enough strength.

“Whoooosh....” Many people jumped through the air and stood by Duan Tian Lang’s side. They were all staring at Lin Feng with cold glares. They were the strongest teachers of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.

But at that moment, they all looked like they were facing their worst nightmare, Lin Feng.

At Xiangjiang Lake, Lin Feng had proven just how strong he was, but at that moment, his calm appearance, looked even more terrifying. Surprisingly, he was acting aggressively at the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, how arrogant could he be?

Chapter 480: Hope!

“Lin Feng, you’re too arrogant!” Said a teacher while staring at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng glanced at them. Arrogant? He was stronger than them, why would he care about how he acted? In the past, when Duan Tian Lang had taken people to destroy the Yun Hai Sect, hadn’t he acted arrogantly? Duan Tian Lang had killed hundreds of thousands of individuals, had plotted against Lin Feng and created false charges against him, wasn’t that being arrogant?

“Arrogant? So what?” Said Lin Feng indifferently which stupefied everyone. They were only staring at Lin Feng, wanted to say something, but words didn’t come out. What could they do against him? Who here had the power to reprimand Lin Feng?

Duan Tian Lang, alone, couldn’t defeat Lin Feng, maybe there was only a small chance if they all were to fight Lin Feng together.

“Principal, let’s work together and kill him.” Said someone while looking towards Duan Tian Lang. At that moment, five people joined Duan Tian Lang and they were all at the Xuan Qi layer. If they acted together, they might have a chance.

However, Duan Tian Lang remained silent, work together? Kill Lin Feng?

Lin Feng could easily kill people the first few Xuan Qi layers; it was as easy as falling off a log for him. His ancient ferocious beast

could also quickly people of the second Xuan Qi layer.

In the past, they might have a chance to kill Lin Feng if they acted together, but at that moment, Duan Tian Lang knew exactly how strong Lin Feng had become. Therefore he didn't have any hope.

Lin Feng could kill people of the fifth Xuan Qi layer, so it would be no effort for him to kill them all. The strongest of them had only broken through to the fourth Xuan Qi layer; that was all. Lin Feng had even killed the seventh envoy of Tian Feng using a single attack, and he was also at the fourth Xuan Qi Layer.

Duan Tian Lang remained silent which stupefied the middle-aged man who had just proposed working together.

He knew Duan Tian Lang well; he was proud and aloof, conceited and determined. Duan Tian Lang didn't care about killing people, so if they were able to kill Lin Feng, Duan Tian Lang would have immediately seized the opportunity to do so, but he was remaining silent. The terrifying truth was that they couldn't kill Lin Feng.

The atmosphere was silent which was extremely oppressive. The student of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was silently observing the silhouettes in the sky; the situation was extremely tense.

If Lin Feng wanted to kill them all, nobody could stop him. Lin Feng could do it alone, no even counting his beast.

The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue had been created with plans to become the largest sphere of influence, what a joke! They couldn't even deal with Lin Feng!

“You want to kill me?” Said Lin Feng to that person who just spoke while smiling. He was smiling coldly and continued: “I never show mercy to people who say they want to kill me. You are no exception.”

Lin Feng's voice was ice-cold, and the person started to shake.

“Qiong Qi, go deal with him.” Said Lin Feng. The winged tiger's silhouette flickered, its pure Qi was released, and the winged tiger roared intensely. It rushed through the air and attacked. Its two large eyes were filled with an ominous glint.

It was beating its wings extremely quickly as it dashed through the air. The person who had just proposed to kill Lin Feng was at the second Xuan Qi layer, and the winged tiger was a level two Xuan beast. The winged tiger could fly faster than a cultivator, much faster!

That person had only just condensed some pure Qi in his hand when he was forced to punch towards the incoming winged tiger, but the winged tiger only swiped with its sharp claws which landed directly on that person's chest. Even though they had tried to dodge, a deep wound appeared on the person's chest, and it was pouring with blood. It was a gruesome wound.

“Boom!” A monumental amount of Qi appeared in the

atmosphere. There were many people who were condensing pure Qi, causing the energy to become extremely dense. The teachers from the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue were attacking the winged tiger at the same time.

“Whoever dares attack is my enemy, and I always kill my enemies.” Said Lin Feng indifferently which made the teachers immediately stop moving, their pure Qi grew weaker and eventually dispersed.

“Roaaar!” The winged tiger roared violently. The person who had just been attacked by the winged tiger had a deep wound on their chest and looked deathly pale.

But when the ancient ferocious beast saw blood, it would become even more excited, so the winged tiger continued its attacks. It continued beating its wings and moved towards the person like an illusion. The students suddenly realized that the individual’s head had suddenly disappeared. There was only a neck which was spraying blood into the air. Many people let out terrified shrieks; they were panicking.

“How cruel!” The ancient ferocious beast was horrifying. It had immediately beheaded the teacher and was now gnashing the head between its teeth. Everyone’s hearts were pounding brutally.

What surprised them the most was that none of the teachers dared to stop the beast.

Because Lin Feng spoke out, they hadn’t interfered. They could

only watch their colleague get killed by Lin Feng's Winged Tiger. What an absolute humiliation!

Before, they used to think that the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was incredible. However, at that moment, that splendor was being destroyed. The teacher had just been killed by a beast in front of his colleagues, and nobody had dared to move, how humiliating.

It was clear everyone there that strength was all that mattered. Lin Feng was unyielding and was able to come to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue and kill people as he wished. He could threaten Duan Tian Lang who was a member of the Duan Clan, and he could kill the teachers, nobody would try to stop him.

Their principal had accepted the humiliation because he was powerless to do anything. He was trying to escape from Lin Feng who was why he rushed back to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.

The winged tiger roared violently and went back to Lin Feng's side. It looked extremely excited, and its eyes were filled with bloodlust.

Ancient ferocious beasts were always cruel and bloodthirsty by nature. They would never grow docile as their vicious nature passed through their ancient bloodline. Blood would arouse the natural viciousness hiding in their bloodline.

“Duan Tian Lang, don't you think that the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue is ridiculous?” Joked Lin Feng in an ice-cold tone while looking at Duan Tian Lang.

“What do you want to do?” Asked Duan Tian Lang again, what else could he say? He didn’t know what Lin Feng wanted, but he was terrified. He had followed him all the way to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue but hadn’t attacked a single time. It was a terrifying pressure! Duan Tian Lang was shaking from head to toe.

“Are you so scared of death?” Said Lin Feng while smiling coldly. “In the past, when you came and destroyed the Yun Hai Sect, didn’t you think there might be consequences?”

Duan Tian Lang had, of course, never bothered about things like consequences. He had destroyed the Yun Hai Sect, killed all its members except for a few stragglers and the geniuses whom he had taken with him to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. Apart from Lin Feng and the ones he sold as slaves, the Yun Hai Sect had been annihilated, but he would never have thought that one of the survivors would come for revenge.

“Don’t worry. I will not kill you today.” Said Lin Feng which stupefied Duan Tian Lang. Wasn’t he going to kill him?

Since Lin Feng didn’t want to kill him at that moment, what did he want to do?

“How could I kill you now? I still want you to witness the resurrection of the Yun Hai Sect with your own eyes, the same Yun Hai Sect which you once destroyed... And I also want you to see the extermination of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, similar to how I witnessed the destruction of the Yun Hai Sect.” Said Lin Feng

calmly. He then continued slowly: “You thought that the destruction of the Yun Hai Sect meant the rise of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue? But I will show you that the destruction of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue means the resurrection of the Yun Hai Sect.”

When Duan Tian Lang heard Lin Feng, his heart started beating faster. He finally understood what Lin Feng wanted. What ambition! Lin Feng surprisingly wanted the Yun Hai Sect to rise to glory with the destruction of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, just like what Duan Tian Lang had done, but in reverse.

The students at the foot of the tower were astonished. Lin Feng wanted to destroy the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue?

“You will fail.” Said Duan Tian Lang while staring at Lin Feng.

But Lin Feng smiled, he smiled in a particularly confident manner. Was he going to fail?

“You will see, in a few days.” Said Lin Feng calmly. He sounded extremely confident that the Yun Hai Sect would be resurrected.

“Nan Gong Ling and the others who died, they put their hopes and dreams on my shoulders. I was their last hope. I promised this to everyone and especially to Protector Bai.” Said Lin Feng while raising his head and showing his ring to Duan Tian Lang. It meant that he was now the patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect.

The members of the Yun Hai Sect had sacrificed their lives to save Lin Feng. They hoped that Lin Feng would be able to revive the glory of the Yun Hai Sect. How could Lin Feng forget his promise? All those people would have died for nothing!

“The patriarch’s ring.” When Duan Tian Lang saw the ring, he understood that Lin Feng was already the patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect. He suddenly felt strange. Maybe Lin Feng would be able to resurrect the Yun Hai Sect; perhaps it would prosper because Lin Feng had endless determination!

Chapter 481: Eighteen Xuan Cultivators!

Lin Feng was proudly leaving the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue without any obstruction.

Everyone at the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was staring at Lin Feng's back. They felt responsible for allowing Lin Feng to humiliate them. On top of that, he had even killed their teacher.

Besides, Lin Feng had ignored the others on purpose. If Lin Feng wished, he could have killed all of them, even those cultivators who were floating in the sky.

Lin Feng hadn't killed Duan Tian Lang because he wanted him to see everything with his own eyes, the resurrection of the Yun Hai Sect and the destruction of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.

In the middle of the night, a ferocious beast and a cultivator were flying through the sky above the Imperial City. The ferocious beast's fur was bright red and it looked majestic.

Lin Feng was sitting on the back of the winged tiger and his eyes were closed, when he suddenly opened his eyes which contained a cold look.

Lin Feng wasn't the only one who sensed something, the winged tiger roared and stopped in the air. It then glanced around.

A group of pitch-black silhouettes slowly appeared in Lin Feng

and the winged tiger's fields of vision. Those people were all flying in the sky, they had approached silently. They were all cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer.

They arrived in front of Lin Feng and stopped, they didn't encircle Lin Feng but a dazzling blade light twinkled under the moonlight. That sword looked extremely cold.

How cold. At that moment, the atmosphere was so oppressive that it would make people's soul shake.

"Eighteen cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer." Lin Feng glanced around and counted them, there were eighteen cultivators and they were all holding blades. They clearly considered Lin Feng to be a great threat.

"Who are you?" Asked Lin Feng. Even though he didn't expect them to reply, he still asked. He was wondering what social status those people had.

He had offended many people but there weren't many people who could send such a powerful group for him. The Wan Shou Sect or the Yu Clan could send out eighteen cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer but each of these people were blade cultivators... So they couldn't have been sent by the Wan Shou Sect or the Yu Clan, they didn't have that many blade cultivators. Maybe a few great spheres of influence had prepared this group by combining their power.

Besides, there was also Tian Feng, an entire country could, of course, easily send such a group of people. However, how could the

Tian Feng country send so many cultivators over to Xue Yue without notice? Especially sending them into the Imperial City to kill Lin Feng, the government of Xue Yue wasn't stupid, they would have noticed them and intercepted the foreign cultivators.

Feng Chen wasn't foolish, he already had the opportunity to kill Lin Feng, but Ruo Lan Shan was clearly opposed to Lin Feng being harmed. If Feng Chen wanted to kill Lin Feng, he wasn't able to do it so openly.

Lin Feng was wondering who those people were and who had the power to send eighteen cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer.

"We're people who want to kill you." Said one of them coldly. Then, the eighteen cultivators each took out their blades in almost perfect synchronisation which created a clear and melodious sound. Those blades were so bright with blade Qi that Lin Feng had to narrow his eyes.

When Lin Feng narrowed his eyes, those blades flickered and rushed forwards. Blades were moving towards Lin Feng from both his sides and from the front.

Each of those blades wanted to take his life.

"Wind." Lin Feng started to drift freely in the wind. He was extremely agile and unbelievably fast.

The sharp blades streaked across the sky creating a breath-taking

scene.

Lin Feng could only narrow his eyes because the lights from the blades were too dazzling. Those people were not even attempting to kill the winged tiger, they were solely targeting Lin Feng.

At that moment, the blades were surrounding him. Those people had encircled him with only one movement.

A subtle sound spread in the air. Lin Feng's body shook and a sword appeared in his hand as his sword energy invaded the atmosphere.

But he immediately felt a sense of danger around him. He felt like he wouldn't get a chance to use his full strength to fight.

Lin Feng jumped away from the winged tiger and flew into the air. His sword light followed the winds and shot forwards, causing the incoming enemies to retreat.

But others who attacked from other directions, continued their attacks, their twinkling blades rushed towards Lin Feng. An extremely sharp blade energy filled the air and lacerated the atmosphere.

“Boom!” Lin Feng's sword energy collided with the incoming blade energy. The shockwave which resulted from the collision tore through the atmosphere. An incredibly strong wind blasted in every direction. Lin Feng was stupefied.

Those people were all using blades and they were working together, in formation. They were in perfect harmony with each other and it was extremely difficult to find a weak point in their formation.

At that moment, above and behind Lin Feng, there were only blades which were diffusing a sharp Qi towards Lin Feng's body. It seemed like they were not going to give Lin Feng a single second of rest.

A terrifying, deadly energy emerged from Lin Feng's body and burst into the sky. His eyes grew black and emotionless.

No matter who those people were, he would kill them.

“Roarrrr.....”

Lin Feng released his terrifying purple spirit, and a purple lake filled the atmosphere.

His extremely strong soul then emerged from his body and merged with the purple spirit which then started to rapidly transform.

“Huh?” Those eighteen cultivators were surprised when they saw the purple lake because it wasn't attacking them or even surrounding them, it seemed to be spinning and spreading across sky. It invaded the entire atmosphere which gradually became

darker as the purple spirit appeared to block all of the light from the starry sky.

“BOOM!” The sound of a collision emerged in the air. Lin Feng used the force of their attack to propel his body backwards, but they immediately gave chase. Suddenly, the purple lake fell from the sky and submerged them along with Lin Feng, it surrounded them and they were no longer able to see Lin Feng. If they hastily retreated, it would give Lin Feng an opportunity to attack them out of formation.

“How did we end up being surrounded?” asked one of them, they all glanced at the others. there were eighteen of them and all of them had been trapped by the purple spirit.

“Let’s attack together.” Said one of them.

That purple spirit was a threat to them, it had trapped them inside and seemed to be restraining their movements. Suddenly, they no longer had any sense of direction or time, it looked like they were submerged inside a purple world.

When they tried to think clearly, they found out that they couldn’t see any of their colleagues anymore. They seemed to be entirely alone. One of them noticed that he was trapped inside, he was imprisoned.

“Nine Palace Dragon Formation....” Everybody frowned, they, of course recognized that palace, it was an illusion but it wasn’t used to kill people, it was used to imprison people.

Lin Feng was standing outside of the illusion and watching as a cold light flashed through his eyes. He took a step and immediately appeared in front of one of them inside the illusion which stupefied the man.

At that moment, he was directly opposite Lin Feng.

“Tell me who you people are.” Said Lin Feng coldly. The man’s eyes twinkled, but he remained silent.

“If you don’t want to talk, then die.” Said Lin Feng moving like the wind towards the man. In a flash, he appeared in front of his opponent and attacked with his deadly sword, but the man brandished his dazzling blade in return. However, the assassin was alone, could he stop Lin Feng’s sword?

His blade was absorbed into Lin Feng’s deadly energy which terrified him, immediately after, his body was split into two by Lin Feng’s sword.

Lin Feng didn’t even turn to look at him. He took another step and arrived in another purple room. There was a female assassin in that room who was shocked and looked pale.

“Who sent you to kill me?” Asked Lin Feng again.

She stared at Lin Feng and replied in an ice-cold tone: “Lin Feng, I never would have believed that you’d be able to create the Nine

Palace Dragon Formation. You're lucky, but that won't save you next time."

"Even if there's a next time, you won't be alive to see it." Said Lin Feng while running forwards and attacking with his deadly sword. In a flash, she was dead as well.

Lin Feng continued killing those people inside the illusion. All those cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer were dying one by one inside Lin Feng's illusion.

After killing those eighteen people, the illusion disappeared, and Lin Feng was standing in the lonely night sky. He looked like a death god, but he didn't seem proud or arrogant.

He already had an extremely high social status, he was Yue Meng He's son and part of Duan Wu Ya's faction. Ruo Lan Shan had also showed a liking to him, but some foolish people still dared to try and assassinate him. Besides, the eighteen were all trained in a particular formation, so those people probably belonged to a very influential group. The scariest part was that none of the eighteen had revealed the name of whom they worked, even when threatened with death.

That type of enemy was extremely terrifying, and that group must be extremely powerful.

Chapter 482: Thousands of Arrows!

A large number of people followed the Dragon Mountain Empire from Tian Feng and travelled to Xue Yue. During the banquet, Lin Feng humiliated the seven envoys of Tian Feng one after the other and even killed two of them.

During the night after the banquet, eighteen cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer had appeared and had tried to kill Lin Feng with a blade formation, but in the end, they had completely failed. Lin Feng's battle ability was made clear at Xiangjiang Lake. It seemed like something big was going to happen in Xue Yue. People couldn't really describe it, but they knew that something important was going to happen and nobody could predict the aftermath.

Outside of the Imperial City, thousands of kilometres away, something astonishing was happening as well. A certain location was in complete ruins, but the news hasn't spread to the Imperial City.

The strongest sect of the country, the Hao Yue Sect had been completely destroyed.

On that day, ten thousand of Chi Xie armoured cavalry had entered the territory of the Hao Yue Sect and annihilated everything in their path. Blood flowed like a river. The entire sect had been destroyed and the Hao Yue Sect would vanish into history.

Apart from some people who were outside and a few who had managed to escape, everybody was killed without mercy. The entire sect had become a river of blood. The massacre had lasted for an entire day.

At dusk, black crows and ferocious hawks were flying around above the territory of the Hao Yue Sect and sometimes swooping down to eat the dead flesh from the countless bodies. It looked apocalyptic and desolate.

The setting sun reflected on the surface of the blood river, giving off an eerie feel.

At that moment, the troops who destroyed the sect were already on their way to their next location. In the mountain chain where the Hao Yue Sect was, there was a group of people who gathered around to see the aftermath of the attack. Looking at the piles of corpses and river of blood, they felt a chill down in their soul.

This was the world of cultivation, it was cruel and sanguinary. They, of course, knew who those troops were. The Chi Xie troops belonged to Officer Lin Feng from Yangzhou City. Besides, Lin Feng also used to be a disciple of the Yun Hai Sect. In the past, the Hao Yue Sect had participated in the extermination of the Yun Hai Sect, it had been, just like Hao Yue Sect was at that moment, a bloodbath.

Lin Feng had started taking his revenge.

In the past, he was only a very talented disciple from the Yun Hai

Sect, but at that moment, he was already a famous genius in Xue Yue. He, of course, wanted to get his revenge, he hated those who destroyed his sect. The Hao Yue Sect wasn't going to be the last sect on his list though, it was only the beginning.

Actually, the Hao Yue Sect wasn't even a start, the revenge had only just begun.

Thousands of kilometres away from the Hao Yue Sect, there was the Yun Hai Mountain Chain. Everybody in the mountain chain was in a state of full alert. Every possible exit was blocked, except for the one leading to the Black Wind Mountain. Every other entrance and exit was blocked.

The Chi Xie troops had already been there for seven days. During those seven days, no one was able to enter or exit. Only people who were from the surroundings of the Yun Hai Mountain Chain were allowed to leave. It had been evacuated of all bystanders almost instantly.

If they had stayed, they would have died, who would have dared to stay?

Those Chi Xie troops had come to avenge the Yun Hai Sect. If anyone dared infuriate them, they would be courting death.

Around the mountain chain, the Chi Xie troops were calmly waiting. They looked cold and remained in perfect formation while being absolutely silent.

Some people, even though they had already left the mountain chain hadn't left the surrounding area, they were just standing in the distance and observing what was going to happen. They wanted to see if the Chi Xie troops would really go on a rampage.

At that moment, on the peaks of the Yun Hai Mountain chain, everybody was terrified. They were frightened beyond belief.

They had already been encircled for seven days and they didn't know what was going to happen, they might all be slaughtered.

Everybody feared death, some people were more scared than others but in the end, when facing death, everybody would be scared. Not being scared of death was impossible, it was a natural instinct. Besides, they couldn't leave, so they could only wait for death. The wait was driving them insane and many had already lost all hope.

The people who remained were people from the Hao Yue Sect, the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, the Wan Shou Sect and the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. They had divided the entire Yun Hai Mountain and established military bases there. The Black Wind Mountain a good hunting ground which was extremely attractive to the sects, they were all delighted to have access to it.

But at that moment, the Yun Hai Mountain looked and felt like a mountain of doom, they wanted to leave but they couldn't.

Suddenly the situation became chaotic. Everyone tried to run away, they wanted to escape immediately, but the cavalry had

started galloping towards them in perfect formation.

The armoured cavalry had finally started to move after encircling them for seven days, were they going to attack?

Everybody wanted to escape but because of the Chi Xie cavalry, they were all being forced into the same direction. They were being pushed to the centre of a valley by the horses. The troops were forcing them all to gather in the same location.

In the centre of that valley, the people started to pour in by the thousands. They were looking to their right and left only to see more people pouring in from every direction. They were all growing more scared when they noticed this. They knew that those troops were probably going to kill them.

But what could they do? They were surrounded by a powerful army and were clearly outmatched. They had no choice.

In the end, a huge group of people gathered in the middle of the valley. When they looked up to the cliffs of the valley, they could see the Chi Xie troops looking down on them.

They all looked cold and detached and were releasing some deadly Qi as they all reached for their bows.

Many people's hearts were pounding violently. This scene was similar to what happened in the past.

Back then, Duan Tian Lang had come to the Yun Hai Sect with the other sects and had slaughtered the Yun Hai Sect, history was repeating itself.

However, in the valley, there weren't any people from the Yun Hai Sect, the scene looked the same but the positions had been reversed, only those who annihilated the Yun Hai Sect were forced into the valley.

Nobody had ever thought that such a thing would happen.

The atmosphere was deathly silent and oppressive. In the distance, a whistling sound spread through the air. Very quickly, everyone noticed two silhouettes.

It was Lin Feng riding his winged tiger.

His pure white clothes were fluttering in the wind as he looked down towards the valley.

That beast was bright red like fire and had two gigantic wings, everyone was terrified of the vicious beast.

Everybody looked up at the silhouettes in the sky.

However, what frightened people more than the winged tiger, was when they recognised the person riding it.

Lin Feng had come back! He had come to avenge the Yun Hai Sect!

A few years before, he was a low level disciple of the Yun Hai Sect, he had just broken through to the Ling Qi layer. Now, he was like a blazing star in the sky. He had become the Marquis of Yangzhou City, the Chi Xie Marquis, and had a powerful army under his control. He was also riding a terrifying Xuan level beast and had now returned to the Yun Hai Sect with a tremendous power.

If the Yun Hai Sect still existed, Lin Feng's return would have been glorious.

However, the Yun Hai Sect had been exterminated and all Lin Feng wanted to do was massacre those responsible. Lin Feng had returned for revenge.

Lin Feng didn't continue looking down at those people. Instead, he looked towards the mountain chain. He could see all the places he remembered from the past, but only coldness filled his eyes. A debt of blood had to be paid with blood.

He slowly turned his head and looked at the valley, the Stormy Gorge. There was an arena in the centre, the Life and Death Arena.

Lin Feng could remember his time at the Stormy Gorge and the Life and Death Arena.

At that moment, he could clearly remember all those people who had long since died. He could remember how Liu Fei had chased him, he could remember Protector Kong who protected him along with Protector Bai's kind smile.

Lin Feng looked down at the crowd in the Stormy Gorge, he despised all of them. Those people were like vermin in Lin Feng's eyes, he looked at them the same way they looked at the Yun Hai Sect in the past.

Lin Feng slowly rose his hand and in a flash, countless whistling sounds spread through the air which was immediately invaded by a deadly Qi. Thousands and thousands of arrows were shot into the air, aiming directly for the people inside the valley.

Everyone inside the valley was panicking, they were shaking as they saw the cloud of arrows falling from the sky. They all looked terrified.

In that heartless world, people would show no mercy to their enemies. Blood was the only way to repay blood.

Lin Feng only raised his hand into the air and thousands upon thousands of arrows were unleashed into the air!

Chapter 483: The Resurrection of the Yun Hai Sect

In the air, there were countless arrows blotting out the sky.

The people inside the Stormy Gorge raised their heads and saw an endless amount of arrows, they could only stare blankly at the incoming arrows as there was nowhere to run.

“Ssss..... Sssssss....” The cloud of arrows grew thicker and thicker as more arrows were shot into the sky. The sight caused their bodies to shiver with fear.

“Ahhhhh.....” Followed by a sound like rain hitting a roof, countless horrible shrieks started spreading through the air.

The arrows finally fell onto the people inside the valley and the sound of slaughter began. This was part of the cycle of fate, this was their karma.

Besides, that was only the first wave of arrows. After the first wave, thousands of arrows were shot continuously into the air creating a thick cloud. The arrows were endless and unceasing. It was judgement day for all of their sins. The atmosphere was filled with painful cries and the wails of death.

Lin Feng sat on his winged tiger in the sky, looking down at the Stormy Gorge. He looked absolutely expressionless, he had already become accustomed to death and slaughter.

Nobody could remain completely calm when seeing such a tragedy, Lin Feng was no exception but he knew, deep in his heart, that he was doing the right thing. He had to avenge those who were slaughtered trying to protect him.

If, in the future, the survivors went against him for revenge, Lin Feng would understand. This was a consequence that he would have to shoulder for the sake of his revenge. Lin Feng couldn't save everyone from suffering, all he could do was kill his enemies and move forward.

After the third wave of arrows, there was no longer any signs of life within the valley. Their blood had gathered in the centre of the valley to form a lake and the entire ground was dyed red.

“Enough.” Said Lin Feng indifferently and in a flash, the troops stopped firing their arrows. Those troops looked firm and emotionless.

All those troops were professional soldiers. They all had shed an incredible amount of blood in battle. Besides, these weren't just ordinary troops, they were the Chi Xie troops, all of them had more blood on their hands than most armies in the land.

In the past, they had seen many of their comrades die in wars, seeing their comrades die was always a tragic experience.

If they didn't fight at full power to kill all of their enemies, then one of their comrades might die as a consequence, which is why

they were honed from the slaughter of their enemies. There would never be a real winner in any conflict, as one side would always suffer at the hands of the other.

All they could do was to avenge their comrades and fight to stay alive. Those troops were like cold, unmoving mountains. If Lin Feng gave the order, they would immediately take action.

Lin Feng had stopped them, so not a single soldier fired another arrow into the valley.

“Qiong Qi, they are for you.” Said Lin Feng indifferently. His winged tiger then roared and threw itself into the gorge.

When it arrived above the gorge, it opened its mouth and breathed out a torrent of blazing flames. Those corpses were immediately set ablaze, and the blood started to evaporate.

The winged tiger’s fire was extremely hot and causing the temperature to rise throughout the valley.

Its gigantic wings kept beating in the air just above the gorge. It flew around and around while unleashing torrents of fire. Very quickly, the entire gorge was consumed by a raging inferno.

Those terrifying flames reached such heights that the entire valley was overcome with a dancing light.

In the distance, the people who looked in the direction of the Yun

Hai Mountain, could only see flames dashing towards the skies. They couldn't believe their eyes, they were all shaking as cold sweat covered their bodies.

Wouldn't such a monstrous fire burn the entire mountain?

Were those people on the Yun Hai Mountain, all dead?

Many people were actually relieved that they hadn't participated in the extermination of the Yun Hai Sect in the past, otherwise they would all be dead at that moment. They would be burning inside the gorge.

Lin Feng was too tyrannical. He wanted to get his revenge so his flames of fury set Xue Yue ablaze.

After that, many people would remember those flames, they continued burning for three days and three nights. At the top of the Yun Hai Mountain, there was no longer any darkness, it was always illuminated by the flames which burnt the corpses of Lin Feng's enemies.

Of course, that was what happened after.

At that moment, the winged tiger went back to Lin Feng's side. Lin Feng was looking at the flames, he sighed and said: "The Hao Yue Sect is already destroyed. The Yun Hai Mountain is ours again. I, Lin Feng, as the Patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect, declare that the Yun Hai Sect is reborn!"

“Ahhhh!”

“Ahhh.... Ahhhh....

Many people were shouting, they sounded like roaring beasts, it was a shocking display.

The Yun Hai Sect had been destroyed, many people had been sold as slaves and those slaves had been saved by Lin Feng.

All of those survivors had already become members of the Chi Xie troops. Of course, calling the Chi Xie troops an army of Xue Yue was not really correct, because the Chi Xie troops only had one leader, Lin Feng. They were no longer loyal to any country and only obeyed Lin Feng.

Those former members of the Yun Hai Sect felt a deep and profound hatred. They had been turned into slaves and were imprisoned, but at that moment, they could finally see their sect again. They were excited, other people would never understand the way they felt.

“Stay here at the Yun Hai Sect and cultivate for three days. Then in three days time, head to the Ice and Snow Mountain Village.” Said Lin Feng indifferently. The Yun Hai Sect was resurrected but it wasn’t as easy as that, they still had a long list of enemies.

Under Lin Feng’s control, there thousands and thousands of

strong cultivators, it was an extremely powerful army. Lin Feng was getting prepared to carry out a full military reform.

However, their purpose would remain the same, killing his enemies.

Lin Feng would choose a few young people from the Chi Xie troops, those who stood out because of their natural abilities and would let them concentrate on cultivation, in order to enhance their strength.

Lin Feng wanted to build a powerful army which would be a mixture of members from the Chi Xie army and the Yun Hai Sect. It wouldn't be a mere army anymore. If a sect didn't have much power, it couldn't remain prosperous, that is why he would build an army for the sect. Only if the sect and the army worked together would they be able to establish a power like never before.

Lin Feng and his army remained in the Yun Hai Mountain Chain for three days to reorganize.

Lin Feng had destroyed the Hao Yue Sect and brought his people to the Yun Hai Mountain to exterminate the invaders. That news spread very quickly across Xue Yue. Everybody was astonished. The Hao Yue sect, a gigantic sect was annihilated!

The first great sect which had been destroyed was the Yun Hai Sect, quickly followed in the footsteps of the Luo Xia Sect. In Celestial River, the Luo Xia Sect had lost the majority of its strongest cultivators, they had all been killed by Lin Feng. Then,

Duan Wu Dao had killed the majority of its members in the Imperial City which led to their collapse.

With Hao Yue Sect exterminated, its annihilation had also led to the resurrection of the Yun Hai Sect.

Lin Feng, who used to be a disciple of the Yun Hai Sect, had already astonished the entire country of Xue Yue. Everybody knew that he was the Patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect.

At that moment, everybody was looking at the Ice and Snow Mountain Village.

Lin Feng's next target would undoubtedly be the Ice and Snow Mountain Village.

Maybe after destroying the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, Lin Feng would head to the Imperial City.

The people who had participated in the destruction of the Yun Hai Sect were numerous. They were all very influential groups spread throughout the country. Lin Feng had resurrected the Yun Hai Sect, but he was not done avenging it. Everybody who had participated in its destruction had to die. He was definitely planning to go to the Imperial City.

Many people were growing impatient, they wanted to see Lin Feng create another legend in Xue Yue!

Chapter 484: Shameless Han Xue Tian!

The Ice and Snow Mountain Village was to the north of Xue Yue. It was constantly surrounded by snow and ice. It was one of the four influential powers of the country, and was the only sect that wasn't situated in a mountain chain.

At that moment, there were countless deep footprints in the thick layer of snow that covered the ground.

The Ice and Snow Mountain Village looked like a landscape from a fairy tale, a vast expanse of whiteness.

About fifty kilometres away from the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, the snow had been upturned by the armoured horses of Chi Xie.

They were in perfect formation. There were seemingly more than ten thousand soldiers with astonishing cultivations, such a powerful army was terrifying.

That army was precisely the Chi Xie army. They first exterminated the Hao Yue Sect and then Lin Feng had them march to the Ice and Snow Mountain Village. Mister Chi and the troops were waiting for Lin Feng to arrive and join them.

Because they weren't stationed far away from the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, they were able to keep a close watch over the sect and all of its movements. At least, they could make sure that they wouldn't try to escape and leave the Ice and Snow Mountain

Village abandoned.

Of course, if they could see the sect from there, the sect could see them as well. They knew exactly how many troops were stationed outside.

On that day, many people left the Ice and Snow Mountain Village. They were slowly walking and approaching the troops. The vast expanse of white snow looked even more incredible when seeing the people appear on the vast white landscape.

When the troops saw the people heading towards them, they prepared for battle. What surprised the troops was that the people of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village hadn't stayed within their territory. Surprisingly, they had taken the initiative to come out.

Of course, the people of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village thought that staying in the sect would be the same as waiting for death.

The Hao Yue Sect had been destroyed by Lin Feng and he had then taken control of the Yun Hai Mountain Chain again, the Ice and Snow Mountain Village already knew about these events. At that moment, the thousands of soldiers were waiting, they were obviously waiting for Lin Feng to join them.

Since that was the case, if the Ice and Snow Mountain Village waited for too long, their enemies would grow more and more numerous and become increasingly powerful, so why not leave immediately and try to open an escape route by force.

Mister Chi was standing at the front of the army and looking at the people rushing towards him. There were hundreds of people rushing towards him. Each and every single one of them looked cold and detached. They were wearing white clothes and were releasing powerful some ice energy.

All those people practiced using ice and snow skills. Everybody at the Ice and Snow Mountain Village practiced ice and snow skills and each of them had an ice or snow spirit. They all had the same aura, without exception.

Very quickly, the members of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village had closed the distance between themselves and the army. Though they were only a few hundred, when compared with the thousands of troops, they were nothing.

The one at the very front was the patriarch of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village: Han Xue Tian.

“Mister Chi, I wouldn’t have thought that we would meet again.” Said Han Xue Tian with a faint smile on his face. The Ice and Snow Mountain Village wasn’t very far from Celestial River so the disciples of the mountain village would frequently visit. Han Xue Tian himself also frequently visited the Celestial River often, but never made his visits public knowledge. Besides he had already met Mister Chi inside Celestial River.

“I hadn’t thought we would meet again either. But things have changed, we are now enemies.” Said Mister Chi indifferently.

Han Xue Tian shook his head and said: “Why talk that way? You are not my enemy. Let’s continue as friends, you will receive a warm welcome at my Ice and Snow Mountain Village.” Said Han Xue Tian trying to draw Mister Chi over to his side.

But Mister Chi only shook his head and said: “Han Xue Tian, you cannot convince me. Things have changed, we are now on different sides. You are a member of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, I am with Lin Feng. Lin Feng is your enemy so I am now your enemy too. This is something that cannot be changed.”

Han Xue Tian was astonished. Mister Chi was openly admitting that he was following Lin Feng.

Mister Chi used to be an illustrious and eminent figure in Celestial River, Han Xue Tian had never thought that he would be following Lin Feng.

“Since that is the case, I will not insist If you are following Lin Feng, it seems like this battle will be unavoidable.”

“If you want to fight now, just attack. Don’t waste my time.” Said Mister Chi indifferently, he sounded absolutely unperturbed.

“Then we will fight.” Said Han Xue Tian while taking a step through the air which left a huge mark in the snow. In a flash, he threw himself at Mister Chi. If the old man wanted to fight, he wouldn’t waste time.

The atmosphere was filled with snow, it would have been a picturesque scene, if not for the battle that was about to begin.

However, Mister Chi didn't feel like admiring the scenery, when facing the patriarch of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, he couldn't afford to relax.

A terrifying fire arose from Mister Chi. Han Xue Tian practiced ice and snow cultivation, and Mister Chi practiced the opposite, fire cultivation.

Mister Chi didn't care about what the enemy was practicing, he took a heavy step in his opponent's direction. His entire body was covered with rampaging flames.

Ice and fire collided in a stalemate creating a unique scene in midair. Mister Chi wanted to use his flames to melt the ice, but Han Xue Tian wanted to use his ice to extinguish the flames.

Those two cultivators had totally opposing cultivation styles.

"Mister Chi is, as expected, you are still extremely strong. No wonder you were such an imminent and illustrious person in Celestial River. I, Han Xue Tian, will learn a lot from you during this battle."

"As you wish." Replied Mister Chi. The two people then both shot into the air.

The troops were watching the battle without getting involved, even though they really wanted to join the battle, they respected a duel between experts.

The two fighters were growing more and more courageous, they continued colliding in the air, over and over again. The ice and fire became even more powerful. Everyone was fixedly staring at them. Who was going to come out victorious?

At that moment, a piercingly-cold ice suddenly arose from the mountain village, astonishing many people.

“It doesn’t look good.” The troops were astonished. A silhouette on the side of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village rose into the air. That person’s energy was monstrously powerful.

“World of Ice and Snow!”

“Extreme Icebound!”

At that moment, Han Xue Tian and that other person spoke at the same time. In a flash, a terrifying ice energy surrounded Mister Chi’s body.

“Bastards!” Shouted the Chi Xie troops. They were furious. The person who had just intervened was very young. Everybody thought of one person when they saw that young man, the patriarch’s son: Luo Xue.

Han Xue Tian and Mister Chi were fighting, initially it was a duel between experts, but at that moment Luo Xue was surprisingly attacking Mister Chi by surprise. How despicable!

“Get lost!” Shouted Mister Chi while attacking those two people but the extreme icebound attack was too powerful and crashed against his body piercing through to his bones. Mister Chi started falling from the sky, and he felt like he was freezing from the inside.

“Mister Chi, sorry for the inconvenience.” Said Han Xue Tian while smiling coldly. The Chi Xie troops’ facial expressions were extremely sharp. Those people were extremely strong so they wouldn’t be able to capture them alive.

“How shameless!” A voice filled the atmosphere from the distance which shocked everybody. A silhouette was rushing towards them and that person was Lin Feng, rushing forward like the wind. The Chi Xie troops all smiled at that moment, Lin Feng had arrived!

The people of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village were scared. Han Xue Tian immediately moved towards Mister Chi again, he wanted to attack him and remove a powerful enemy. He was releasing an extremely cold ice energy.

Mister Chi was shocked. He had just been attacked and was already injured. If Han Xue Tian attacked him again, Mister Chi wouldn’t be able to survive.

“Piss off!” Shouted Lin Feng while releasing some terrifying black deadly energy which immediately moved between Han Xue Tian and Mister Chi.

Luo Xue wanted to attack as well but the winged tiger suddenly appeared in front of him and prevented him from moving forwards.

Collision sounds spread through the air. Han Xue Tian had been unable to reach Mister Chi, Lin Feng had been too fast.

Lin Feng, Mister Chi and the winged tiger were now together, while Han Xue Tian and Luo Xue were opposite them. They were all staring at each other coldly.

“As expected, despicable little people. This makes things easier.” Said Lin Feng in an ice-cold tone and then added: “Chi Xie troops, attack! Leave none alive. Charge into the Ice and Snow Mountain Village and exterminate every living thing. Not a single soul should remain alive.

Lin Feng’s voice was ice-cold, to the extent that the freezing atmosphere seemed like it had dropped by several degrees. He wanted to completely annihilate the Ice and Snow Mountain Village.

Chapter 485: Red Snow!

“Let’s attack together and kill them all!”

Han Xue Tian and Mister Chi were fighting, but Luo Xue launched a surprise attack against Mister Chi. But they had an army of over ten thousand supporting them, why would they be scared?

The people from the Ice and Snow Mountain Village were all terrified. Mister Chi hadn’t died because Lin Feng had protected him. Their plan had failed and now they had to face an army of furious Chi Xie troops.

A rumbling sounds spread through the air and the Chi Xie troops all released their deadly energy which caused the ground shake. The members of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village were suddenly terrified and their faces filled with panic.

“Mister Chi, go and have a rest! I can take care of those two!”

Mister Chi took a pill and started to recover. Mister Chi was an alchemist, if treated in time, his injuries wouldn’t be of any danger to him.

“Alright.” Said Mister Chi, he didn’t insist on helping Lin Feng. With Lin Feng’s strength, he could easily cope with those two cultivators of the fourth Xuan Qi layer.

Mister Chi moved back and Lin Feng released his deadly energy which also contained strands of intent.

Han Xue Tian and Luo Xue were surrounded by deadly energy which caused them to tremble. They quickly released some ice Qi in the form of snowflakes which filled the atmosphere and held off the deadly energy. However, those snowflakes grew chaotic as the deadly energy started to overcome them.

“Die!”

Lin Feng took a step forwards and in a flash arrived in front of Luo Xue. He then brandished a deadly sword straight towards his opponent.

“Ice and Snow!” Shouted Luo Xue abruptly. Then, a stream of snowflakes condensed on Lin Feng’s deadly sword and froze it in place.

“World of Ice and Snow!” Shouted Han Xue Tian at that moment while releasing a terrifyingly powerful ice energy. The entire atmosphere seemed like it had frozen solid.

Extremely strong skills could alter vast landscapes, it wasn’t a myth. Lin Feng’s deadly energy could change the atmosphere into an air of death, ice and snow could freeze the atmosphere etc.

At that moment, even the sun couldn’t make that ice melt.

Besides, as the atmosphere became colder and colder, the people from the Ice and Snow Mountain Village would grow stronger and stronger because they used ice and snow skills. If the atmosphere was frozen, they were much stronger and thus more courageous. However, it was the opposite for their opponents, as the atmosphere became colder, the enemies of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village became weaker and were influenced by the drastic cold.

Therefore, as those ice cultivators' strength increased, they also had more endurance to fight, fighting against them became much more dangerous.

However, Lin Feng didn't intend to fight against them for a long time, that wasn't necessary.

His deadly Qi crashed through the atmosphere and swallowed the ice and snow. A black sword appeared and a terrifying deadly Qi shot into the skies.

At that moment, his deadly energy contained sword intent, even though his sword intent was only at the first level, it was more than enough.

"Die!" Shouted Lin Feng furiously. A black light flashed and disappeared in an instant.

"Psssh....!"

A subtle sound spread in the air. Han Xue Tian who was attacking Lin Feng was still in the air, but he wasn't moving forwards anymore.

He lowered his head and saw that his waist was bleeding. The lower part of his body was gradually detaching itself from the upper half of his body.

“AHHHHH.....” A horrible shriek filled the air and resonated across the battlefield. Everyone from the Ice and Snow Mountain Village looked up and saw that the patriarch, Han Xue Tian's body had been cut into two. His eyes were still wide open but his body was no longer whole!

The people from the village felt their hearts start pounding violently, but they quickly forgot about all of that, because their bodies were then sliced apart. The Chi Xie army did not look up and get distracted during battle and continued their attacks.

“Escape!”

The members from the village had only one thought at that moment, they wanted to escape. Their patriarch had been killed by Lin Feng and sliced in half, was fighting against the Chi Xie troops still worth it?

Everyone from the Ice and Snow Mountain Village started trying to escape, including the elders and the geniuses from the sect. Nobody wanted to die. Dying with their comrades was a virtuous thing, but most of the time, when confronted with death, most

people wanted to escape because they were terrified of death. This couldn't be blamed, as it was a natural reaction to cling on to life.

Could they escape though?

At the moment when they started to escape, thousands of arrows streaked across the sky. It seemed like there was an ocean of arrows crashing down from above.

Considering the number of arrows, those who were running away were just moving target practice for the thousands of troops.

When Luo Xue saw that Han Xue Tian was dead, and that everybody wanted to escape, his eyes became crimson, but he released no deadly energy.

Lin Feng was too terrifying. Luo Xue couldn't fight against him.

Luo Xue's hands floated in the wind and an extremely cold air stream moved towards Lin Feng bombarding its way through the atmosphere.

However, at the same time, a huge snowflake appeared under his feet and just like a flying carpet, it swept him into the distance. He wanted to escape too.

He didn't try to save the Ice and Snow Mountain Village anymore. It was already fated to be destroyed.

When Lin Feng saw that Luo Xue wanted to escape, he smiled coldly. Luo Xue had broken through to the fourth Xuan Qi layer and was trying to escape when facing Lin Feng! Who said he could leave?

“Wind!”

Lin Feng’s silhouette flickered, he sensed the wind and rushed through the sky. He was extremely agile. It seemed like he had transformed into a gust of wind.

There was absolutely no resistance slowing him as he moved through the air. He then threw himself towards Luo Xue like a hurricane.

A terrifying deadly energy crashed into Luo Xue’s body which made him shake from head to toe. He turned his head and only saw Lin Feng’s body behind him, raising a black sword.

Lin Feng’s sword descended and Luo Xue’s body was split down the middle. He had rushed here from the Imperial City and now wanted to rush back, but only death awaited him.

Maybe he started to regret everything just before dying... But he had always known how terrifying Lin Feng was. Why did he come back when he knew what was coming? Did he think that he would be able to save the Ice and Snow Mountain Village with such little power?

He had already understood, when Lin Feng had started to rampage across Xue Yue, that nobody would be able to save his sect. The destruction of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village seemed inevitable.

At that moment, it was too late for him to regret anything, he was already dead.

Lin Feng looked at Luo Xue's body as it fell from the air. He looked emotionless. He didn't seem to realize that two of the incredible and majestic eight high-officials of Xue Yue had died to his hands.

The sixth and the seventh high-officials had died in his hands, Chu Zhan Peng and Luo Xue.

Lin Feng then looked at his troops on the ground. How could a few hundred people fight against his army of over ten thousand? They were making quick work of the cultivators and were completely destroying the sect.

On the ground, one of his soldiers was particularly strong. A blade was twinkling around him, he looked like a warlord bathed in blood. He looked like a violent death god. Nobody could stop him. His blade made from Pure Qi was unstoppable.

"Ba Dao, he used to be the strongest of the slaves..." Thought Lin Feng. He remembered when he was in prison, nobody could control him. He was monstrously violent. Lin Feng had liberated

him, thanks to the auction sales. Back then, Ba Dao's cultivation level was higher than his own and he was able to control blade force.

At that moment, Lin Feng had already broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer whereas Ba Dao had only broken through to the first Xuan Qi layer. With his incredible blade, his blade spirit, and his comprehension of energy attacks, Ba Dao could easily defeat people of the second Xuan Qi layer.

On Lin Feng's side, there were quite a few outstanding cultivators. Some of them were not any less talented than him and some had the same cultivation, it was just that they weren't as lucky as him to have an advanced power of understanding.

Duan Feng had devoted his life to cultivation, Ba Dao was monstrously violent and brutal, Han Man was a simple man but he incredible natural abilities and a very strong blood spirit, then there was Po Jun who had a dual spirit... If Lin Feng hadn't met all of these people, maybe he wouldn't have been able to rise as quickly as he did.

These rare talents were always in Lin Feng's shadow, but they wanted to follow Lin Feng.

When Lin Feng thought about those things, he looked up at the sky, in the direction of Duan Ren City.

He was wondering what Uncle Liu, Fei Fei, Han Man and Po Jun were doing... The last time he had seen Uncle Liu in the Imperial

City, he had lost hope. After finishing what he had to do, Lin Feng would try and return to Duan Ren City.

The Ice and Snow Mountain Village was the last battle before the Imperial City. Lin Feng had already killed all his enemies outside of the city, his other enemies were all waiting inside the Imperial City.

When the sun was setting, the Chi Xie troops were galloping through the snow towards the Imperial City. In the distance, Lin Feng looked in the direction of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village and could see that the white landscape was now filled with red snow.

Chapter 486: To The Imperial City!

Outside of the Imperial City, in Qing Xin's Restaurant, many people had gathered to drink alcohol and gossip about the events that happened across Xue Yue.

"Kai Tai, have you heard about happened in the Ice and Snow Mountain Village?" Asked a middle-aged man with a black mole on his face. He was clearly drunk when speaking to the man who looked like a scholar.

"In the Ice and Snow Mountain Village? What happened?" asked Kai Tai curiously. Could something big have happened there?

"Hehe, Kai Tai, you have become ignorant as of late. Don't you know about the latest news of Xue Yue?" Said the middle-aged man while laughing mockingly.

"Hmph! I know what is going on in our country. Marquis Lin Feng brought his Chi Xie troops to the Yun Hai Mountain Chain and revived the Yun Hai Sect with a bloodbath. At the same time, he destroyed the Hao Yue Sect. Everybody is talking about those things, who doesn't know about it?" Asked Kai Tai, seemingly upset.

The Hao Yue Sect had been destroyed and Lin Feng had taken control of the Yun Hai Mountain Chain and revived the Yun Hai Sect. Everybody in Xue Yue was astonished by these events, but that news could be heard everywhere in the country.

“Hehe, everybody knows about those things, that is old news already. However, you don’t seem to know what happened in the Ice and Snow Mountain Village!” Said the middle-aged man with the black mole indifferently. Kai Tai was speechless.

“What? The Ice and Snow Mountain Village is still very powerful, could it be that Lin Feng exterminated it as well?”

The Ice and Snow Mountain Village isn’t like the Hao Yue Sect. The Hao Yue Sect had already lost its patriarch Chu Qing during the genius competition of Xue Yue, as well as Chu Zhan Peng. Lin Feng had killed them both. Thus, the Hao Yue Sect had already lost its leaders. However, the Ice and Snow Mountain Village still had its patriarch, Han Xue Tian. He was extremely powerful and could stand as a powerful defence against enemies. Besides, after Luo Xue had learnt of the events in Xue Yue, he had rushed over to the Ice and Snow Mountain Village. Due to the dangerous situation, all its members had gathered to defend the sect. Don’t tell me they have been annihilated as well?”

“Extremely powerful? Ha, have you forgotten how Chu Zhan Peng and Chu Qing died? When facing a much stronger opponent, even if all the members of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village gathered to defend it, they still couldn’t do anything when fighting against tens of thousands of the Chi Xie troops. The large army trampled their way through the territory of the sect. The ice and snow is now dyed scarlet red, tainted with blood. Now, Lin Feng can truly be considered as a peerless cultivator of Xue Yue. Wherever he goes, nothing can stop him, he annihilates his enemies with utmost precision. Nobody can stop him from getting his revenge. I fear that he will soon be at the doors of the Imperial City.” Said the middle-aged man sounding excited. He was telling

the story as if he was secretly Lin Feng, the hero of the story. He had been drinking all day thinking of the best way to share his tale.

Lin Feng had become like the sun at high-noon. He was at the apex of his power. He had started from nothing and by only relying on his own strength, he had exterminated countless heroes of Xue Yue. Step by step, he achieved greatness and became the hero of the country.

“He will come to the Imperial City?” Kai Tai shook his head and said: “Impossible. Even though he destroyed the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, it doesn’t mean that he will come to the Imperial City. You cannot behave so wildly in the Imperial City. If he comes, what would he do anyway? Go to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue and the Wan Shou Sect?”

The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue contained “Xue Yue” in its name and Duan Tian Lang, a member of the Duan Clan was its principal. Besides, the Wan Shou Sect was one of the most powerful groups in Xue Yue. Those groups were much more powerful than the Hao Yue Sect and the Ice and Snow Mountain Village combined. Besides, the Wan Shou Sect had Wu Qing, who was the third high-official of the country. Lin Feng was very strong, but destroying the Wan Shou Sect seemed like an impossible feat.

“He will. Just wait and see.” Said the middle-aged man sounding particularly confident. He looked extremely drunk and was growing impatient to be a witness for the upcoming events.

“Impossible. Lin Feng might return to the Imperial City alone... He is strong, but it still isn’t enough for him to cope with the entire

Wan Shou Sect. He would need to be much stronger than them to take on that many people. Wait until he is strong enough and then he will definitely come, but it is impossible for now.” Said someone next to them. Many people were nodding in agreement. Indeed, Lin Feng should be returning to the Imperial City alone. After all, Lin Feng was known in the Imperial City for being Yue Meng He’s son, he didn’t have to be impatient with his revenge.

Waiting for a while before going to settle grudges with the Wan Shou Sect and the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was normal.

“BOOM!”

“BOOM!”

“BOOM!”

The entire restaurant started to shake as if there was an earthquake. Everyone was stupefied, what was happening?

Besides, the restaurant was starting to shake even more, it seemed like it was going to collapse.

“What’s going on? Are those armoured-horses?” Asked some of the people while rushing to look out the windows.

In a flash, everyone was left gobsmacked. In the distance, there was an army of armoured cavalry charging in perfect formation. Every warrior seemed extremely powerful and it seemed like there

was no end to the sea of cavalry. On the huge road into the Imperial City which would normally be able to hold thousands of people walking side by side, was chaotic as everyone rushed to escape from the road. Those armoured horses were galloping towards the Imperial City.

“He has arrived. He is already outside of the Imperial City and is charging inside the Imperial City.” Shouted the middle-aged man with the black mole. He looked extremely excited and his eyes were twinkling with glee.

“Who arrived??” Asked Kai Tai.

“Of course it’s Lin Feng! He came with his Chi Xie troops and they’re rushing to the Imperial City!”

“You’re insane, you’re babbling nonsense!” Said Kai Tai in a low voice. He also ran to the windows and looked outside.

The restaurant continued shaking and shaking as the armoured cavalry moved closer. Many were hoisting several fluttering flags with large words written in blood.

“REVIVAL OF THE YUN HAI SECT, A DEBT OF BLOOD MUST BE PAID IN BLOOD!”

Those words were written using the blood of their enemies, it was striking to the eye which made Kai Tai and the middle-aged man’s hearts suddenly pound violently. The Yun Hai Sect, Lin

Feng!

It was really Lin Feng. Surprisingly, he would really charge into the Imperial City with the Chi Xie troops. He wanted to charge into the Imperial City with an army! Lin Feng wanted to avenge the Yun Hai Sect... and make his enemies pay in blood.

Kai Tai turned his head around and walked back to the drunkard. The drunkard was smug and looked like he never had any doubts about Lin Feng coming with an army. He had guessed right. He hadn't even gone out to see, but he already knew that it was Lin Feng.

The people in the restaurant weren't the only ones who were astonished, the people outside were astonished too. Everyone had started leaving buildings and formed a crowd on both sides of the road as they watched this scene. In the past, this used to be Xue Yue's most respected group of hardened warriors, they used to work for Xue Yue and protect the border from Mo Yue's invasions.

But Mo Yue and Xue Yue had fought a huge battle and hundreds of thousands of soldiers had died. Liu Cang Lan was captured and brought back to the Imperial City for execution, but Lin Feng charged in and saved him. By doing this he obtained a fief, Yangzhou City, and the Chi Xie army became the personal troops of the marquis.

The Chi Xie troops were just like in the rumours, they were famous throughout Xue Yue. Their fame had even spread outside of the country and many enemies were wary of them.

The thunderous sound of galloping filled the air, it seemed like the ground was going to give way to this incredible army. In a flash, the troops arrived in front of the Imperial City. Their every movement was in perfect formation. The army was vast and majestic.

The guards of the Imperial City looked puzzled. What was happening? Were the Chi Xie troops going to siege the Imperial City again?

Xin Yi was the new officer of the guards at the Imperial City gate.

When he saw all those red armoured-horses and the banners written in blood, he immediately guessed who that was.

Lin Feng and his Chi Xie troops!

At that moment, Xin Yi's eyes lit up. He looked at them and said: "Where is the Chi Xie Marquis?"

"I'm here." Said a voice from the middle of the troops. Then, a ferocious beast flew into the air and arrived above the Imperial City gate. Lin Feng was seated on the winged tiger whilst looking down at them, staring at Xin Yi in particular which stupefied many observers.

Lin Feng's eyes looked ice-cold and ominous glints were twinkling in the winged tiger's eyes. How scary!

“Marquis Lin Feng, you should know that an army from outside the city cannot enter into the Imperial City, you are only permitted to enter with a fraction of these people.” Said Xin Yi. He was speaking very slowly in order to try and remain calm.

An army from outside of the Imperial City, especially private armies, couldn't freely enter the Imperial City, especially not in full force, otherwise they had the power to create chaos. Xin Yi didn't want to bear the responsibility for that.

Besides, if Lin Feng had come to the Imperial City with all his troops, it wasn't with any good intentions. He had come to get his revenge.

“Do you remember Meng Chong and Meng Han?” Lin Feng didn't say much, only a few words, with a calm voice. Xin Yi's mouth started twitching.

Of course he remembered Meng Chong and Meng Han...

Back then, Meng Chong was standing where he was standing at that moment, and Meng Chong was Meng Han's son. They had offended Lin Feng and prevented him from entering the Imperial City so he butchered them and even left them impaled on the city walls!

Chapter 487: Returning to The Holy Courtyard!

Lin Feng was warning him and also clearly threatening him.

Lin Feng wanted him to remember why Meng Chong and Meng Han died.

Besides, back then, Lin Feng hadn't even broken through to the Xuan Qi layer, and he wasn't as famous and influential as he was now. He didn't have any support behind him back then. Back then, everyone had no idea who Lin Feng's parents were, they didn't know two of the most powerful cultivators of the country were his parents.

Lin Feng had become much stronger than he was in the past. He had destroyed the Hao Yue Sect, taken control of the Yun Hai Mountain Chain... Everything he did was incredible. Xin Yi couldn't stop Lin Feng, otherwise he would be killed as well.

Lin Feng had become a death god, he would kill anyone who obstructed his way. Nobody dared to try and stop him from his path of revenge.

“There are limits to my patience. Hurry up and make a decision.” Said Lin Feng indifferently, but Xin Yi was flustered. He had to make a decision and fast, otherwise Lin Feng would lose his temper.

“Actually, I see now that there are many strong individual cultivators, the rest can enter the Imperial City as their entourage, there is absolutely no problem.” Said Xin Yi while glancing at the troops. They were all much stronger than they were in the past. All of them looked monstrously strong and reeked of blood. The deadly Qi that the Chi Xie troops were releasing was much stronger than in the past, they could force people to prostrate with fear just by releasing their Qi. Their facial expressions were extremely stern and bloodthirsty.

Everyone was wondering what method Lin Feng used on them to allow them to have such a drastic increase in strength. The Chi Xie troops were now much more terrifying.

“With their strength, entering the city is obviously easy. It’s a good thing, because they have a bad temper.” Said Lin Feng indifferently. Xin Yi nodded slightly. If Lin Feng had to force his way into the city with his troops, they would have been considered an armed rebellion which would have given his enemies an excuse to complain.

However, at that moment, Lin Feng was entering the city and the only one responsible for it was Xin Yi. Nobody would be able to blame Lin Feng for forcing his way into the city.

Lin Feng had given Xin Yi two choices, the first was to die, the second one was to bear the responsibility for letting him enter. Lin Feng already had absolute control over the situation.

“Open the gate! Let them in!” Sighed Xin Yi. Lin Feng looked extremely confident. He knew that Xin Yi was going to open the

gate, he had given him no choice. Everyone knew that he was using threats to cheat the system, but nobody dared say a word.

“A wise choice.” Said Lin Feng while smiling. Xin Yi looked extremely upset and was hoping that nothing bad would happen when they entered the city.

Xin Yi had given an order so those guards in charge of the gate opened it without hesitation. They didn't want to face Lin Feng, he was extremely violent and powerful. On top of that, it was Xin Yi's order, so the guards in charge of the gate weren't responsible.

They opened the gate and the Chi Xie troops galloped into the Imperial City. A cloud of dust rose into the air around them as they rushed forward.

The Chi Xie troops then took the form of a long dragon as the army weaved through the city gate.

The people outside of the Imperial City watched the cavalry gallop into the city and then quickly followed behind them. It seemed like something incredible was going to happen and they didn't want to miss it.

The Chi Xie troops were galloping through the city with incredible speed. It looked like a hurricane was passing through the city streets. Inside the Imperial City, everyone became hysterical and started to flee when they saw an army invading the city streets, they feared that the city was being invaded.

The people quickly noticed that the troops ignored them and continued galloping in one direction, towards the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue!

Everyone in the country knew that Duan Tian Lang had destroyed the Yun Hai Sect and created the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, now it seemed that Lin Feng had come to get his revenge!

The news spread very quickly. When people saw that the armoured cavalry were galloping in the direction of the Holy Courtyard, some people rushed there to inform the Holy Courtyard's guards. Everyone in the city gradually noticed that the troops were Lin Feng's army who were rushing to the Holy Courtyard.

At that moment, the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was in a state of alert and its members were hysterical. They were all terrified.

According to the rumours, the Hao Yue Sect and the Ice and Snow Mountain Village were completely annihilated. None of them were able to escape the slaughter. It had been a complete bloodbath. Lin Feng had slaughtered them to the last person, to avenge the Yun Hai Sect. Towards those who helped destroy the Yun Hai Sect in the past, Lin Feng was merciless.

Some people, at the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, were starting to pack their things and preparing to escape. It was too dangerous for them to stay, Duan Tian Lang wouldn't be able to protect the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.

It was said that Lin Feng had tens of thousands of troops. Against such a monstrous strength, they couldn't do anything. All they could do was run in terror.

The members of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, or at least a great majority of them, were outstanding disciples selected from the greatest sects of the country. When they heard that their former sects had been destroyed, they didn't know what to think. Now Lin Feng's arrival at the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was imminent, they weren't thinking about revenge, they were just terrified, thinking of how to escape.

In the distance, the sound of thunderous galloping filled the air.

Those sounds grew louder and louder. The members of the courtyard knew that the Chi Xie troops were getting closer.

At that moment, the Chi Xie troops were only a few hundred meters away from the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. Their eyes were all filled with hatred and a monstrous deadly energy into the air. This scene was extremely frightening.

The Chi Xie troops hated Duan Tian Lang the most.

In the past, Duan Tian Lang's plots had caused hundreds of thousands from the Chi Xie army to die. They had been utterly defeated because of him and then they were forced into retreat. Besides, he had also caused Liu Cang Lan's cultivation to be crippled.

Every single member of the Chi Xie troops hated Duan Tian Lang to the bone. There wasn't a single member in the army that would spare his life.

Now, Lin Feng had brought them to the Imperial City, to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, where Duan Tian Lang was waiting.

When they arrived at the gates, the horses neighed and stopped. They looked at the large gates of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue and blocked all other exits.

Those who were trying to come out of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue were shocked and forced to remain. They were motionless and blankly staring at the troops surrounding them. That deadly Qi was extremely oppressive and caused them to shiver.

A deathly silence invaded the atmosphere. The Chi Xie troops didn't say a word and remained in silence. There was only their deadly Qi floating in the atmosphere.

That type of silence was what scared people the most, the uncertainty of waiting filled their souls with fear. They all wanted to escape from the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, but if that collection of deadly Qi reached their bodies, they would die!

Lin Feng appeared in the air above the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, one person, one beast, just like the last time he had come.

However, last time, he hadn't attacked. He only humiliated Duan

Tian Lang and the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. It was the same winged tiger who killed one of the teachers when they were last there.

But this time, it was different. Everybody perfectly understood why Lin Feng had come. It was written on a huge flag in blood: “REVIVAL OF THE YUN HAI SECT, A DEBT OF BLOOD MUST BE PAID IN BLOOD!”

Lin Feng had come for his revenge. He hadn't killed Duan Tian Lang last time because he wanted Duan Tian Lang to witness the destruction of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue with his own eyes, he also wanted Duan Tian Lang to witness the revival of the Yun Hai Sect.

The Yun Hai Sect had been revived and the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was doomed.

“Duan Tian Lang, get your ass over here!” Shouted Lin Feng. His powerful voice broke the silence, making the atmosphere tremble as his voice spread throughout the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. Everybody in the courtyard could hear Lin Feng's furious voice.

Duan Tian Lang, get your ass over here!

“Lin Feng, the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue is a holy land for cultivators. Come battle to death as a cultivator!” Said a voice coming from inside the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. Everybody was astonished, including Lin Feng.

Was Duan Tian Lang challenging Lin Feng to a battle to the death?

“Middle troops, come inside with me, left troops obstruct all the exits and prevent anyone from leaving, right troops, pay attention to the air.” said Lin Feng indifferently. The winged tiger also went into the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. At the same time, the middle troops followed him, but they were on the ground while Lin Feng was in the sky.

The left and right troops then obeyed Lin Feng’s order, preventing anyone from escaping by land or air. Nobody was permitted to leave.

Lin Feng completely sealed the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue!

Chapter 488: The Mysterious Group

Lin Feng appeared in the air above the cultivation tower of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. On the ground, the members of the courtyard raised their heads to look at him and his winged tiger.

In such a short period of time, Lin Feng had appeared above their tower again. Besides, this time, he had brought thousands of soldiers with him. He wanted to exterminate the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.

At the foot of the cultivation tower there were a group of people who slowly rose into the air waiting. Duan Tian Lang was standing in the middle of that group. He looked majestic and had regained his commanding presence.

Apart from Duan Tian Lang, there were a few people -they were not from the Holy Courtyard-but they were allied with Duan Tian Lang at that moment. The Qi from that group was extremely powerful; they were all at the Xuan Qi layer. This time, the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue had appeared in full strength.

“It seems like you’ve been preparing for this battle.” Said Lin Feng while giving a faint scowl. Duan Tian Lang looked like he was waiting for him.

“I’ve been waiting for a while.” Said Duan Tian Lang. His eyes were as cold as ice. This time, he didn’t look scared at all.

Lin Feng’s eyes also grew cold. He quickly glanced at those people

and asked himself why Duan Tian Lang was acting so confident.

Lin Feng continued to look at those people, but he really couldn't notice anything strange. They looked extremely ordinary, and precisely because of that, this situation seemed unusually dangerous.

But it was clear to Lin Feng that those people wouldn't be that ordinary, otherwise why would they be standing with Duan Tian Lang?

“Those eighteen cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer from the other night, did you send them?” Asked Lin Feng while looking at those people. In total, there were five people standing by Duan Tian Lang's side. It seemed like they were protecting him.

Those five people looked at Lin Feng perplexed. Then one of them asked: “Did you kill them?”

That sentence was simple but in a way he was admitting that those people were sent by them.

“I did.” Said Lin Feng indifferently while nodding. Their eyes grew sharp but they didn't say anything, they were just glaring at Lin Feng.

“Among you and Duan Tian Lang, who is the boss and who is the servant?” Asked Lin Feng. What he meant was, between Duan Tian Lang and those five people, who had a higher status? Those five

people were probably stronger than those eighteen cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer he fought last time, besides, Duan Tian Lang looked extremely confident with them here. It seemed like they had the strength to make Duan Tian Lang feel at ease. Lin Feng believed that these people's social status must be very high. The loss of those eighteen cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer seemed like nothing to them, the fact that they were dead didn't seem to affect those five people greatly, there was only a slight change in their expressions.

Eighteen cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer were a powerful force, if they had been part of an influential group in Xue Yue, they could have accomplished great things.

But those people didn't care about the eighteen cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer. What did that mean? What was their social status?

"There is no use in giving answers to the dead." Said one of those people in an indifferent tone, which made Duan Tian Lang smile. He looked at Lin Feng while seeming fearless and mockingly said: "Lin Feng, the other night, you had an opportunity to kill me but you didn't, I guarantee you that it was the biggest mistake you made in your entire life. You missed your chance that night and today you will die because of it."

"It seems like these people are above you, you are just their lackey, a servant, a worthless dog." Said Lin Feng while ignoring Duan Tian Lang. He then continued, in a low voice: "I had never thought that the majestic Duan Tian Lang, who has the status of a noble, would be someone else's servant... I am surprised. I had thought that, even though Duan Tian Lang was a bit weak, he was

still a noble... And a noble ended up being a mere lackey, some other people's little dog."

Lin Feng's words astonished many members of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. He was saying that the founder of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was someone else's lackey!

They had never thought about that before. Duan Tian Lang was a noble and his status was majestic. How could he be someone's lackey? But in fact, Duan Tian Lang was clearly obeying these five people.

"I don't really want to know that much, I'm just curious. If Duan Tian Lang is someone's servant, it means that those at the top must be more important than the members of the Imperial Clan. Besides, the Great Competition is approaching and the Imperial Clan would strive to keep me alive, they want me to represent them in the great competition, so what role are you guys planning?" Asked Lin Feng, he looked perplexed but was slightly surprised. Duan Tian Lang was a noble with the blood of the Imperial Clan, but he seemed to worship those five people. Lin Feng didn't believe that these people were from a force outside of the Imperial City. They had to have a very high social status in the Imperial City. That was the only explanation.

But the second prince Duan Wu Ya favoured Lin Feng and everybody was aware that he protected Lin Feng. Besides, after the banquet the other night, everyone was certain that he was going to be chosen for the Great Competition of Xue Yue. The Imperial Clan would benefit greatly from his participation and had no reason to want Lin Feng dead.

That was also why Lin Feng had fearlessly charged into the Imperial City with his troops, and he had guessed right, the guards let him in and no one else blocked his path.

But Lin Feng was realizing that some things were not going as he planned.

“You don’t need to understand anything; you will not be participating in the Great Competition of Xue Yue.” Said one of them while sounding arrogant. This sentence alone confirmed that he wasn’t a member of the Imperial Clan.

“I’m just worried about you; nobody will know that you died for such a worthless cause.” Said Lin Feng which astonished those five people. Die for a worthless cause? Lin Feng still thought that the ones who were going to die was still going to be them?

“Don’t you think that you are being way too confident when it comes to your cultivation? You’re still so foolish and way too arrogant.” Said Duan Tian Lang while smiling coldly and staring at Lin Feng.

But Lin Feng shook his head and looked at those people in a mocking way as if he had been looking at utter fools.

“I don’t need to borrow anyone else’s power to fight against you, Duan Tian Lang, or even to destroy the entire Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, but since you resorted to becoming someone else’s dog, I will kill them first and then I will exterminate the Holy Courtyard

of Xue Yue.” Said Lin Feng indifferently. When he finished talking, a group of people at the front of the army removed their helmets and rose into the air to swiftly join Lin Feng. When people saw their faces, they were astonished.

They were women! The group of people rising into the air was composed completely of women. There were thirty-six women that joined Lin Feng. All of them were indifferent and their Qi was peculiar.

Those women had formed a four by nine battle formation.

“The Lovesick Forest...”

The opponents were astonished. Those women in white clothes were from the Lovesick Forest.

“She gave them to you...” Said the one who had just spoken out while staring at Lin Feng, sharp lights were twinkling in his eyes.

The women of the Lovesick Forest... Even though they weren't very strong alone, they maintained their pure hearts and concentrated fully on cultivation, they would link their powers together using witchcraft. When they fought together in formation, they were extremely powerful; nobody dared to belittle the power of those women.

“It seems like your confidence wasn't that justified.” Said Lin Feng while smiling coldly which astonished those five people.

These thirty-six women were a terrifying fighting force.

“Six times four formations against those five people, the rest will stop anybody else who tries to escape!” Said Lin Feng indifferently. Immediately, twenty-four women immediately attacked the five people while the other twelve rose higher in the air and formed a circle formation around the fight and created a barrier using spells.

Lin Feng was a little shocked; these women were able to form a 12-person formation!

At that moment, their position was truly perfect, nobody would be able to escape from inside.

Duan Tian Lang was astonished and stared at Lin Feng. His smile had completely disappeared from his face. He just looked vigilant and he was shaking with fear. Those groups of women in a battle formation were extremely dangerous. Duan Tian Lang could only hope that the five people with him would be able to protect him.

If his five accomplices were defeated, Duan Tian Lang was doomed to die.

When Duan Tian Lang thought about that, he grew extremely nervous.

Chapter 489: The Snow Dragon Robe!

The battle started, people were growing hysterical as a terrifying Qi dispersed in the atmosphere. Five battles were taking place in the sky.

Those five people had justifications for being arrogant. They had all broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer, especially the one who spoke for them. He was at the peak of the fifth Xuan Qi layer, only one step away from breaking through to the sixth Xuan Qi layer, his strength was terrifying.

However four women were surprisingly able to suppress him, which meant that the other women could take care of the others. Two formations were enough to completely suppress them.

Duan Tian Lang was astonished when he saw that and the crowd was shocked as well.

Those women had terrifying battle powers when working together. Their battle formation was perfect, they could carry out perfect attacks when fighting together and their power was explosive. Those five cultivators of the fifth Xuan Qi layer were completely under control.

Yue Meng He hadn't wasted her time during the last eighteen years, she had raised those women and turned them into a powerful fighting force.

Now, she had given those women to Lin Feng, with his natural

abilities, it was like giving a tiger wings.

“I wonder where those women come from. With those battle formations and their spells, their fighting ability is terrifying.” Thought many people when they saw those women. They were all so young, all of them were around twenty years old.

The crowd knew that those women weren't weak, but the most important fact was that they had devoted their entire lives to cultivation and rarely had contact with the outside world which meant that their hearts weren't polluted by the world. They only followed their master for their entire lives and had made great progress in their cultivation.

Besides, there were two sorts of cultivators who could increase their cultivation extremely quickly. People who belonged to the first category had pure hearts which were unpolluted by the mundane world, apart from practicing cultivation, they didn't know anything else. All they did in life was practice cultivation, nothing else.

People who belonged to the second category were the extremely stubborn types. They had extremely high requirements when it came to themselves and their capabilities, they expected a great deal from themselves. To progress in cultivation, they were ready to do anything. They didn't spare any effort on their path of cultivation. Their only goal was to enhance their cultivation. For cultivation, they didn't stop fighting and pushed themselves to the limit. They would kill their enemies without hesitation. That kind of stubborn cultivator would always progress by leaps and bounds.

Those two categories of people could progress very quickly on the path of cultivation. Those women belonged to the first category, their hearts were pure, even though it was impossible for a person's heart to remain absolutely pure, they were still much purer than other people.

Besides, Lin Feng belonged more to the second category than the first. While he had removed some of the pollution from his heart, his greatest strength was his expectations of himself. He was extremely stubborn and was determined to continue growing stronger.

The sounds of battle filled the air. The atmosphere was trembling violently with the shockwaves. Duan Tian Lang was watching the battle with a look of astonishment. His confidence had completely disappeared.

Five cultivators at the fifth Xuan Qi layer were surprisingly being suppressed. If Lin Feng wanted to kill them, he could. How could Duan Tian Lang not be scared?

Lin Feng glanced over at Duan Tian Lang which made him feel even more nervous as coldness invaded his heart.

“Scum.” Said Lin Feng indifferently which stupefied Duan Tian Lang. At that moment, Lin Feng was looking at him in a particularly scornful way.

A moment before, Duan Tian Lang had acted as if he was standing high above everyone, he looked down on Lin Feng and

behaved arrogantly. But at this moment, his five accomplices were completely suppressed and Duan Tian Lang had returned to being a scared whimpering dog. In Lin Feng's eyes, Duan Tian Lang was the scum of the world. In the past, Duan Tian Lang was much stronger than Lin Feng but at that moment, Lin Feng had the power to look down on him.

In the past, Lin Feng was nothing in front of Duan Tian Lang, he was extremely arrogant but at that moment, he was powerless in front of Lin Feng, he was nothing more than an insect. Apart from dread, Duan Tian Lang's heart was filled with a mixture of strange feelings. He used to be a majestic and powerful noble, but at that moment, everything had changed.

Lin Feng just glanced at Duan Tian Lang for a second and then looked at the battle again. Those five people all released their spirits, surprisingly they mainly had weapon spirits. They all began to use energy attacks in an attempt to break free from the formation.

They were all extremely strong. Lin Feng was becoming more and more curious, he really wanted to know who they were.

"I don't believe that you can remain unperturbed when facing death." Thought Lin Feng. He then released some terrifying deadly energy, the people on the ground were all astonished.

Lin Feng looked at one of the five cultivators and his eyes grew ferocious. Lin Feng's eyes turned pitch-black as he released some deadly Qi and sword intent.

“Die.” Said Lin Feng in an ice-cold tone. Then Lin Feng started moving like the wind and rushed towards that cultivator of the fifth Xuan Qi layer.

The other four cultivators sensed that Lin Feng was attacking and started to tremble. While Lin Feng was attacking, they couldn't do much, they could barely move. Immediately after, the women forced the other four cultivators away, opening a way for Lin Feng. Everyone was gasping with astonishment because the cooperation between them was incredible.

That cultivator at the fifth Xuan Qi layer was shaking violently. Powerful energies continued to bombard the atmosphere and the sounds of collisions were unceasing. At the same time, Lin Feng released some more terrifying deadly energy which made that cultivator frown, and all his muscles started to twitch.

Immediately after, just like an illusion, Lin Feng appeared. He destroyed the energies released by the cultivator and immediately arrived in front of him. That cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer only felt a gust of wind pass by his body and immediately noticed Lin Feng.

Lin Feng released a deadly Qi filled with sword intent and pressed it against the cultivator's throat. The energy seemed extremely weak compared to normal, but it was more than enough to pierce through his throat.

“Gulp!”

The cultivator swallowed with fright, when he felt that deadly Qi against his throat, his throat felt extremely dry and he looked terrified.

At that moment, Lin Feng could kill him whenever he wished. If he was killed, all the years he spent on cultivation would disappear with him.

“Tell me who you are.” Said Lin Feng coldly which made that person’s eyes twinkle as if he had a chance of survival.

“If I tell you, will you let me go?” Asked that person with a glimmer of hope in his eyes. His determination had been crushed, telling Lin Feng didn’t matter, Lin Feng was already a dead man!

“I am not interested in your life.” Said Lin Feng in a cold and detached tone which caused the man to have a hope of surviving. He had already broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer, in Xue Yue, there were only a few dozen people who were stronger than him, no more than a hundred. Dying here didn’t seem worth it.

“I want you to say it yourself and swear that you will let me off if I tell you.” Said the cultivator, he didn’t trust Lin Feng.

“If you speak the truth, I will not kill you.” Promised Lin Feng.

“Alright.” Said that person while nodding, he opened his mouth again but at that moment, a voice interrupted from the distance.

“No need to ask him. I will tell you who he is!” Said the voice. Everybody turned their heads and looked into the distance.

There was a man wearing a snow dragon robe, he was flying calmly through the air and looked majestic. The people from the Holy Courtyard were filled with admiration while looking at him.

What shocked Lin Feng was that person's face, he looked very familiar.

“A relative of She Qiong....” Lin Feng thought at that moment. Indeed, that person and She Qiong looked very similar.

The one who was being threatened by Lin Feng grew frightened and the four others who were being trapped by the women looked delighted. Their leader had arrived!

Their leader wasn't an ordinary officer. Other officers, in front of him, were forced to show him respect and reverence. They all worshipped him. Ordinary officers even acknowledged their allegiance to him because he was a shining star.

“Do you know who I am and why I want to kill you?” Asked that person while staring at Lin Feng.

“Because of She Qiong?” Asked Lin Feng.

“Indeed, he was my son but you still dared to kill him.” Said that person coldly and calmly. His face was filled with killing intent.

“She Qiong deserved to die.” Said Lin Feng in a cold and detached way. She Qiong had tried to kill him and had humiliated Meng Qing, so Lin Feng didn’t regret killing him.

“If he deserved to die, then you deserve to die ten thousand deaths.” Said that person with an extremely scary look on his face!

Chapter 490: Life and Death Gamble!

“I deserve to die ten thousand deaths?” Lin Feng was staring at his interlocutor and smiling coldly: “Well, before I die, tell me who you are, what is your status?”

“Wait until the moment before your death and I will tell you.” Said that person still not revealing his status. In Xue Yue, there were people who were hidden in the shadows. Very few people knew who they were. They were the most mysterious group of the country. In order to be part of this group, people had to be at least at the Xuan Qi layer.

In the Imperial City, they were always present. The Imperial Clan was extremely strong for two reasons, one was because of their blood spirit, the other one was that group of elite troops, one of their missions was to kill rebels within the country.

“Lin Feng, you are the Marquis of Yangzhou and you came into the Imperial City with an army, that is an extremely serious crime. You and your army will die, all of you.” Said that middle-aged man in a cold and detached tone.

“After killing you, I will kill everyone you brought with you. None of you respect the laws of Xue Yue, so I will give all of you the death penalty, none of you will be left alive.”

“How aggressive and arrogant!” Thought the people on the ground. They were all looking at him with admiration. She Qiong was already very strong but his father was much stronger. He was

probably stronger than those five cultivators of the fifth Xuan Qi layer. Which meant that he had at least broken through to the sixth Xuan Qi layer.

At such high levels, a single cultivation layer would make a huge difference. A cultivator of the sixth Xuan Qi layer was much stronger than a group of cultivators at the fifth Xuan Qi layer.

Everyone was trying to guess what that person's social status was. Duan Tian Lang and those five cultivators of the fifth Xuan Qi layer looked like they revered and worshiped him, so wasn't that person's social status much higher than them?

Duan Tian Lang was looking at him with admiration and respect, so what was his status? He looked majestic and released a commanding presence.

The affairs of the Imperial City were very mysterious. Many people couldn't understand the affairs of the city, all they could do was guess.

In the past, most people thought that cultivators of the third and fourth Xuan Qi layer were amazing, but after the genius competition of Xue Yue, stronger and stronger cultivators were revealing themselves from the shadows. There were many people who were hiding from the public eyes. Apart from cultivators of the fourth Xuan Qi layer, there were even cultivators of the fifth Xuan Qi layer who were hidden, and now, there was someone even stronger.

“Sorry but what you are saying is absolutely unjustified. Those people are not an army, they belong to my sect, they are lone cultivators from the Yun Hai Sect who travelled to the Imperial City with me. I am not acting as the Chi Xie Marquis today, instead I am acting as the Patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect. In the past, Duan Tian Lang destroyed the Yun Hai Sect and today, as the Patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect, I will avenge the Yun Hai Sect. What is so inappropriate about that?” Said Lin Feng loudly and firmly.

Many people were gobsmacked. If Lin Feng had come to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue using his status as the Patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect and people from his sect had followed him into the Imperial City, then technically it didn't break any laws. He had the right to seek revenge for his sect.

“Besides, what do you intend to do? By attacking me while hiding your social status... You're saying that I committed a crime, what gives you the right to speak when you don't even know a thing?” Said Lin Feng in an ice-cold tone. He coldly stared at his interlocutor and remained unyielding. Even though he was weaker than his interlocutor, his words weren't weak at all.

Lin Feng was fearless. Even if Lin Feng had to risk his life, who knew who would come out victorious? The result couldn't be predicted.

Lin Feng understood that arguing with him was useless, strength was the most important thing in this world. Strength would determine who was right and who was wrong, that was the basic principle in this world of cultivation. If your fist was strong enough to silence the opposition, it didn't matter if you were

wrong. Lin Feng couldn't afford to act as the weaker side in front of that person, otherwise the other person would have the advantage.

As expected, when Lin Feng said that, a terrifying Qi invaded the atmosphere, it was extremely frightening and created a roar as it tore through the sky. It sounded like a furious flood dragon. The man wanted to use force to win.

Lin Feng didn't look at that man again. He turned his head to look at the cultivator of the fifth Xuan Qi layer, he smiled coldly and said: "You still haven't told me who you are, if he doesn't want to speak, you should tell me."

That person looked extremely tense and nervous, he was shaking from head to toe. Lin Feng's hand was surrounded by an extremely sharp deadly Qi. Lin Feng kept his hand pressed against that person's throat the entire time, he hadn't changed his position. That person hadn't tried to break free from Lin Feng because he could feel Lin Feng's sharp Qi pressing against his throat. If Lin Feng had sensed any movements, Lin Feng would have immediately killed him. Therefore, he didn't dare to move at all. At that moment, Lin Feng was forcing him to talk.

She Qiong's father also looked down at him with an ice-cold look in his eyes. That cultivator of the fifth Xuan Qi layer felt that the pressure surrounding him was growing.

He felt like he was carrying two gigantic mountains, one on each shoulder.

It was clear to him that he couldn't reveal their social status, it was their most basic rule and it would be enforced now that an officer was present. They always acted in secret within the country. Even if they appeared in public, they would never stay in the open for long. Today their purpose was to kill Lin Feng and then disappear as quickly as possible. People would usually forget about them with time. The problem they faced at that moment was, not only were they unable to kill Lin Feng, but on top of that, Lin Feng was forcing him to talk.

“You know what will happen if you talk.” Said She Qiong's father coldly. Which caused that person to pull a long face. If he didn't talk, Lin Feng would kill him, if he talked, She Qiong's father would kill him. It was a dead end either way.

“If you don't talk, I will immediately kill you.” Said Lin Feng coldly which made that person's facial expression grow more hideous.

“Officer!” Said that person while looking at She Qiong's father in a hopeless and desperate way, he was hoping that She Qiong's father would save his life.

“He will not kill you, he wouldn't dare. If he does, he will be considered a rebel and he will be sentenced to death along with his entire family and everyone close to him.” Said She Huan, but that person didn't believe it and looked over to Lin Feng.

“I will give you ten seconds.” Said Lin Feng calmly.

“You know perfectly what will happen if you talk, he’s just threatening you, he won’t dare to act. I’m telling you that he will not kill you which means that he will not kill you.” Said She Huan as he was gambling that Lin Feng would stay his hand.

“If he kills you, I will kill him, everybody will be a witness.” Said She Huan but he wasn’t looking at that cultivator of the fifth Xuan Qi layer at all, he was only staring at Lin Feng, he was clearly threatening Lin Feng.

“Seven seconds.” Said Lin Feng indifferently ignoring She Huan.

She Huan released an extremely oppressive Qi. Lin Feng could feel how oppressive and wild the Qi was, it was terrifying. The cultivator Lin Feng was threatening could also feel that oppressive Qi. She Huan was hoping that Lin Feng wouldn’t do anything when he sensed the oppressive Qi.

“Four seconds.” Said Lin Feng indifferently. The cultivator looked extremely tense. She Huan’s Qi was becoming more and more violent and brutal in the air. If that person talked, She Huan would kill him, but if Lin Feng dared to kill him, then She Huan would kill Lin Feng.

“Two seconds.” Said Lin Feng. The person’s facial muscles were twitching as he thought, he was gnashing his teeth but he wasn’t speaking... Under such an oppressive Qi, he would die if he spoke. It was extremely possible that Lin Feng wouldn’t dare to kill him when facing She Huan.

“One second.”

He just remained silent but the silence was terrifying.

“Idiot.” Said Lin Feng as if he found the situation to be ridiculous. Ten seconds had already elapsed. His fingertip penetrated into the man’s throat and then was pulled out with a slash.

That person’s pupils abruptly shrunk, but his eyes were wide open in shock, he looked terrified. Lin Feng didn’t say anything superfluous, he immediately killed him when the time was over.

Lin Feng wouldn’t dare to kill him?

Ignorant! His choice was clearly flawed in many ways.

“If he had really cared about your life, he wouldn’t have threatened to kill me in retaliation. Since he initially wanted to kill me regardless, why would I be intimidated by his threats?” Said Lin Feng indifferently which stupefied She Huan. As expected, She Huan didn’t take action, he didn’t even look at the cultivator who died, it was as if his death had nothing to do with She Huan. She Huan only wanted one thing, to kill Lin Feng.

That cultivator of the fifth Xuan Qi layer couldn’t close his eyes even in death, his body fell from the sky with wide eyes. A cultivator of the fifth Xuan Qi layer had just died by Lin Feng’s

hands!

“I must say that I admire your courage.” Said She Huan while looking emotionless and releasing a thick deadly energy.

“But when facing a much stronger cultivator, courage is useless.”

At that moment, She Huan released a monstrous Qi which filled the air and crashed in Lin Feng’s direction.

“Even though you’re strong, what gives you the audacity to say “MUCH stronger”!?” Laughed Lin Feng.

“Thirty-six celestial swords formation, CONDENSE!”

Chapter 491: Sword Formation!

After Lin Feng said those words, multiple sword lights started to appear.

Thirty-six swords emerged from his body, which diffused extremely sharp lights.

At the same time, those thirty-six women moved too, they all rushed into formation. Colourful ribbons appearing in the air as the women used their ribbons to grab hold of those swords. Their silhouettes then flickered as they rose higher into the air.

Those thirty-six women were all attacking at the same time, their ribbons fluttering violently as they rushed through the air. The swords they were holding with their ribbons were creating a terrifying buzzing sound. The buzzing sound from each sword started to synchronise and which created a strange whistling sound in the air.

The formations of those women were precise and exquisite. In small formations, they were able to suppress those cultivators of the fifth Xuan Qi layer, and at that moment, they were using the thirty-six celestial swords formation.

She Huan suddenly looked extremely tense, he only saw the thirty-six swords condense and then violently rush through the air until each sword was pointing at him. The Qi from those swords was terrifying.

“A pitiful sword formation, do you think such a thing is useful against me?!” Shouted She Huan arrogantly. His body shook and he stretched his hands, releasing a flood dragon into the sky.

“Empowered Sword!” Shouted Lin Feng. The thirty-six women suddenly released their pure Qi which rushed through their colourful ribbons towards the swords. The pure Qi then rushed into the swords at the end the ribbons. The buzzing sounds from the swords grew more and more intense. The power of the swords was increased as they started to buzz even louder and were shaking in the air.

“Roaaaarrrr!”

She Huan’s flood dragon bared its fangs and brandished its claws. As the swords grew more violent in the air. The swords suddenly created an extremely loud whistling sound in the air. Shortly after, dazzling and resplendent lights emerged from the tip of each sword, which then pierced through the atmosphere towards She Huan’s flood dragon.

Those terrifying sword lights pierced through the flood dragon’s body. In a flash the dragon was completely destroyed. Besides, even though those sword lights looked slightly weakened, they still contained a terrifying power which rushed towards She Huan.

“Huh?” She Huan frowned. That sword formation was much stronger than he expected.

“Boom!” A powerful pure Qi condensed in the air and formed a

wall which slowed the sword lights, but as before, it was unable to block them.

“Break!” Shouted She Huan. He took a step forwards and released a terrifying pure Qi from his body. A flood dragon roared and then bombarded towards the sword lights, the sword lights exploded into multiple small lights which looked like stars before they dispersed.

“Shadow Swords!” Shouted Lin Feng like a powerful general commanding his troops. In the air, above She Huan, multiple silhouettes appeared. Those thirty-six women took advantage of a small gap and had gained a complete advantage in this battle.

The sword shadows rushed through the atmosphere and sword lights started rushing towards She Huan from above like shooting stars. Those thirty-six swords moved with incredible speed through the air and created strange shadow swords from their afterimages which started to attack She Huan.

The thirty-six celestial sword formation was a battle formation which Lin Feng had taken from the memories of the Zun Qi layer cultivator. It was extremely hard to use because it required thirty-six people to use a sword. There had to be thirty-six souls connected in perfect synchronisation to control the thirty-six swords in the formation. Lin Feng had taught the women that sword formation and the result wasn't bad at all.

“Get lost!” Shouted She Huan furiously. His flood dragon continuously swiped out its claws against the swords, which created multiple shockwaves in the air.

There were countless sword lights and multiple swords in the air to fight against. She Huan continued to attack like a madman, he was starting to feel exhausted by this formation and the danger was growing.

This was one of the main purposes of the sword formation, it would grow stronger over time.

“Much stronger? Kill everyone here? How ignorant can a person be. You’re a joke.” Said Lin Feng coldly which made She Huan pull a long face. When he had arrived, he acted with extreme arrogance as if Lin Feng and his army were already dead. He had thought that with a few movements he could crush Lin Feng and his army to death. He assumed this because he was at the sixth Xuan Qi layer, he thought he had enough strength to easily handle Lin Feng and his army.

However, at that moment, his arrogance had disappeared and Lin Feng was mocking him in front of everyone. That sword formation was causing him a great deal of problems, as the people he underestimated watched with mocking expressions.

“Roaaarrrr!” A terrifying bestial roar filled the air. She Huan’s suddenly released his flood dragon spirit.

“Break!” She Huan joined his two fists and started to give off a dangerous air. The shadow swords immediately broke from the powerful energy.

“Flood Dragon Warp Fist!” Shouted She Huan. An endless stream of fists bombarded the atmosphere in all directions. That was his version of the Flood Dragon Warp Fist. She Huan’s Flood Dragon Warp Fist was much stronger than She Qiong’s version. He had a much better understanding and control over the power compared to his son.

“Boom!” A terrifying deadly energy invaded the atmosphere and rushed out of the swords like waves. The sword’s energy and the Flood Dragon Warp Fists collided in the air with uncountable amount of explosions.

“Die!” She Huan rushed backwards to create a gap between them. His body dashed into the sky, he was trying to rush out of the formation and at the same time attack one of the women who was above him.

His terrifying fist was streaking across the sky and destroyed all traces of the sword shadows in its path.

“Sword wind!” Shouted Lin Feng in a calm and cold voice. The thirty-six women moved at the same time, they were very agile and extremely well organised. Even though they had to focus on their hearts and souls being connected, they still had the power to follow orders individually with precision.

The thirty-six women attacked with their swords at the same time. There were swords rushing from every direction. They pierced through the air and were heading straight for She Huan. The crowd could see the white lights created by those swords, it was terrifying, there was also the strong power of wind

surrounding the swords, removing the air resistance.

She Huan was stupefied. He could see all of the swords around him rush towards his direction.

That sword formation was terrifying and those women were highly skilled. They even borrowed the power of the wind to increase the speed of that attack.

“Call of the Flood Dragon!” Shouted She Huan furiously. He joined his two hands and attacked towards the open air. A terrifying flood dragon’s call filled the air and it seemed like countless flood dragons had appeared in the air. The countless flood dragons started to rush towards the incoming swords. An incredible counter force propelled She Huan’s body backwards.

He turned his head around, he then shouted: “You four, how come you haven’t killed him!?”

The four cultivators of the fifth Xuan Qi layer were just watching the battle, they had thought that because She Huan was fighting, they didn’t need to do anything because he would easily deal with Lin Feng. However, the course of the battle was different from what they had expected. She Huan was fighting against the thirty-six women and everyone was captivated by the battle, to the extent they had completely forgotten about Lin Feng.

The moment they heard She Huan, they immediately looked over to Lin Feng.

Indeed, those thirty-six women were busy with She Huan, but killing him wouldn't be simple. Besides, if Lin Feng wasn't commanding them, the battle formation would weaken and She Huan would be able to break it with ease. Lin Feng didn't have any other powerful experts in hiding, so nobody else could interfere. If they didn't kill Lin Feng now, when would they do it?

If they killed Lin Feng, the battle formation would start to fall apart.

The four cultivators of the fifth Xuan Qi layer all released their deadly energy and moved towards Lin Feng, they quickly arrived in front of him.

Lin Feng had just killed one of their companions, so they wanted revenge. They couldn't miss this golden opportunity. After all, Lin Feng's natural abilities were too terrifying to allow him to live.

When Lin Feng sensed their deadly energies, he slowly turned around and looked at the four people. He was smiling coldly.

Now, they were going to attempt to kill him? Did they think he had grown soft now that he was alone? Lin Feng opened his hand and released the power of his soul. At the same time, multiple lights started flashing as thirty-six swords appeared. The terrifying power of those swords caused people's spines to tingle.

"Thirty-six swords? What is he doing?" The onlooker's pupils shrank. The thirty-six women were already busy fighting against She Huan, what did Lin Feng want to do with those thirty-six

swords? Was he going to use all thirty-six swords himself?

Impossible! That was a ridiculous idea.

One person could replace a group of people... There were illusion formations, deadly formations, battle formations and countless other formations... But they all required groups of people to be used, but those thirty-six women were already busy using the thirty-six celestial swords formation to fight... They needed to focus on their current battle, did Lin Feng have another group of thirty-six experts hidden within his troops? How was he planning to use those swords?!

Chapter 492: One Man Battle Formation!

The four cultivators of the fifth Xuan Qi layer surrounded Lin Feng. Even though the thirty-six women could control the cultivator of the sixth Xuan Qi layer, She Huan, Lin Feng had to fight alone.

“This time, you’re definitely going to die.” said Duan Tian Lang while staring at Lin Feng with an evil smile.

Lin Feng glanced at Duan Tian Lang and said indifferently: “You’re not dead yet, so I can’t die.”

“You are too confident. Even though you are strong enough to confront a cultivator of the fifth Xuan Qi layer, you are now facing four cultivators of the fifth Xuan Qi layer. Besides, how do you plan to handle the thirty-six swords by yourself? Fool. Can you create the formation alone? I don’t think so, unless you have another thirty-six women hiding within your troops.” Said Duan Tian Lang while smiling coldly.

He couldn’t help but admire Lin Feng though, Lin Feng had been gone through extremely dangerous battles before and always came out victorious. Besides, he was always growing stronger with each battle. If Lin Feng’s opponent was weak, it was because he was too strong, but if his opponent was strong, then he would become stronger.

The crowd was astonished. Duan Tian Lang was speaking as if Lin Feng was already dead.

Duan Tian Lang still felt puzzled.

“Who said that I can’t control thirty-six swords by myself?” Said Lin Feng while smiling coldly. He then abruptly released his purple spirit and in a flash, thirty-six purple tentacles appeared, forming arms which grabbed the thirty-six swords. At the same time, Lin Feng released his soul and used his surplus souls technique, countless surplus souls penetrated into the purple tentacles. Those swords weren’t only controlled by Lin Feng’s purple spirit but also by multiple souls.

Each sword was under Lin Feng’s absolute control, it was exactly the same as if he really had thirty-six arms, the feeling was the same.

That single move caused the people’s hearts to pound violently, they were all blankly staring at Lin Feng. The thirty-six swords started shaking and emitting buzzing sounds in the air; one man was controlling all thirty-six swords.

“A single person’s ability is indeed limited, but there are endless possibilities on the path of cultivation. You’re like a frog at the bottom of a well, you have such a small outlook and little experience, so you judge the world based on your own ability. You act like you know everything, but you actually understand nothing.” Said Lin Feng while looking at Duan Tian Lang, which stupefied him. Lin Feng could surprisingly control thirty-six swords, was something like this simple for him?

When the crowd heard Lin Feng, it caused everyone to sink deep into contemplation.

Indeed, an ordinary person's strength was limited but when it came to the many paths of cultivation, there were countless possibilities. On the path of cultivation, a single person had millions of ways to achieve their goal. Nothing was considered impossible. Lin Feng was proof as he was able to control thirty-six swords by himself, which others deemed impossible.

Those four cultivators of the fifth Xuan Qi layer coldly stared at Lin Feng. They were slightly puzzled. A moment before, Lin Feng had killed their companion. If Lin Feng had the opportunity, why didn't he kill them? If he really had the power to kill them, wouldn't they already be dead?

"I will attack, you two assist me, Lang Qi, you stay behind me as support." Said one of the four cultivators to the other three. They all nodded in agreement. The person who had just spoken had a sword spirit so his fighting power was the most appropriate to deal with the sword formation.

The four cultivators all released their spirits at the same time. The one directly facing Lin Feng had a sword spirit, it seemed extremely sharp.

The two by his sides, each had a blade spirit which seemed brutal. The last person had a beast spirit, it was an evil wolf with a black face.

“Die!” Shouted the one with the sword spirit. His silhouette flickered as his sword emitted an ice-cold light that rushed straight towards Lin Feng. The sword was terrifyingly powerful and was absorbing all the energy from the atmosphere as it attacked.

“What terrifying sword energy.” Thought the crowd on the ground while looking up to the sky. That sword was dazzling and it created a storm in the air wherever it passed. It released thunderous roars in the atmosphere, like thunderclaps. If anyone else was facing that person, they would have been killed in a flash.

As expected, a sword cultivator of the fifth Xuan Qi layer was extremely powerful.

“Empowered Sword!” Shouted Lin Feng in a deep voice. In a flash, his thirty-six swords started to absorb his Qi and released a powerful sword energy. A terrifying sword energy emerged which caused Lin Feng’s opponents to tremble. That sword energy was shocking!

“Die.” shouted one of the four cultivators extremely loudly. Just like autumn leaves falling in the wind, two gigantic blades streaked across the sky in Lin Feng’s direction, the atmosphere seemed like it was being lacerated by their blades.

“Go!” Shouted Lin Feng. His thirty-six swords started to tremble and shake. A sharp and dazzling white light emerged from each of the swords, the entire sky was filled with white light. His sword lights looked like shooting stars in the sky as they streaked across the sky in the blink of an eye.

“PSSSSSHHHHHHHHHH....” An intense piercing sound filled the air, Lin Feng’s sword lights were so fast that it was unimaginable. In a flash, they attacked the sword energy of the fifth Xuan Qi layer cultivator and pierced straight through it.

That cultivator suddenly looked desperate and hopeless. He wanted to escape but it was too late already. The white lights were too fast. The crowd only saw the sword light pierce violently through the air. Immediately after, that person’s body started to shake. There was a clear wound on his chest, that sword light had pierced straight through his chest.

“What a terrifying sword!”

The crowd was shaking. Lin Feng, alone, was able to control thirty-six swords perfectly and use the thirty-six celestial sword formation, how incredible! Lin Feng could easily kill cultivators of the fifth Xuan Qi layer, maybe even cultivators of the sixth Xuan Qi layer!

“Boom!”

While the crowd was staring at the corpse falling from the sky, the two blade cultivators attacked Lin Feng, however, Lin Feng moved like the wind and disappeared from his original position. He dodged the blades but the pressure caused by those blades still struck his body creating a painful sensation.

Those two blades cultivators didn’t stop attacking, they turned

around and their blades once again rushed towards Lin Feng. They had already fought so many battles throughout their life, even if Lin Feng was monstrously strong and killed their companions, they wouldn't get distracted and would continue the fight.

“Aawwoooooooo.....” The howl of a wolf suddenly emerged. The one who had a wolf spirit had transformed into a wolf and threw himself towards Lin Feng. There were ominous glints twinkling in his eyes as he slashed out with his sharp claws.

“Sword Rearrangement!” Shouted Lin Feng. His thirty-six swords then split into three separate groups of twelve swords. Each group of swords moved in the direction of the three cultivators. The swords emitted extremely loud buzzing sounds continuously.

The blade energy collided with the swords and created a terrifying explosion in the air. The one who had the beast spirit was the most vulnerable to the sword formation, he could only use the power of his claws to individually block each sword, but blocking twelve swords wouldn't be easy. Besides, Lin Feng was controlling them with his soul. This allowed him to take advantage of every opening.

Lin Feng wouldn't stop fighting until he saw his enemies' blood.

At that moment, Lin Feng moved and rushed towards the one with the beast spirit while he released a terrifying deadly energy and condensed the black deadly sword in his hand. Lin Feng looked like a death god!

“It’s over. One of them is doomed.” Thought the crowd when they saw Lin Feng’s deadly sword piercing through the atmosphere.

“Aaawwooooooooo!” The one with the beast spirit howled. His black wolf face looked hideous as he slashed out in Lin Feng’s direction. It created a monstrous explosion against the deadly energy surrounding Lin Feng.

“Die!” Shouted Lin Feng. As his claws slashed out, the twelve sword lights pierced through the person’s back and burst out through his chest, creating a rain of blood and gore.

At the same time, Lin Feng didn’t stop his movements and his deadly sword immediately removed the person’s head. The one with the beast spirit didn’t even have time to give a horrible shriek before the sword had already removed his head.

“He’s dead!” The crowd was trembling. Lin Feng was terrifying! He was slaughtering cultivators of the fifth Xuan Qi layer like they were chickens.

He calmly turned in the air, there were two cultivators left.

Lin Feng’s silhouette flickered, the twelve swords started to buzz and then immediately shot through the air in the direction of the two remaining cultivators.

“Sword Rain!” Shouted Lin Feng in a deep voice. The thirty-six swords seemed to transform into a curtain of rain which fell onto the two remaining cultivators. A monstrous rain of tiny swords surrounded them in every direction.

“It’s over they’re dead. Lin Feng is too much for them.”

Many people sighed when they saw the two exhausted cultivators who were put into a pitiful state by Lin Feng’s swords. Besides, Lin Feng was just calmly staring at them like a tiger eyeing his prey. The people of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue were gasping with amazement but at the same time, they didn’t want Lin Feng to win.

Lin Feng had come here... to kill them!

Chapter 493: Terrifying Sword Intent!

Whatever result the members of the Holy Courtyard were wishing for, the result of the battle couldn't be changed.

The two cultivators of the fifth Xuan Qi layer were struggling inside Lin Feng's sword formation. They couldn't escape, those thirty-six swords seemed to have formed into countless tiny sword lights which fell down like rain from the sky.

"You thought you were strong enough to kill me?" Lin Feng arrived in front of the sword curtain. His voice sounded ice-cold. Those five had come to help Duan Tian Lang kill Lin Feng.

They had thought that it would be easy for them to kill Lin Feng, but at that moment, Lin Feng was able to crush them with ease.

The two people imprisoned by the rain of swords looked pitiful and were deathly pale. They had come to kill Lin Feng, but he was only toying with their lives. He could kill them whenever he wanted. They wanted to say something but they didn't have time to speak and could only defend. They were scared that Lin Feng would immediately kill them if they spoke.

"And what was the result?" Lin Feng took a step and arrived above the sword curtain. Those two people wouldn't be able to endure it for much longer but Lin Feng didn't feel like wasting time anyway.

His deadly sword fell from the sky, directly towards them.

“Aaaarrghhhhh!” The eyes of the two cultivators turned bloodshot when they sensed Lin Feng’s deadly sword and they uttered a long cry of agony. It was of no use, they couldn’t do anything while being surrounded by the sword rain. They couldn’t resist against Lin Feng’s deadly sword either.

“Boom!” One of them attacked with his blade and tried to block Lin Feng’s sword, but in a flash Lin Feng’s sword energy pierced through the attack and pierced straight through his heart.

The other cultivator yelled violently, he couldn’t bear the pain anymore, he felt like he was suffocating under the pressure. He was struggling desperately to escape. Suddenly a tiny sword pierced his body which caused him to violently convulse with pain and die under the countless tiny swords which continued to rain down on him. The cultivators had been trapped within a rain of tiny swords, so their bodies were riddled with thousands of small wounds before they died, they both died miserably!

They were dead. The five cultivators of the fifth Xuan Qi layer were all died, all of them had been killed by Lin Feng.

The crowd saw Lin Feng open his hand and the purple spirit was absorbed back into his body through his palm, along with the surplus souls. The thirty-six swords, the purple spirit, and the surplus souls were absorbed, leaving only the four dead bodies remaining.

Lin Feng had returned to his normal and calm composure, but

the onlookers were shocked.

Lin Feng was incredible! The speed at which he had progressed on the path of cultivation was astonishing. Each time he fought, he would be much stronger than the last time. There was never a time when Lin Feng stopped growing stronger. Every time that someone came for his life, his opponents would underestimate the speed in which Lin Feng grew and would be killed because of it.

Lin Feng once again proved how gifted he was when it came to cultivation. Cultivators of the fifth Xuan Qi layer were overlords in the country of Xue Yue, they were considered as some of the strongest cultivators in the country, but in front of Lin Feng, they would be massacred.

The most terrifying part was that Lin Feng had only broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer. What would he be like in the future, after having broken through to higher cultivation layers?

Duan Tian Lang's heart was racing. When Lin Feng glanced at him, a feeling of terror invaded his heart and he started shaking from head to toe.

“Don't be scared. I am not going to kill you yet.” Said Lin Feng indifferently which astonished Duan Tian Lang and the crowd on the ground.

What a humiliation! Lin Feng was already strong enough to humiliate Duan Tian Lang. Duan Tian Lang was nothing more than a buffoon when facing Lin Feng. Lin Feng could kill him

whenever he wished, he had the power to toy with Duan Tian Lang and decide when he would die.

Duan Tian Lang took a deep breath, his eyes were bloodshot, he looked like a ferocious beast. He could only wait, wait for Lin Feng to kill him. Waiting for his own death and not knowing when it would be was a horrible feeling for Duan Tian Lang, it was unbearable!

He clearly knew that he was going to die, it was unavoidable, but he just didn't know how and when. The fact that he had no control and could only wait for death caused Duan Tian Lang to suffer immensely.

The thirty-six women were still fighting against She Huan and were able to suppress him inside the formation, but they were unable to kill him. Both sides refused to lose to the other and they were trapped in a stalemate.

At that moment, She Huan's face was glum. He obviously saw that Lin Feng had just killed those four cultivators. Initially, he had hoped that the four cultivators would be able to kill Lin Feng and then help him to escape from the formation... He hadn't thought that Lin Feng would kill the four cultivators of the fifth Xuan Qi layer. It was the total opposite of what he wanted, Lin Feng could join them and easily deal with him.

Besides, She Huan was absolutely shocked by Lin Feng's terrifying battle abilities. He had only broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer and was able to kill four cultivators of the fifth Xuan Qi layer single-handedly. Besides, it seemed like using a battle

formation meant for thirty-six people by himself was an easy thing. It would require a deep understanding of formations and an extremely strong soul to accomplish such a thing. He was indeed extremely talented, and even more dangerous.

Lin Feng arrived in front of the women and She Huan. He then looked at She Huan and said loudly; “You want to kill me? You want to kill everyone I brought with me? She Huan you are such a stupid animal. You too weak to even escape this sword formation. How do you plan to do it from in there? You are nothing but a dog barking from inside a cage.”

When She Huan heard Lin Feng humiliating him, his facial expression looked even glummer. Lin Feng was calling him an animal, a dog barking in a cage. She Huan was one of the nine Snow Dragon Officers... He had never been humiliated in such a way.

His heart was pounding. Suddenly, a sword swept past his body and blood appeared. The crowd was shocked. Lin Feng was infuriating him, so he would lose his focus in the fight against the sword formation.

She Huan knew what Lin Feng was doing. Lin Feng was humiliating him in front of so many people to distract him. But it was a very difficult for She Huan to remain focused, he was absolutely furious.

“Lin Feng, YOU SHOULD DIE!!!!” Shouted She Huan furiously! A terrifying and brutal energy rushed out from his body. It was a bestial Qi which shot into the sky. He then raised his fists into the

air which transformed into a pair of sharp flood dragon claws. His eyes looked cruel and sanguinary.

“ROOOAARRRR!” She Huan’s flood dragon spirit rose into the air and gave a terrifying roar. She Huan’s claws collided with the sword Qi surrounding him in an attempt to destroy the balance.

At that moment, the thirty-six horizontal swords started to release extremely bright lights which shot towards She Huan, preventing him from breaking free from the sword formation.

“Roaarr... Roaarr....” She Huan’s flood dragon roared as the claws fearlessly slashed forwards, annihilating everything.

The thirty-six lights that were shot forward broke one after the other. She Huan’s hands transformed into sharp flood dragon claws again. His hands were bleeding but he continued to attack the sword lights with his claws.

“Boom!” A terrifying oppressive energy finally caused the women to suddenly move back! She Huan grew more aggressive and released a monstrous amount of Qi, which surprisingly formed into what appeared to be a real flood dragon.

“He broke out!”

She Huan’s eyes were ferocious, he had finally managed to break free from the battle formation.

But at that moment, he noticed a terrifying deadly energy which caused the inner parts of his soul tremble.

What a monstrous deadly energy and.... Intent!

She Huan raised his head and looked at the terrifying black sword, it was filled with the astonishing black deadly energy, but at the same time, that black sword contained the scorching power of the sun, that black energy was filled with sun Qi!

“How scary!” The crowd also raised their heads to see the black sword engulfed in flames. The flames were burning on the outside of the black sword. There were two powerful energies combined within the sword, it was astonishing!

The sword was filled with powerful sword intent.

Lin Feng's sword was scorching hot like the sun, but was also mixed with a dark deadly energy. As it descended from the sky, it grew more intense and its speed increased. In a flash, it arrived in front of She Huan.

She Huan didn't flinch and the gigantic flood dragon formed by Qi attacked Lin Feng's sword.

That sword had the determination to destroy everything in its path, including the flood dragon. She Huan released a powerful pure Qi to block that sword as he quickly retreated.

However, the sword continued unhindered and blood splashed into the air. A deep wound was sliced into She Huan's chest, soaking his body with blood.

She Huan was shaking as he looked at that wound, he looked extremely ferocious and glared hatefully at Lin Feng.

“I, She Huan, swear that I will kill you, Lin Feng.” Said She Huan furiously, his body flickered as he shot into the distance, leaving a trail of blood behind as he ran away.

She Huan, a cultivator of the sixth Xuan Qi layer, was running away with his tail between his legs!

Chapter 494: Destruction

She Huan's threat resonated through the sky of the Imperial City. Lin Feng watched as he escaped into the horizon, but didn't chase him.

"You just said that you would kill us all, but we are still standing here! It's you that is running away like a stray dog." Said Lin Feng whose voice echoed loudly through the sky until it reached She Huan, causing him to cough up blood.

Lin Feng was right, a moment before, She Huan had said that he was going to kill everyone there, but now, he was running away like a stray dog. A majestic officer of the Snow Dragon Guards was running away from a young man who wasn't even twenty years old.

Besides, Lin Feng had killed his men, five cultivators of the fifth Xuan Qi layer. Lin Feng humiliated him, but he could do nothing to regain his prestige.

She Huan finally disappeared out of view in the horizon. The crowd saw the thirty-six women's silhouettes flicker to return to join the troops, as if nothing had happened, they were like Lin Feng's shadow guards.

The people below were looking up at Lin Feng and they felt a strange sensation overcome them. She Huan had escaped and now what was going to happen to them? What was Lin Feng going to do to the Holy Courtyard?

There was nobody who could stop Lin Feng and his army in the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.

Lin Feng glanced at the crowd with cold and emotionless eyes while releasing a deadly Qi.

At that moment, it was just like Yan Yu Ping Sheng said, he had started walking down the path of killing causing bloodbaths wherever he went.

A person would have many choices to make throughout their lives, but one wrong choice could lead them to their death. These people had decided to join the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. They had decided on joining Duan Tian Lang, therefore, they were Lin Feng's enemies. He would show no mercy to his enemies.

Lin Feng remained silent while releasing an oppressive Qi which almost caused the people below to have trouble breathing. Everybody was staring at Lin Feng who said: "In the past, Duan Tian Lang went to destroy the Yun Hai Sect in order to create the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was built with the blood of the Yun Hai Sect, since you have all joined the Holy Courtyard, you will all suffer the revenge of the Yun Hai Sect. A blood debt will be repaid in blood, the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue must perish." Said Lin Feng slowly while slightly raising his hand.

"Die!"

When Lin Feng spoke the word, the armoured cavalry started to charge making the ground shake. They also released their deadly energy which soared into the sky. Thousands of Chi Xie troops were releasing their Qi at the same time which completely enveloped the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue from every direction. The weaker students felt like the air had left their lungs and their knees were shaking. The Chi Xie troops' deadly Qi was terrifying!

“Die!”

Lin Feng was really going to exterminate the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.

“Ahhhhhh.....”

Horrible shrieks started to fill the air from every direction. The students of the Holy Courtyard were panicking. The massacre was starting!

“The Holy Courtyard was supposed to be the strongest power in the country.” Said Lin Feng while looking at Duan Tian Lang and smiling coldly. “Today, you will get to see with your own eyes, how I will destroy the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. You already know that the Yun Hai Sect had been revived. All of your plots to annihilate the Yun Hai Sect, execute Uncle Liu, raise the status of the Holy Courtyard, and so on, are over. You can't do anything anymore. Your son died, today you, Duan Tian Lang, are going to die too.” Said Lin Feng whose words were as sharp as needles. Those words resonated in Duan Tian Lang's mind. Duan Tian Lang had tried, by every conceivable means, to set up crafty plots and machinations to increase his own power. He had tried to kill Lin

Feng and Liu Cang Lan countless times. He wanted to use them as stepping stones for the Holy Courtyard to grow, but in the end, all his plans fell through. Lin Feng had come to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue and was going to destroy it completely.

From that day on, the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue would disappear into history. What had Duan Tian Lang obtained from all his plotting? His son was dead and now, Lin Feng would kill him too.

The air was filled with shouts and horrible shrieks, the atmosphere was one of dread. The members of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue were terrified. Their screams and shouts echoed throughout the Imperial City.

In the distance, there were many people watching the massacre. Lin Feng had come all the way to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue and was now slaughtering them, unscrupulously and without mercy.

“Lin Feng, you are so cruel!” Shouted someone at their moment of despair. Lin Feng remained emotionless and expressionless. He had to be cruel and merciless to his enemies.

“Lin Feng, why kill us? We only joined the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue to become stronger! Isn’t this a mistake!?”

Someone with bloodshot eyes shouted to Lin Feng.

“The Yun Hai Sect was destroyed and its people were butchered, was that a mistake?” Said Lin Feng while glancing coldly at the person who shouted. In this world, no one wanted to bear the responsibility of their actions, because the only thing that mattered to them was who was strong and who was weak.

“Duan Tian Lang did that! I’m innocent!”

“Duan Tian Lang destroyed the Yun Hai Sect to build the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, but he didn’t force you to join it! You became a student of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue and an enemy to the Yun Hai Sect! After using the cultivation manuals gained from destroying my Yun Hai Sect to cultivate and grow stronger, after knowingly benefitting from the blood of my Yun Hai Sect, can you still claim that you’re innocent?” Shouted Lin Feng furiously while releasing some deadly energy which made that person shake from head to toe.

“Since you joined the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, you will disappear along with it. You knowingly benefitted from the blood which the holy Courtyard spilt and so the blood is also on your hands!” Said Lin Feng. In a flash, an armoured horse passed the person and a long spear pierced through his throat. He died with his eyes still open.

Who wanted to be held responsible for their choices?

When Duan Tian Lang had taken people to destroy the Yun Hai Sect, it was common knowledge across the country, everyone knew about it. Joining the Holy Courtyard meant profiting from the blood of the Yun Hai Sect and thus, becoming its enemy, that

was the choice made by every member who joined. Lin Feng, as the Patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect, was justified in destroying the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue and killing its members. The slaughter of the Yun Hai Sect had to be avenged.

Very few people knew of responsibilities placed on Lin Feng shoulders. Back when the Yun Hai Sect was being destroyed, Lin Feng's life was saved by the Patriarch and elders of the sect, they sacrificed their lives to save him. Lin Feng would never forget that day and the people who died to save him. He had to kill the members of the Holy Courtyard to avenge all those who had died.

Therefore, no matter if its members were involved in the destruction of the Yun Hai Sect or not, Lin Feng would still kill them. He would kill them because the Yun Hai Sect had saved his life and these people had willingly become enemies of the Yun Hai Sect. The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue were his enemies and they needed to be destroyed from its roots.

“Lin Feng.” Shouted another person. Lin Feng only saw a person on the ground rise into the air and arrive in front of him before saying: “Lin Feng, do you remember me. I was a disciple of the Yun Hai Sect, I want to return to the Yun Hai Sect.”

“Return to the Yun Hai Sect?” Lin Feng looked at that person with a mocking grin. That person was Tu Fu, a former disciple of the Yun Hai Sect.

“Yes, Lin Feng, I am a member of the Yun Hai Sect, a fellow disciple, a brother. We were forced to join the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue in the past! My only wish was to return to the Yun Hai

Sect.”

Many people on the ground were also shouting similar things. They were calling themselves disciples of the Yun Hai Sect and standing in a group under Lin Feng.

“You guys want to return, but we don’t want traitors.” Said Lin Feng in a cold and detached tone. His sword then descended from the sky and then killed Tu Fu and the other disciples. He killed all of them.

“Since you betrayed it, how dare you call yourself a disciple of the Yun Hai Sect, a bunch of shameless people.” Said Lin Feng while remaining expressionless.

The massacre was continuing and horrible shrieks were unceasingly filling the air, blood covered the ground of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, the ground was soaked red.

In the air, a silhouette moved without emitting a single sound. However, in a flash, Lin Feng moved too, just like the wind and arrived in front of the escaping figure, without looking in his direction.

“Duan Tian Lang, you want to leave already?” Said Lin Feng indifferently. Duan Tian Lang’s face turned deathly pale. Lin Feng was toying with him. He was destroying the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue and forcing him to watch.

Duan Tian Lang's eyes were cold. He suddenly released his dual spirits, a gigantic pitch-black sealed doors spirit and a dazzling sword spirit.

However, his sealed doors spirit only had three doors meaning his blood spirit was weaker than average.

He formed a few symbols with his hand and Duan Tian Lang's sealed doors abruptly moved towards Lin Feng as he shouted: "SEAL!"

The three doors shot towards Lin Feng in an attempt to seal him.

"That is soul power." Lin Feng could sense the soul power being used, it seemed like the sealed doors spirit could attack a person's soul.

But for Lin Feng, Duan Tian Lang's sealed doors spirit seemed weak.

"Don't you think it's pointless trying to fight against me?"

Lin Feng then released his powerful soul and millions of surplus souls created a wave which bombarded the sealed doors and destroyed them. Duan Tian Lang shook violently and coughed up blood.

Indeed, when facing Lin Feng, Duan Tian Lang had absolutely no chance. Lin Feng's soul power was monstrous, he could even use

his soul to directly attack the sealed doors...!!

Chapter 495: Kill Yourself

Suddenly, Duan Tian Lang's gigantic sword spirit also disappeared, he looked sad and desolate. That man, who used to have great ambitions, had grown old.

"It seems like I can't escape, I'm going to die." Said Duan Tian Lang. He had given up. It was useless to try with his strength, he couldn't do anything anymore.

Lin Feng didn't say anything, no matter what, Duan Tian Lang was going to die.

Lin Feng had let him live for such a long time only to let him witness the destruction of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue with his own eyes.

Duan Tian Lang's eyes twinkled unceasingly, he thought about killing himself but he still had some hope, maybe someone would still save him, maybe a strong cultivator would intervene.

In the distance, many silhouettes were flickering as they approached, they could see the bloodbath at the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, their eyes were bloodshot. These were the wealthy and noble people with influence in the Imperial City, their children were students at the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, but at that moment, Lin Feng was slaughtering them, including their children.

A cultivator of the first Xuan Qi layer rose into the air and arrived

in front of Lin Feng and said: “Lin Feng, my clan has some students here at the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, couldn’t you be lenient and let them off? We will immediately leave.”

Lin Feng looked at that person and said in an indifferent tone: “Do I know you?”

Lin Feng sounded calm, but his message was clear, which stupefied the cultivator. Did Lin Feng know him? What gave him the right to ask Lin Feng such a thing!

“Piss off, otherwise, I will kill you too.” Said Lin Feng which stupefied the cultivator. If that person didn’t leave, Lin Feng would kill him as well.

“Sigh.....” The man lowered his head... His eyes were filled with hatred, but he couldn’t do anything when facing Lin Feng, he was too weak.

“Lin Feng, what the hell! You’re too much! Do you know how many of our people are studying here and you are killing them all!” Said another cultivator of the first Xuan Qi layer while staring at Lin Feng, that person’s eyes were filled with hatred and anger.

Lin Feng took a step and released his terrifying deadly Qi which enveloped that person’s body and caused him to shake.

That person was terrified and his face turned deathly pale. That deadly energy was terrifying.

When that person sensed that deadly energy, he regretted speaking, he had infuriated Lin Feng. What made him stupid enough to do that?!

But it was too late for regret. Lin Feng's deadly sword descended from the sky and the person didn't even have time to react before Lin Feng's deadly sword pierced his head. A fountain of blood immediately burst out from the hole between his brows.

That move stupefied the people behind him who immediately stopped rushing forward. They all forgot what they were going to say a moment before, they didn't dare speak with Lin Feng anymore.

Lin Feng wasn't going to argue with them, only his sword would respond and solve any problems they had.

"Let's go back." Said another person while turning around and leaving the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. Even though they hated him, they didn't dare infuriate him anymore. If they made him angry, nobody would save them, and they didn't want to die.

Other people were clenching their fists and groaning angrily. They hated Lin Feng, he was destroying the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue and slaughtering their clan's younger generations.

But Lin Feng wouldn't even give them a single chance of life. He was going to kill all of them.

There was one person who looked particularly glum, that person was wearing blue clothes. It was precisely the strong cultivator whom Lin Feng had met in the past, the one from the Bai Clan. In the past, Lin Feng had killed many people from the Bai Clan and that person in blue clothes had gone to the Celestial Academy to kill Lin Feng, but was forced to leave. Now, most of the young cultivators of the Bai Clan had left the Celestial Academy and were students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, including his own son. Lin Feng was going to kill them all in the massacre.

“Let’s go and find other people who will fight against him. We can bring some of his enemies, maybe the people from the Yu Clan or the Wan Shou Sect will help, together we can defeat him. We’ll get our revenge.” Said the cultivator in blue clothes. The others looked particularly glum and slightly nodded in agreement. Indeed, they could find Lin Feng’s enemies to help obtain revenge.

The cultivator in blue clothes had been talking in a very low voice, so he was sure that Lin Feng hadn’t heard him, but he had forgotten the difference in their cultivation levels. Lin Feng’s hearing was well developed and his senses were acute, with Lin Feng’s cultivation, it was as if the man had shouted it in Lin Feng’s ears.

“Revenge? When? I don’t think that you’ll have an opportunity.” Said Lin Feng indifferently which made that cultivator in blue clothes shiver. Then, Lin Feng laughed coldly.

“If you hadn’t come here, I would have never remembered you, the Bai Clan is still ridiculous.”

The middle-aged man in blue clothes was shaking as he turned his head around, he looked at Lin Feng in an evil way.

“Ba Dao, where are you?” Shouted Lin Feng. In a flash, a silhouette with a bronze mask rose into the air. He looked extremely brutal and violent, just like a blade.

“Ba Dao, you and Mister Huo, take a thousand people with you and head to the Bai Clan, then exterminate the entire clan.” Said Lin Feng indifferently. Ba Dao nodded and went to join Mister Huo.

Besides, the people who just agreed to get their revenge looked terrified. Lin Feng was going to exterminate their entire clan. How scary!

The Bai Clan was doomed, nothing could save them.

The middle-aged man was trembling, because he spoke out, and because he had thought that Lin Feng couldn't hear him, he had delivered his clan, the Bai Clan, to its death. Lin Feng would annihilate his entire bloodline. He could still remember when he had humiliated and angered Lin Feng in the past. Now Lin Feng was much stronger than in the past, but he was still foolish enough to anger him.

“I wouldn't have thought that one of my old enemies would be foolish enough to come here and court death.” Said Lin Feng indifferently. He took a step and flickered in the air, the others

around the man in blue clothes immediately backed away. Lin Feng was a grim reaper, they didn't want to infuriate him, if they did, they would soon be in death's embrace.

The middle-aged man in blue clothes knew that he couldn't fight against Lin Feng so he tried to run away, but could he escape? Lin Feng appeared with his deadly sword and immediately killed the man with no effort. Another cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer was killed for acting foolishly.

Lin Feng could easily kill cultivators in the early layers of the Xuan Qi layer, a single movement was enough. They couldn't dodge his attacks and they couldn't escape.

Lin Feng watched the corpse as it fell, he still looked emotionless. In the past, he went to the Celestial Academy to kill Lin Feng. Lin Feng hated the Bai Clan, he had sworn that he would destroy them in the past, but with time, his hatred for them had been overshadowed and then he had forgotten about them. Lin Feng had a powerful enemy, the Yu Clan, so he had forgotten about the Bai Clan from his past.

But someone from the Bai Clan had actually shown up and caused trouble, did this fool not fear death? The destruction of their clan may even cause the treatment of slaves to improve.

The other people left silently. They didn't dare say a word, they didn't want to infuriate Lin Feng, he was slaughtering the younger generation, but they had to accept the humiliation or he might slaughter all the generations of their clan! They had to leave first and plot revenge second.

Horrible shrieks still filled the air of the Imperial City. Lin Feng looked to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, the sun was brightly illuminating the bright red ground, it looked like a gigantic carpet of blood.

Today was the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue's judgement day.

Lin Feng had annihilated the Hao Yue Sect and the Ice and Snow Mountain Village. Now he came to exterminate the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. By taking revenge, Lin Feng had gained the hatred of a great deal of people.

The gradually setting sun gave birth to rosy clouds on the horizon. The Imperial City was suddenly invaded by a dreary atmosphere.

Duan Tian Lang was standing at the top of the cultivation tower, he was still alive. Lin Feng wasn't far from him, but he wasn't even looking at him, he only raised his head and watched the sunset. However, Duan Tian Lang understood that his end was approaching.

Nobody could save him, nobody had come to fight against Lin Feng. Duan Tian Lang was alone, he had been abandoned.

"Do you regret it?" Asked Lin Feng indifferently while looking at the rosy clouds.

Duan Tian Lan remained silent and looked pensive for a moment, then he nodded and said: “I do regret it, but he who laughs last, also laughs the longest. That person won’t be you... Lin Feng!”

Then Lin Feng heard Duan Tian Lang laugh, his laugh was both evil and hysterical. However, Lin Feng didn’t pay attention to what Duan Tian Lang said, he just replied: “You should kill yourself.”

Kill yourself?!

Lin Feng was calmly telling a noble from the court of Xue Yue and a member of the Duan Clan, to kill himself.

Chapter 496: Night Activities

The glistening light of the setting sun revealed a blood-coloured terrain. There was blood dripping from the top of the cultivation tower of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.

A corpse slowly fell from the air and crashed into the crimson river below with a loud splash, the sound of the body falling was quiet, but seemed to echo through the desolate silence. After that, nobody would know how Duan Tian Lang died, he had acted like a coward until the end and taken his own life to avoid more suffering. The only ones who were witnesses to his death were the Chi Xie troops, they were the only ones who would know how Duan Tian Lang died.

On the ground, the Chi Xie troops were all staring at Duan Tian Lang's corpse as it fell from the tower. He was their enemy who they hated and now he was finally dead.

Duan Tian Lang had killed hundreds of thousands of their brothers to enact his plot. That debt of blood could never be repaid without his death. Duan Tian Lang had finally paid the price for his actions.

Everybody raised their heads and looked to Lin Feng at the top of the cultivation tower. Lin Feng hadn't disappointed them and did exactly as he promised. Duan Tian Lang was dead and they had finally got their revenge.

At that moment, there was almost no sound within the Holy

Courtyard of Xue Yue because almost all of its students were dead. Apart from a few who could be hiding away in some dark corners, everyone else was dead, and it wouldn't be long until the ones hiding would be found and killed as well.

Under the light of the setting sun, the red armour of the Chi Xie troops seemed at home within the sea of blood and corpses.

Lin Feng glanced at the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. At that moment, he was at the highest point that overlooked the entire courtyard, everything was visible to him.

“It's over.” Said Lin Feng in a low voice. The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue had been destroyed and Duan Tian Lang was already dead. Only the most influential and powerful enemies of his were still alive, the Wan Shou Sect and the Yu Clan, but also the hidden figures who hid in the shadows of the Imperial City.

Lin Feng had come to the Imperial City, and hadn't been swayed by his personal feelings. Those hiding in the shadows of the Imperial City and those who were in control, probably didn't feel at ease with him there.

The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was just the first step on his road of revenge.

“You have the entire night, clean everything here and remove all existence of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, this now belongs to the Yun Hai Sect!” Said Lin Feng indifferently. His voice echoed into the distance, allowing everybody in the city to hear his words.

From that day on, the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue would be part of the Yun Hai Sect!

After Lin Feng destroyed the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, he didn't return to the Yun Hai Mountain Chain, instead, he seized the territory of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue as part of the Yun Hai Sect. The Yun Hai Sect had now claimed a territory and become a power within the Imperial City.

Lin Feng's silhouette flickered as he disappeared. The setting sun slowly turned the sky red, creating a world of red which surrounded the Chi Xie troops.

.....

The dim light of the night was as desolate and dreary as water. That night was extremely calm, there wasn't a single sound in the Imperial City, its lively and bustling atmosphere of the past had disappeared. The air was cold, dreary and desolate, sometimes a gentle breeze would pass through the lonely streets of the city, causing the atmosphere to seem even more desolate.

Everybody in the city was aware that Lin Feng had come to the Imperial City with his Chi Xie troops in the name of the Yun Hai Sect. They knew that he destroyed the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue and everyone remained within their homes that night.

The day had been wonderful for some people. They had placed their hopes in Lin Feng and he had kept his promise. Lin Feng had

shocked a great deal of people and many had their souls shaken. Lin Feng's strength was incredible and his actions were ruthless.

Rumours said that at Duan Tian Lang's side, a cultivator of the sixth Xuan Qi layer appeared to stop Lin Feng with five cultivators of the fifth Xuan Qi layer. However, Lin Feng killed the five cultivators of the fifth Xuan Qi layer and caused the cultivator of the sixth Xuan Qi layer to escape after being gravely wounded.

Lin Feng's name had, once again, spread across the entire country of Xue Yue.

In the middle of the night, inside a vast and majestic palace in the depths of a mountain.

In that palace, there was a person sitting facing a wall in meditation, that person was absolutely motionless as if he had become a statue.

"Step...Step...Step...." in the absolutely silent palace, came the sound of silent footsteps approaching which echoed through the silent palace.

The person facing the wall remained absolutely motionless as if he hadn't heard a sound.

A person appeared behind him and stood there, motionless. He didn't say a word and only waited. An eerie silence invaded the palace once again.

After what seemed like a long time, the person facing the wall spoke, while remaining motionless.

“How come you are here so early?”

“Because these days, incredible things have happened in Xue Yue. The Imperial City is undergoing some important changes.” Said the one patiently standing.

“Remain calm.” Said the one sitting while facing the wall, his voice resonated in the atmosphere.

“Remain calm, no matter what happens, we must always remain calm. We cannot let chaos invade our hearts. Your brother is better than you in this aspect as you have let the events of the world affect your temperament.” Said the one sitting. He looked extremely serene and unperturbed.

“Calm!” After remaining silent for a moment, the one standing repeated the word “calm” and nodded, it was clear that he was agitated.

“Tell me, what has happened?” Said the one facing the wall.

“You already know what happened during the national competition, Yue Meng He appeared. Now that the Great Competition is approaching, the members of the Dragon Mountain Empire have arrived with some people from Tian Feng, but Lin

Feng killed some of the people from Tian Feng's side. Then, today, he invaded the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue with an army and started a massacre."

"He invaded the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue? That's a good thing for you." Said the one sitting and facing the wall: "But it also has some disadvantages."

"Indeed, that's very true. The destruction of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue will give him wings, but some conflicts will arise and I fear that those conflicts will quickly become too intense, and we will be caught unprepared." Sighed the one who was standing. Lin Feng had come to the Imperial City which he hadn't anticipated. Lin Feng's actions were outside of his calculations.

"Nothing can be changed at this point. So just calmly watch as the changes take place. What you need now is time, just keep that in mind." Said the one sitting and facing the wall.

The young man standing nodded, he, of course, knew that he needed time, he knew that better than anyone else.

"There has been some agitations inside the Yue Clan as well. They want to propose a marriage between Yue Tian Ming and Xin Ye."

"Xin Ye?" said the man said after a brief pause, his facial expression had changed for the first time. He then said: "That old man Yue Qing Shan is as stubborn as before, let them know that their proposed union has been refused. Since Xin Ye adores Lin

Feng, we will only consent to their union!”

“You’re not opposed to their union? That’s great.” Said the young man while smiling.

“Lin Feng’s power of understanding is incredible and terrifying, he’s not any weaker than Yue Tian Ming. He has incredible talent and continues to create his own good fortune, why would I be opposed to their union?” Said the one sitting with a small grin. Yue Tian Ming and Lin Feng’s confrontation would be very interesting!

“You came for my consent? Don’t worry, just do what you wish. Xue Yue is yours already, what do you need to worry about? Just go and be audacious! You are very intelligent, even if your plans fail, I wouldn’t say anything. The rest is for the heavens to decide.” Said the one facing the wall to the young man. The one sitting was confident, he had faith in the young man. He had given him control of Xue Yue.

In Xue Yue, very few people knew who reigned over the country. Only those at the very core knew how the country was governed.

“I understand, father.”

The young man slightly bowed in front of his father and then started to back away, he didn’t turn around, he retreated while bowing at his father.

The palace was huge, when the young man disappeared in the

distance, an eerie silence invaded the mysterious palace again!

Chapter 497: Lin Feng's Verdict!

In the early morning, a cold wind swept across the streets of the Imperial City, people who were still feeling drowsy would be woken up immediately by the cold breeze.

The people who were walking past the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue soon discovered that it wasn't the Holy Courtyard anymore.

On the huge gate, there were was no longer the name "Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue" anymore, it was now named "YUN HAI SECT" which astonished everyone!

The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue had been destroyed and the Yun Hai Sect had replaced its spot within the Imperial City.

"Lin Feng is so aggressive! So bold!" Sighed the people of the city. Lin Feng had exterminated the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue and had even established the Yun Hai Sect within the Imperial City.

How aggressive!

How powerful!

How arrogant!

Only an insane person like Lin Feng could do such an extremely audacious move.

At that moment, there was no longer any blood to be seen, the grounds had been cleansed thoroughly. All the buildings, the pavilion, the lakes and rivers had been cleansed and they no longer contained any traces of blood. The entire territory seemed as if a torrential rain had swept away all traces of the massacre.

The corpses which were scattered across the territory had also disappeared without a trace, as if the massacre was only a dream.

Lin Feng had gathered the Chi Xie troops and his people from Yangzhou City to thoroughly cleanse any traces of the Holy Courtyard from existence. In one night, an army of people in the hundreds of thousands had swept the territory clean. The territory had completely changed and it looked much more magnificent than in the past. Such a task wasn't difficult at all with so many people.

The Yun Hai Sect now had had the power to do it. After that night, apart from a few buildings from the original design, everything had been changed.

The entire territory of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was now under control of the Yun Hai Sect. The ancient books, skills and techniques, as well as all of the purity stones and veins of the earth from the former Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue now belonged to the Yun Hai Sect.

.....

At that moment, outside of the King's Imperial Palace, there was a myriad of people gathering.

Those people were talking and discussing various events. They all looked ice-cold and were extremely upset. Those people were all the wealthy and noble cultivators from the Imperial City. They were all queuing outside patiently and many had been there all night. Even though they couldn't enter the palace, they all gathered at the entrance.

Besides, those people all had something in common. They were all holding bamboo slips of high quality.

All those bamboo slips had the same content and purpose, even if the words used weren't identical.

They were all regarding Lin Feng who had forced his way into the Imperial City without giving face to the Imperial Clan, including a list of all of Lin Feng's crimes!

All of those bamboo slips were written using blood, to show the extremity of the contents.

At that moment, inside of the palace, a group of people moved towards the huge gate. Finally, they arrived at the front of the crowd before coming to a stop.

Everybody looked agitated and tense, everyone had come to make a request, they wanted Lin Feng to be sentenced to death.

A silhouette walked out from the group to the front of the crowd and said: “Give us what you want to report and we will report the details contained to the monarch.”

The crowd nodded and handed their bamboo slips. Those people who arrived from inside the palace were in charge of transmitting messages between the people of the city and the monarch.

Outside of the palace, those who had come from the interior of the palace were smiling and collecting the bamboo slips.

Those people outside of the palace had lots of power in the monarchy and they had sent their younger generations to cultivate at the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, but Lin Feng had slaughtered them, therefore they wanted Lin Feng to die.

A person came out of the palace and said to the messengers: “Do not waste time, hurry and take their messages to the monarch.”

Then, all the messengers quickly grabbed all of the bamboo slips and immediately went back into the monarch’s palace.

When the crowd saw that their bamboo slips were being taken inside the monarch’s palace, their eyes started twinkling with cold lights. They all looked nervous and apprehensive.

Lin Feng had brought his army into the Imperial City, would the monarch be infuriated by Lin Feng’s actions?

Lin Feng was definitely going to die! So many people had come together to request his death, a thousand people had brought bamboo slips and used their own blood as ink. All those messages condemned Lin Feng's behaviour.

"I wouldn't have thought that you would personally come here, Minister Du Gu." Said a person wearing blue silken clothes to an old man who had a dignified presence.

Sharp lights were flashing in the old man's eyes and he said: "If Lin Feng doesn't get the death sentence, I don't know what I'm going to do."

"Haha, I feel the same. Minister Du Gu shouldn't be worried. That fool is so aggressive and arrogant, it's incredible. This time, he charged into the Imperial City with his army and showed no respect for the law. He even massacred the innocent students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue, the monarch will never forgive him, he will definitely sentence him to death." Said the middle-aged man in blue clothes while smiling to which the man from the Du Gu Clan nod. Everyone was hoping that would be the result. Lin Feng deserved to die for his crimes. If Lin Feng didn't die, they could never feel at ease again.

Everybody was calmly waiting outside the palace, they were impatient to know when Lin Feng's execution would take place. They were just looking at the gigantic palace and waiting impatiently for the verdict.

Even though the monarch rarely showed himself, each time he did, it was incredible and the people would always gasp with admiration when in his presence. They were convinced that this time, the monarch would agree with their request.

Some time elapsed, even though it was only a short time, the crowd outside felt like they had been waiting for an eternity. Finally, a person holding a golden parchment flew out of the monarch's palace and immediately landed in front of the crowd.

The old man from the Du Gu Clan took a step forwards and waved his hand, in a flash the golden parchment flew into his hand.

Itching to get on with it, the old man immediately opened the golden parchment and suddenly looked astonished.

“Minister Du Gu, what does it say??” Asked someone moving closer to him in anticipation.

“Yes, is Lin Feng sentenced to death??”

The crowd was breathing faster and grew excited. Many people were gathering around the old man of the Du Gu Clan, he then handed the parchment over to them and they only saw a few words written. They were all stunned when they read the message. They couldn't believe it their eyes, they blinked a few times but those words written with delicate calligraphy never changed!

On the golden parchment, there were four words: “LIN FENG IS INNOCENT!”

Lin Feng was innocent?

How was that possible? How could Lin Feng be innocent?! He had charged into the Imperial City with an army, that made him a rebel, a traitor! Duan Tian Lang, was a noble of the Imperial Clan had a very high status. Lin Feng was only a marquis, but Duan Tian Lan must have been killed by Lin Feng, that was his second crime, for that alone, Lin Feng should be sentenced to death. Duan Tian Lang created the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue and younger clan members of those wealthy and noble cultivators were all students of his, but Lin Feng wiped the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue from existence, he had slaughtered all its members who were innocent, that was Lin Feng’s third crime! But Lin Feng was... Innocent!?

Many people’s chests were pounding violently, they were infuriated. However, the monarch didn’t see it that way. The old man of the Du Gu Clan turned around and said: “Sorry for causing trouble but I want to see the monarch.”

“Yes, so do I!” Many people were saying that they wanted to see the monarch, how could he say that Lin Feng was innocent?!

“Denied. The monarch already knows what you all want to say. He told me to tell you that Lin Feng is the Patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect, he came to the Imperial City under that status, his army are all members of the Yun Hai Sect and were granted entry as individual cultivators, they are deemed sect members and not an army, so they don’t count as armed rebels. All of the sect members

were granted access into the Imperial City by the guards, so it is not a crime. Duan Tian Lang, destroyed the Yun Hai Sect and Lin Feng witnessed the destruction of his sect, now he enacted his revenge as the Patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect, this it is not a crime, it is personal revenge which is justified by our law. Lin Feng and Duan Tian Lang's social status have nothing to do with a blood feud between sects. As far as the students of the Holy Courtyard are concerned, they decided to join the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue and thus entered knowingly into the blood feud. Lin Feng killed them because they were members of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue and were thus his enemies, he did not massacre the innocent. The destruction of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue and the revival of the Yun Hai Sect is justified! Lin Feng has not committed any crimes and had only settled a blood feud between the two parties. Lin Feng is therefore, innocent." Said the messenger of the king slowly while denying all the crimes which Lin Feng was accused of.

Everybody was stunned and didn't know what to say in response. Lin Feng was innocent?!

Many people couldn't bear it, they were not willing to accept that verdict.

"Of course, Lin Feng's actions were justified as he was getting revenge, you are all justified by the law to go and confront Lin Feng to enact your revenge. Nobody will try to stop you." Said the messenger indifferently.

They were permitted to go and get their revenge personally. Those were the laws if this city of cultivators, but everybody waiting outside pulled a long face. Would they dare to go and

personally seek out Lin Feng for their revenge?

Chapter 498: Down The Precipice

At that moment, Lin Feng obviously didn't know what was happening within the Imperial Palace.

At the Yun Hai Sect, within the former territory of the Holy Courtyard, there were seven places where silhouettes were flickering and moving. They seemed like they were destroying the buildings. On the ground, there was a thick Qi which filled the air.

Mister Chi and Mister Huo were standing at one of those seven places, they were looking at the flickering silhouettes. Mister Chi smiled and said: "Huo, old fellow, what does Lin Feng plan on doing? What kind of formation? Why is everybody so agitated?"

"The great formations are the illusion of the seven stars, the eight trigrams prison, and the nine palaces gathering... Therefore, Lin Feng must be using these seven locations to form the illusion of the seven stars, I think he wants to create an illusion formation around the sect." Replied Mister Huo.

Formations which required less than five components were not that difficult, it became more difficult as the number of components in a formation increased, but they were also more powerful. The seven stars, the eight trigrams, the nine palaces were legendary, those deadly formations and illusions used vast amounts of pure Qi to enhance their power. These formations were unimaginable, in the end they could even form pure Qi palaces.

Of course, this was only a rumour, nothing more. It wasn't an

absolute truth. At the same time, it was true that extremely powerful formations could use pure Qi to enhance the formations power, like the nine palaces formation which could be used to imprison and kill people. However, the most important thing was always the foundation of a formation.

Besides, the extremely powerful formations were not limited to the seven stars, eight trigrams and nine palaces, some even more complex formations consisted of creating multiple formations as the components of a larger formation. The seven stars, eight trigrams and nine palaces were just the commonly known legendary formations and illusions, but they still had incredible power.

Besides, combining several formations together would cause the power of the formations to become even more terrifying. Of course, acquiring the knowledge required to create those types of formations was extremely difficult, and then the degree of creating them was otherworldly.

In the Continent of the Nine Clouds, people would rarely provoke an extremely strong formation master, they were able to create a formation to easily kill an army of millions in a flash, leaving only destruction in their wake.

Those days, even though Lin Feng was able to create formations, he was far from being close to a formation master, he was just trying to understand how they worked and found out that he was able to learn them with astonishing speed.

With the help of the thirty-six women who were quite proficient

with creating formations and spells, there was already a thick mist and fog around the Yun Hi Sect, the entire area was surrounded by an illusionary mist.

“Formations are incredibly mysterious, they are not any inferior to alchemy.” Sighed Mister Huo while looking at the mist constantly rising into the air. Skills and techniques belonged to cultivation, pills belonged to alchemy, while spells and formations also belonged to their own fields of expertise. It was an incredibly mysterious and profound field. Outsiders would never understand how it worked.

“That’s obvious. The Continent of the Nine Clouds is so vast and boundless that we don’t even know how big its size is. We have never been outside of Xue Yue, so we are considered short-sighted. We have read books written by extremely powerful alchemists, but those people never stopped in their cultivation. Monstrously strong alchemists are worshiped and revered by the people, people would prostrate themselves before such illustrious and eminent people. Extremely strong formation masters can create unimaginable destruction and deserve the peoples’ reverence. Of course, no matter if we’re talking about alchemy or formations, they are all based on personal cultivation, that’s the basic principle.” Said Mister Chi while sighing, expressing his own opinion.

Mister Huo had a deep and meaningful expression in his eyes and nodded: “Those who don’t work hard, whether it be cultivation, formations or alchemy, they will never succeed. Besides, they could be killed at any time by stronger cultivators. A person’s cultivation is the basic foundation of strength in the world.”

“You old men are in a good mood I see.” Someone interrupted them at that moment while laughing. It came from behind the two old men. They were surprised, they turned around and saw Lin Feng who was laughing from behind them. They were shocked and then smiled wryly.

“Lin Feng, you are already strong enough to kill us at any time.” Said Mister Huo while shaking his head.

Lin Feng walked towards them while blocking his ears, he just acted as if he hadn't heard anything. If Lin Feng had wanted to kill them, they would be dead already. Lin Feng's cultivation was incredible and they could see the small changes in him, for example Lin Feng's Qi wasn't leaking out from his body and when he walked, he didn't emit a single sound.

“It's just that you weren't paying attention...” Said Lin Feng denying that the two old men had any weaknesses. He then said: “A moment ago, you were talking about the Continent of the Nine Clouds, that it was founded on personal cultivation. I definitely agree with you. Only when you are strong, can you reach the heavens and annihilate everything in your way. However, since everybody knows that cultivation is the key to everything, why do so many people practice alchemy, formations and other unorthodox skills?”

“Lin Feng.... You have to understand that not everybody is as gifted as you in cultivation. Many people, when they practice cultivation, find themselves stuck at a bottleneck and can't break through to the next layer... And practicing cultivation fanatically like a madman doesn't always lead to success either. If their

temperament or their power of understanding is not sufficient, then they can't improve their cultivation to the next level. Then their cultivation level reaches a limit which can't progress anymore. Maybe if you practice a few unorthodox things in the future, then you will come to understand their benefits, at some point, you may reach your limit and be unable to break through with your cultivation."

"Besides, you cannot say that alchemy and formations are useless, they are both extremely powerful. Someone who can concoct Xuan pills of average quality can help people at the Xuan Qi layer with their cultivation, and in that case, not only is the alchemist helping them, but they can also receive favours and payment in exchange. Besides, alchemists can also use the pills on themselves to benefit their own cultivation, so why not study it?"

Lin Feng understood and nodded. In fact, that really was the case. Lin Feng had also thought about these things. He had just asked their opinion because he was asking himself these questions. He was realizing that on the path of cultivation, of alchemy or formations, he was always extremely talented, the problem was that it was also making him feel hesitant on how he should proceed. What should he do to make the most of his potential? How could he maximize the benefits of his potential?

"Lin Feng, I know what you're thinking but I want to tell you something, on the path of alchemy or formations, you are very talented and you must avoid wasting your talent. Maybe someday, you will realize that everything you study will lead to unimagined results. Yes personal cultivation will allow you to reach the heavens, but it doesn't mean that you are omnipotent. Imagine if you weren't here and somebody was threatening your sweetheart,

your friends or your family, what could you do? However, if you were a brilliant alchemist who strengthened them with your pills, or created incredible formations, they could protect themselves without you. Even if you weren't there, you would still be able to indirectly protect them from harm." Said Mister Huo, he knew exactly how Lin Feng felt. He then added: "Of course, Lin Feng, that's only my opinion, the most important thing is for you to listen to your heart."

Lin Feng smiled in a warm and gentle way, and nodded at Mister Huo before saying: "I understand, Mister Huo."

"That's the most important thing then. You don't need me to tell you anything, make your own decisions. You wouldn't have created such a gigantic illusion formation around the Yun Hai Sect if you didn't trust your own instincts. There wouldn't have been any need for us to waste so much energy and so many resources to create it otherwise." Said Mister Huo which made a smile appear on the corner of Lin Feng's mouth. The former territory of the Holy Courtyard was extremely vast. Lin Feng had indeed used lots of energy to create that gigantic formation. When creating that gigantic formation he had even used a huge quantity of purity stones, which he had picked from the vein of the earth at Mount Sword.

.....

Three days later, many people were walking past the former territory of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, which was now the Yun Hai Sect. It looked the same as before but many people noticed that the Yun Hai Sect had become slightly strange. They felt like

they were hallucinating, the Yun Hai Sect seemed to be surrounded by a mist if you looked closely.

However, when looking again, everything seemed normal.

“How strange!” Thought many people, it seemed like the Yun Hai Sect was different than before.

However, at that moment, a silhouette appeared from within the Yun Hai Sect who suddenly jumped into the air. It was a very young man who moved with incredible speed.

Besides, there was a ferocious beast closely following behind the young man. The crowd was astonished when they saw them.

“It must be Lin Feng!”

When the crowd saw him, they frowned and were shocked. That was Lin Feng!

They only saw Lin Feng suddenly appear and jump into the air as his winged tiger flew under him in a flash. Lin Feng landed on the back of the beast and then they flew into the distance. Lin Feng looked like a celestial being, he seemed so carefree and wild.

Lin Feng flew freely through the clouds on the back of the winged tiger. When the winged tiger beat its wings, it would travel across a huge distance in the blink of an eye. It was shockingly fast. They were heading towards the Yun Hai Mountain Chain.

The Yun Hai Mountain Chain was quite far from the Imperial City, but with the speed of the winged tiger, it would only take them a day.

The winged tiger continued to fly through the sky until eventually it flew down through the clouds and arrived above a precipice. It then crossed a layer of fog and continued descending.

Lin Feng could see the eight drums on the Precipice of Zhangu which reminded him of his time within the sect.

“Follow the precipice, for about a thousand meters.” Whispered Lin Feng. Protector Bei had once led him there. He then slowly flew down and arrived a thousand meters under the Precipice of Zhangu.

Chapter 499: Breaking The Door

Lin Feng arrived several thousand meters below the precipice in the valley and struck the cliff three times, a rumbling sound emerged and an opening was revealed. That was precisely the place where Lin Feng had escaped the massacre with Protector Bei.

The winged tiger was surprised and its eyes were twinkling unceasingly. That cliff surprisingly had a hidden cave with secrets inside.

“Let’s go in.” Said Lin Feng in a low voice to the winged tiger which spread its wings and immediately entered into the cave. It contained the Qi of an ancient temple which was hidden since ancient times.

There were some paintings and sculptures of phoenixes and dragons, there were gigantic pillars with carvings of ancient beasts, it had a very mysterious aura.

The winged tiger roared while looking towards a wall. Lin Feng looked at what the winged tiger had seen and was suddenly astonished, there was a painting of an ancient ferocious beast, and it was a winged tiger! The winged tiger in the painting had greenish wings which blotted out the sky. Its ancient ferocious Qi seemed terrifying, and its fur was like thorns all over its body which looked terrifying! It seemed like only brushing its fur would cost you an arm.

“That is an authentic ancient ferocious beast... It looks dignified,

majestic and incredibly violent.” Thought Lin Feng. Even though his own winged tiger was incredible, it was far from being as majestic and as powerful as the winged tiger in the painting.

“All the ferocious beasts in the paintings here are incredibly powerful. That winged tiger in the picture seemed dignified and majestic. The ones who built that temple must have been incredibly strong.” Thought Lin Feng while looking at the paintings of the various beasts. If the one who built that temple had never seen those ferocious beasts, he would have never captured their aura and Qi so well. Each painting looked like it was an actual beast.

Lin Feng walked through the temple and saw the lamps which seemed like they could never be extinguished. He felt a strange feeling from within himself, he was really wondering who could have built such a mysterious temple. Could it have been built by a cultivator of the Zun Qi layer just like the one who had built the forbidden palace of the Zi Government? This might be his tomb just like in the Zi Government, a place where a Zun cultivator had gone to die.

But that was just Lin Feng’s thoughts and it only crossed his mind for a second. He immediately walked towards a green door which was the same one he wasn’t able to open when he was last here. His winged tiger remained by his side.

That door made from carved jade was gigantic and still seemed extremely solid. Lin Feng had come to the Yun Hai Mountain Chain to see if he had the power required to open the door. If he managed to open it, maybe he would discover some incredible

secrets and gain access to some ancient knowledge.

That ancient temple was a secret, there was probably a reason for that.

“Qiong Qi, try to open that door by attacking it.” Said Lin Feng to his winged tiger. At that moment, even though the winged tiger was only a level two Xuan beast, its body was already extremely strong and its physical power was incredible. If it used its full strength to attack the door, maybe it would work.

“RROOAAARRR...” The winged tiger roared and started to gather momentum, it was slowly moving backwards as it prepared to leap. Its two gigantic eyes looked ice-cold, it was staring the door made from jade.

“ROAAR!” The winged tiger roared furiously, it started beating its wings, it flickered and dashed against the door with all of its power.

“BOOM BOOM BOOM!” A heavy sound filled the air and resonated throughout the temple. It was unceasing but the door didn’t move, just like a mountain. The door wasn’t even shaking.

The winged tiger beat its wings again and moved back, its claws were scratching the ground as it tried to gather more speed. Its two ferocious-looking eyes were still fiercely staring at the door, it didn’t want to give up.

“Qiong Qi is just as stubborn as a human. Xuan level beasts had the intelligence of a young adult. When they reached the Tian level, there was no longer a difference between them and humans in terms of intelligence.” Thought Lin Feng when he saw how stubborn the winged tiger was. The winged tiger dashed against the door once again, it significantly increased its speed and attacked with even more brutality.

“BZZZZZZZ.....” A buzzing sound resonated through the entire temple and the shock was so intense that the winged tiger bounced away from the door and rolled across the ground. There was blood on the tiger’s forehead where it attacked the door with all of its momentum and the door attacked back.

It seemed like that door had counterattacked, the more violent the attack, the more brutal the counterattack. However, the winged tiger still couldn’t open that door.

The winged tiger crawled up from the ground and roared again, it didn’t feel like giving up and didn’t care about the injury.

“Let me try.” Said Lin Feng. The winged tiger turned its head and looked at Lin Feng, it then nodded reluctantly and moved aside. It wanted to know if Lin Feng would be able to break the annoying door.

Lin Feng stared at that gigantic door and took a deep breath. Since he had dealt with all the things in the Imperial City, he felt much more relaxed and his mind was more peaceful. He had come to the temple alone on purpose, he didn’t want anyone else to know about the temple’s existence. After all, back then, Protector

Bei told him that even Nan Gong Ling didn't know about the temple, only the protectors of the sect knew of its existence.

If he managed to open that door and go inside, there was no telling what he might find. If he failed this time, he would just return after he became stronger.

He abruptly released his pure Qi which created a storm in the air, his robes were fluttering with the wind of pure Qi. He then raised his fist and bombarded the atmosphere.

“AAAAARRRGHHHHHHHHHHHH!!!!!!!” Bawled Lin Feng heart and soul, he then threw himself at the door.

“BOOM!” A buzzing sound spread in the air. Lin Feng's fist abruptly stopped against the door and an extreme strength spread through his fist and into the rest of his body which caused him to bounce back.

“It seems like there is a hidden strength.” Said Lin Feng in a low voice. He then gathered momentum again and moved like the wind. He punched the door again with even more strength than a moment before.

“Bzzzzzzzz.....” An even more powerful counterattack invaded Lin Feng's fist and arm at that moment, his skin was torn and his flesh was revealed, it was extremely painful.

The more strength he put into his attack, the more powerful the

counterattacks were. If he couldn't break the door, then he would only harm himself.

Besides, Lin Feng couldn't clearly perceive the secret strength behind that door, it would penetrate his body and send him flying backwards.

"If I put more strength into it, the counterattacks are stronger." Thought Lin Feng while staring at that door, it seemed like he understood something special, but at the same time he hadn't grasped the secret.

"What kind of feeling is that?" Lin Feng had a very intriguing feeling. At the moment when he understood something, he also felt even more lost.

"I will try again." Thought Lin Feng. Without wasting time, he bombarded the door once again with his fist, useless. It was useless again. This time, Lin Feng couldn't stand the pain caused by the counterattack, it even contained deadly energy.

"Deadly energy..." Lin Feng was stupefied, He had suddenly thought of something.

"So that's how it is." Thought Lin Feng while smiling. Each time he attacked, the counterattack was more powerful than his own attack, the counter attack contained a powerful deadly energy which was invisible.

What if he attacked the door as if it was a person?

If Lin Feng attacked the door while releasing his deadly energy, he could avoid being counterattacked by using his own deadly energy to fight against the energy released from the door.

That deadly energy was hidden, he couldn't see it and it was extremely powerful.

When Lin Feng finally had a plan, he stared at the door with a twinkle in his eyes. He quickly rushed forward again.

“BOOM!” He attacked the door again with all his power and his terrifying deadly energy. The door was about to counterattack again with its own deadly energy.

But at that moment, Lin Feng raised a condensed a sword filled with powerful sword intent. The deadly energy coming from the door was immediately destroyed by Lin Feng's deadly energy.

His terrifying deadly energy then crashed into the door.

“KACHA!” A subtle sound filled the air.

Lin Feng moved back in a flash and pulled his deadly energy back with him, but Lin Feng didn't stop, he rushed at the door again and started attacking.

After a few times, he moved back and looked at the door with a smile. There were a few cracks across the door. Even though the door hadn't been broken, it would soon crumble with the accumulated damage.

Chapter 500: The Mysterious Encounter!

“Kacha.....!” Another attack landed on the door. Lin Feng continuously bombarded the door. There were more and more cracks appearing on the door, it looked like it was on the verge of collapsing.

“One more attack should be enough.” Thought Lin Feng with a smirk on the corner of his mouth. He gathered speed again and a strong whistling wind emerged from his hand again as he rushed through the air.

“Break!” Shouted Lin Feng extremely loud and bombarded the door with his fist again. At that moment, there was no rumble or buzzing, only a cracking sound, the door was broken and crumbled into powder. The door was finally broken.

Lin Feng would finally be able to explore what was behind the door.

There was an ancient path, a passageway. It was so narrow that it could only accommodate two or three people. The air was filled with a mysterious and mystical Qi.

It wasn't exactly what Lin Feng had imagined. He had thought that when the door collapsed, he would see a mountain of incredible treasures and skills but instead, there was nothing more than just a long narrow passageway which seemed endless. Nobody knew where that passageway led to. Nobody knew how deep it was either.

Lin Feng was irresolute. He was still in the temple and had finally broken the door, but after seeing that it was just a passageway, he thought, was there any point in continuing?

“I can’t, I made such great efforts to break that door, I have to see what’s inside.” Thought Lin Feng with a sharp light in his eyes.

“That passageway seems so deep and mysterious, but since I took great efforts to break the door, if I just leave, it would be such a pity. I would have done all of this for nothing.” Thought Lin Feng while taking a step forwards. He immediately entered the passageway. It could be dangerous but it could also provide him with incredible opportunities. He just had to be vigilant.

Lin Feng entered the passage and suddenly felt a marvellous yet strange sensation. He was all alone in the passageway, there was no one else in sight and the surroundings had changed.

Lin Feng turned his head, but couldn’t see the temple where he entered from. It was as if he had stepped into a completely different world, he was all alone.

“It’s an illusion!” Lin Feng was stupefied. That was an illusion. Besides, the illusion was extremely mysterious, in a flash, his surroundings had changed.

“Sssssss!” A sharp whistling sound emerged in the air. Lin Feng was shocked. He then moved aside and a light passed by his body. He could feel that his cheeks were burning.

“Apart from an illusion, there is also a killing formation?” Lin Feng was stunned. How dangerous. He couldn’t believe his eyes. The passage contained an illusion and a killing formation, was he going to be killed?

Lin Feng didn’t dare underestimate the killing potential of being trapped in an illusion. Last time, in the Nine Palace Dragon Formation, even though it was only an illusion, the people inside were killed and their bodies were thrown out of the illusion. They had died while being trapped inside.

The killing potential of an illusion wasn’t to be taken lightly.

He could die.

“Sssss.... Ssss.....” Two whistling sounds filled the air and were clearly detected by Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was calmly standing still. He could sense the wind around his body. Immediately after, he moved his hand and pierced through the atmosphere, destroying the two incoming attacks. He was being attacked with arrows. Lin Feng had broken those two arrows with his hand and they immediately fell to the ground for him to see.

“Whoosh....” Other sounds emerged, Lin Feng moved like the wind and dodged. A blade shot past which illuminated the entire atmosphere.

“What a terrifying place.” Thought Lin Feng. He was astonished, on that road, the attacks were unceasing. He could die at any moment. Lin Feng was wondering what was the purpose of the passageway? Was it made to kill people?

If it had only been made to kill people, why did they have to make it seem so mysterious?

Lin Feng didn't believe that the ancient temple was made as a joke to lure people in. His eyes twinkled and he kept walking forwards. He was more and more determined to find the mystery that was being so harshly protected, he wasn't hesitant anymore.

“Whoosh..... Sssssss..!” Whistling sounds continued to fill the air. Arrows and blades appeared from every direction and attacked in Lin Feng's direction. They were even more terrifying than those from the previous attacks.

“Piss off!” Shouted Lin Feng furiously. He then released his pure Qi in every direction which was as sharp as a sword, the arrows immediately broke under the Qi and they could no longer reach Lin Feng.

“Phewww.....” Lin Feng took a deep breath and glanced at the path. He was stupefied, suddenly, something appeared in his mind.

What a mysterious illusion! Something as towering and lofty as a mountain appeared in his mind, it was a black statue which was the size of a mountain, it seemed like nothing could attack that

powerful statue.

“What’s going on?”

Lin Feng’s heart was pounding violently. That statue flickered, it appeared in his mind for a brief moment and then disappeared again straight after. But in that statue, Lin Feng had detected a trace of intent. Lin Feng was trying to see the statue in his mind, he was not giving up.

“Intent!” Whispered Lin Feng. After the earth fusion, there was intent. That intangible statue from before seemed like it had its own intent.

Lin Feng closed his eyes and used his heart to sense his surroundings, to sense the mysteries of that ancient passageway.

The whistling wind was caressing his body, Lin Feng started moving like the wind and suddenly felt an incredible sensation. He was trying his best to understand the mysteries.

The statue appeared again and a mysterious yet mystical pattern appeared on his body.

The statue looked like a statue of a wrathful Buddha, which had been there since ancient times, as if it was immortal and indestructible.

Besides, Lin Feng had another sensation, he could clearly sense

the veins of the statue. They were incredible, he could sense all the veins connecting each molecule of the statue together.

“What’s that? Is it a skill?” Thought Lin Feng whose heart was palpitating. Could that statue use a skill? Did that statue want him to understand a skill?

But the skill wasn’t in a book, it was written nowhere, nobody was telling him how it was performed. Lin Feng was only able to sense the veins within the statue. It was extremely mysterious. It was unimaginable, Lin Feng was shocked beyond words. But with his intuition, he could sense the mysteries flowing in those veins, he could tell that it was an extremely powerful skill.

Table of Contents

[Peerless Martial God](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 401: Fury!](#)

[Chapter 402: Meng Qing](#)

[Chapter 403: Insanity](#)

[Chapter 404: Strength!](#)

[Chapter 405: Dual sword wielding!](#)

[Chapter 406: Dead](#)

[Chapter 407: Yue Qing Shan's Thoughts!](#)

[Chapter 408: Come To Kill!](#)

[Chapter 409: The Nightmare of the Wan Shou Sect](#)

[Chapter 410: The Path of Bloodshed](#)

[Chapter 411: Cosmic Annihilation](#)

[Chapter 412: The Black Sword](#)

[Chapter 413: The Era](#)

[Chapter 414: Xuan Qi Layer Pills](#)

[Chapter 415: Duan Feng's Breakthrough](#)

[Chapter 416: Seven Days Later](#)

[Chapter 417: Duan Feng's Secret](#)

[Chapter 418: Everybody Wants to Kill Him!](#)

[Chapter 419: Dark Barrier](#)

[Chapter 420: On The Bamboo Raft](#)

[Chapter 421: The Black Poisonous Fog](#)

[Chapter 422: The Death Game](#)

[Chapter 423: Accomplices](#)

[Chapter 424: The Price of Attacking!](#)

[Chapter 425: The Humiliation of the Hao Yue Sect](#)

[Chapter 426: Planned Actions!](#)

[Chapter 427: Cold Heart](#)

[Chapter 428: The Flood Dragon Warp Fist!](#)

[Chapter 429: Deadly Energy](#)

[Chapter 430: You will die!](#)

[Chapter 431: Despicable Means](#)

[Chapter 432: Lotus in the Left, Sword in The Right!](#)

[Chapter 433: Piss Off!](#)

[Chapter 434: The Mysterious Apparition](#)

[Chapter 435: Looking Down On Everybody](#)

[Chapter 436: The Massacre!](#)

[Chapter 437: What Kind of Life?](#)

[Chapter 438: The Death of a High-Official!](#)

[Chapter 439: The Pieces Come Together!](#)

[Chapter 440: Satisfied!](#)

[Chapter 441: The Crown Prince!](#)

[Chapter 442: Meeting Again](#)

[Chapter 443: The Strange Place](#)

[Chapter 444: Lin Feng's Power and Influence!](#)

[Chapter 445: Break The Spell!](#)

[Chapter 446: Yan Dang Mountain](#)

[Chapter 447: Tianya Haige](#)

[Chapter 448: The Wolves of the Desert](#)

[Chapter 449: The Tribe](#)

[Chapter 450: The Most Important Person!](#)

[Chapter 451: Kill Me?](#)

[Chapter 452: Absolute Despair!](#)

[Chapter 453: The Massacre!](#)

[Chapter 454: Savage Thoughts](#)

[Chapter 455: The Four-Tailed Wolf!](#)

[Chapter 456: The Ancient Legend](#)

[Chapter 457: Crystal](#)

[Chapter 458: The Myriad of Black Lotuses](#)

[Chapter 459: Flames!](#)

[Chapter 460: Death On the City Walls!](#)

[Chapter 461: Fighting The Wolf Pack!](#)

[Chapter 462: The Memory Jade](#)

[Chapter 463: Hostility](#)

[Chapter 464: Insane Laughter!](#)

[Chapter 465: The Cursed World](#)

[Chapter 466: Resurrection of the Yun Hai Sect!](#)

[Chapter 467: Banquet in the Imperial Palace](#)

[Chapter 468: Keep Watch for Me!](#)

[Chapter 469: Beauty Under the Moonlight](#)

[Chapter 470: Toast!](#)

[Chapter 471: Life at Stake!](#)

[Chapter 472: Drops of Blood!](#)
[Chapter 473: Fight?!](#)
[Chapter 474: Sword Intent!](#)
[Chapter 475: The Realm of Perception](#)
[Chapter 476: Humiliating Each and Every Single One!](#)
[Chapter 477: The Confrontation](#)
[Chapter 478: Terrified!](#)
[Chapter 479: Pressure](#)
[Chapter 480: Hope!](#)
[Chapter 481: Eighteen Xuan Cultivators!](#)
[Chapter 482: Thousands of Arrows!](#)
[Chapter 483: The Resurrection of the Yun Hai Sect](#)
[Chapter 484: Shameless Han Xue Tian!](#)
[Chapter 485: Red Snow!](#)
[Chapter 486: To The Imperial City!](#)
[Chapter 487: Returning to The Holy Courtyard!](#)
[Chapter 488: The Mysterious Group](#)
[Chapter 489: The Snow Dragon Robe!](#)
[Chapter 490: Life and Death Gamble!](#)
[Chapter 491: Sword Formation!](#)
[Chapter 492: One Man Battle Formation!](#)
[Chapter 493: Terrifying Sword Intent!](#)
[Chapter 494: Destruction](#)
[Chapter 495: Kill Yourself](#)
[Chapter 496: Night Activities](#)
[Chapter 497: Lin Feng's Verdict!](#)
[Chapter 498: Down The Precipice](#)
[Chapter 499: Breaking The Door](#)
[Chapter 500: The Mysterious Encounter!](#)